


92
B9771

THE GENERAL THEOLOGICAL
SEMINARY LIBRARY

CHELSEA SQUARE, NEW YORK II, N. Y.



Dean Hoffman Fund



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2025

EARLIEST NEW ZEALAND.



HANNAH BUTLER, born Sept. 5th, 1817. Arrived in N.Z., 1819.
Daughter of the Rev. John Butler.

EARLIEST NEW ZEALAND.



THE JOURNALS AND CORRESPONDENCE
of the REV. JOHN BUTLER.

Compiled by R. J. BARTON.

1927.

MASTERTON, N.Z.

Printed by Palamontain & Petherick, General Printers.

92
B9771

144741

The Journals and Correspondence OF THE Rev. John Butler

WHO WAS THE FIRST ORDAINED
CLERGYMAN IN NEW ZEALAND.

1819 to 1824 and 1840.

The compilation of this work has extended over a period of fifteen years, being from that day that my father first decided to have the original Journals typed, until the day that the Early Church Missionary Records of the C.M.S., London, were copied from the 'Hocken' Library. A depressing reply from the London Society, that it did not possess the old Records, portended a depleted product, until reference in the Turnbull Library, Wellington, to the fact that there were two letters of Butler's in the 'Hocken' Library, Dunedin, upon enquiry, elicited the exulting fact that the late Dr. Hocken had, with munificent foresight, secured these treasured relics of our earliest pioneers for his magnificent 'Collection.'

I should like specially to thank Mrs. R. W. Macdonald, of that Library, for her most valuable assistance; also Mr. J. C. Andersen, of the Turnbull Library, and his courteous staff; Mr. Cecil Kemp; Mr. A. C. Clemas; and Mr. H. C. L. Robinson, of Masterton; Mr. N. J. Bennington, of Wellington; and my brother, Wilfred.

WITH FILIAL LOVE AND VENERATION
I AFFECTIONATELY DEDICATE THIS COMPILATION
TO MY FATHER, JOHN BARTON,
GRANDSON
OF THE
REV. JOHN GARE BUTLER,

To whose careful custody of old family papers, this work is possible.

Introduction.

And as he passes turn,
And bid fair peace be to my sable shroud.

In discussing with friends the possibility of public interest in the ensuing narrative, an occasional remark has been made: What does it matter? let the dead past bury its dead! Had this been observed by delving historians concerning the earlier period of New Zealand's history, portion of the material in this publication might have been deleted.

It has lately been suggested that sentiment is only worth what you are prepared to pay for it, and that sentiment, therefore, lies no deeper than one's pocket; surely the spirit of kinship entails something of a more exacting nature than a mere reduction to a *£:s:d* basis? Statements which reflect upon the character of a progenitor should not, and cannot, be lightly waft aside with the query, "What does it matter?" I therefore make no apology for a compilation which is a labour of love, a theme of duty, and a debt due to the memory of an English gentleman.

The character of the Rev. John Butler has been repeatedly slighted, unintentionally and unwittingly. I would hasten to add, but, nevertheless, in such a manner that his descendants cannot permit the imputations to be promulgated without a protest. The publishing of denials is unconvincive and inadequate. A clear enumeration of the circumstances of his disagreement with Mr. Marsden, from authentic sources, that the reading and thinking community may contemplate the whole with lucid vision, appears to be the only efficacious method of removing the aspersions and exposing the injustice.

The design of the compiler is to, throughout the Journal, avoid more comment than is absolutely necessary; to narrate the diurnal occurrences in their sequence, interpolating the correspondence as closely as it is practicable, in accordance with the date thereon, and, where comment or reference is essential, to merely place the material points before the reader.

The spelling of Maori names has been left in accordance with the original phonetics as interpreted by Butler.

In some words, gradual evolution towards the present orthography can be discerned.



Contents.

CHAPTER I.

Leaves England.—Convicts.—Death stalks among them.—Van Dieman's Land.—New South Wales.—New Zealand.

CHAPTER II.

Description of Mission Localities.—Foreword.—Butler's Didimus Potes-tatem.—Kendall also a Magistrate.—Pratt.—Marsden.—The "Active."—Shepherd.

CHAPTER III.

Marsden Exploring Hokianga.—Tree Planting.—A Whale Ashore.—Gun-powder Explosion.—Maori Disturbance.—Rafting Logs.—The First Xmas at Kerikeri.—Saltmakers Robbed.—Brickmaking.—The 'Drom-edary.' — Horses. — The 'Haweis.' — The First Plough. — Natives Troublesome.—Wheat.—Waimate.—The First Burial.—Omapere.—Marsden Returns from the Waikato.—Nicholson to Bigge.—Skinner to Macquarie.—Marsden to Pratt.—The 'General Gates.'—Hansen. Store Accounts and List of Purchasers.—C.M.S. re Kendall's Visit to London.

CHAPTER IV.

Journeys South.—The Thames.—Mokoia.—Hinaki.—Manakau First Seen.—Muriwai. — Kapua. — Kaipara. — Aldridge Killed. — Harvest. — Runaway Convicts.—Native Pilfering.—Tareha.—Hari Hongi.—Tohi.—Kendall Returns from England.—Taiwhanga Speared.—Tohi Tapu.—Teterre.—Hongi Troublesome.—War.

CHAPTER V.

Marsden's Cattle.—Agriculture.—Butler Comments upon dishonoured tim-ber Draft.—Hongi Disgruntled.—Mrs. King Ill.—Native Troubles.—Hongi Prepares for Thames War.—Boyle Robbed.—Society's Instruc-tions; Butler Replies. — Marsden's Edicts. — Hall appointed Store-keeper.—A School.—Butler goes to Sydney.

CHAPTER VI.

Butler to Marsden.—Cowell.—Butler to Governor Brisbane.—To Pratt, re Marsden.—Marsden to N.Z. Committee.—Missing Goods.—Parramatta Seminary.—Marsden to Kendall.—His Reply.

CHAPTER VII.

Butler Returns to N.Z.—War.—Hinaki's Head.—More War.—The Aftermath.—A Starving Slave.—Sick Natives.—Tahitian Mission.—Five Men Drowned.—Artisans Leave for Sydney.—Ploughing.—Thomas Tooi. — Ill Health. — Thirty Maoris Drowned. — Te Haere. — The Vansittarts. — The Leighs. — Butler's Daughter Ill. — Natives Troublesome.—The 'St. Michael!'—Dr. Cribben.—Wattarou.—Mr. F. Hall Retires.—Thames Natives Seek Peace with Hongi.—Takou.—Te Tohi Regains his Son.—A Harvest Home.

CHAPTER VIII.

Marsden to Pratt.—Methodist Goods Arrive.—Atowa.—Omapere.—Oruru.—The 'Cossack' Wrecked.—Leigh to Butler.—The Latter Assists to Establish the Wesleyan Mission.—Hongi Returns from War.—Whangarei.—Whangaroa Decided Upon.—Leigh to Butler.—Butler's Son Nearly Drowned.—The 'Brampton' Arrives.—White to Butler.—Leigh very Ill.—Leaves for Sydney.—Wrecked.—Strachan's Account.—Hongi Returns from Rotorua.—Marsden Induces Butler to Leave N.Z.

CHAPTER IX.

Butler Agrees to Leave.—The 'Dragon.'—Marsden to Pratt.—More regulations.—Marsden versus Butler.—The Accusation.—Parramatta.—Rev. Lawry Returns.—James Spencer.—Butler's Statement.

CHAPTER X.

Suspension.—The Seminary.—Comments.—Affidavits.—J. D. Lang on the Mission.—The Earliest White Children.—Earliest Settlers and Artisans.—Census of Chiefs.—The First Maori Prayers.

CHAPTER XI.

At Parramatta.—La Coquille.—On the 'Midas' for England.—Storms.—Sydney Again.—Botany Bay.—Capt. Dawson and Crew Killed.—Salt Junk.—Home in England Once More.

CHAPTER XII.

Butler to Coates.—To Woodd.—Lawry Writes.—Butler Addresses Meetings.—Philip King.—Samuel to his Father.—De Thierry.—Various Letters.—Canada.—The N.Z. Association.—The 'Bolton.'—The Voyage.—D'Urville Island.—Port Nicholson.—Wakefield.—Britannia.—Aurora Lost.—Capt. Smith.—D. Riddiford.—Hobson Petitioned.—Eight Drowned at Pitone.—'Martha' and 'London' Arrive.

CHAPTER I.

THE first authentic records we have of the Rev. John Butler are in the "Minutes" of the Grand Junction and Canal Bible Association, of which the Rev. Basil Woodd was President; Butler being an Honorary Secretary from its inception. This Association was formed in 1816, under the patronage of the Bishops of Norwich, Durham, and Gloucester.

John Butler was prepared for the Church Missionary work by the late Rev. John Bishop, of Paddington, wherein Butler had resided for twenty years.

He was ordained by the Bishop of Gloucester, in 1818, and left for New Zealand on December 15th of that year.

Dr. J. D. Lang states that Butler "previous to his ordination for foreign parts, was clerk to a large London carrying company."

His previous history is obscure; we possess this knowledge, however, that he was born in March, 1781; married in 1798 to a Miss Hitchman. His eldest son was born on November 30th, 1799, died in April, 1800. His second son, Samuel, who came to New Zealand with him in 1819, was born on December 13th, 1800; and his only daughter, Hannah, on September 5th, 1817. The latter was, therefore, but two years of age when she came out with her parents.

The Rev. John Butler was the first ordained clergyman to reside in New Zealand, taking the position of superintendent of the N.Z. Mission, but subordinate to the Society's Agent in New South Wales, at that period, the Rev. Samuel Marsden, Senior Chaplain to the New South Wales Government.

The latter was a man of domineering personality, of a querulous disposition, living in an atmosphere neither conducive to clemency, nor tolerance, administering his duties as a Magistrate, with an austerity quite incompatible with the humanitarian precepts of his profession, culminating in the curt order, "His Excellency the Governor has been pleased to dispense with the services of the Rev. Samuel Marsden as a Justice of the Peace, and Magistrate of Parramatta, and the surrounding districts."

Butler was from London, an accountant, and conversant with business methods, of mature age and discernment, and prone to speak his mind; had he been less zealous, and not so enthusiastic in his conception of the duties of a missionary, he would have dovetailed more satisfactorily into Mr. Marsden's project; this entailed conducting the New Zealand Mission from his demesne at Parramatta, New South Wales; in those days of precarious intercourse, much too remote for such an idea.

The inevitable clash came; we find a slight break in the harmony in 1821. The N.Z. Committee, Messrs Butler, Kemp, King, and Hall, decided to send back to Sydney, for misbehaviour, an emancipated convict whom Mr. Marsden had sent to New Zealand. Butler, as chairman, forwarded the complaint to London, including Mr. Marsden's rejoinder, "We cannot introduce civilization without introducing the evils of civil life."

Marsden lodged a complaint about his cattle being shot; following this by refusing to honour a draft for timber, purchased for the Mission by Butler, who once more lodged a complaint to the Church Missionary Society against Marsden.

This was followed by the retention of the New Zealand Mission goods (and those of Butler's) in Sydney; the latter suggesting that many of the supplies, sent out for the natives, were sold to defray the wages of the seamen on the "Active." Butler, therefore, went across to Sydney to obtain necessities for the Mission and himself, and immediately came into conflict with Marsden and his accountant Campbell, over errors by Campbell in Butler's accounts. Thoroughly exasperated with his treatment, he then wrote the letter to Marsden, dated January 8th, 1822.

Historians have had only the written statement of Marsden to dilate upon, "I have this day (January 13th, 1824) suspended Mr. Butler." The Official Records in England, which the present Society have kindly examined, do not bear this out, nor does their correspondence with Butler. The records state, "Withdrew from the Mission, February 16th, 1825, the first clergyman of the Church of England sent to New Zealand." Butler left New Zealand on November 24th, 1823.

Impedimenta of the Rev. John Butler, on board ship for New Zealand:—

1 Box, containing Hats
1 do Tin

No. 6
7

1 parcel, Mr Marsden	Below	8
1 „ Books	Cabin	9
1 Case, Medicine	Below	10
1 „ „	„	11
1 Trunk, Wearing Apparel, all sorts,	Below	1
1 „ „ „ „ „	„	5
1 „ „ „ „ „	„	2
1 „ „ „ „	Cabin	3
1 D. Bed	„	12
1 „ „	„	13
1 Box, Books	„	14
1 Box, Parcels, etc.	„	4
1 Parcel, Cases	„	15
1 Trunk	„	16
1 Tin Box	„	17
1 Paper Box	„	18
1 „ „	„	19
1 Desk	„	20
1 „	„	21
1 Box, Bonnets	Below	22
1 Paper Trunk	Cabin	23
Hoop	Below	

Sailed from London, 15th December, 1818. Our ship got on the Break Sand on the 19th December, 1818, went back to Chatham, repaired and out to sea again in a fortnight.

JANUARY 25, 26, 1819.—Experienced a heavy gale in the Downs.

WEDNESDAY, 27.—Sailed from the Downs, wind South East.

THURSDAY, 28th.—Off Portsmouth. Experienced a heavy gale in the Channel.

FRIDAY.—Off the Lizard Point, weather rather moderate.

SATURDAY, 30th.—Enter Becay Bay; saw two whales. Wind, N.N.W.

SUNDAY, JANUARY 31st, 1819.—Divine Service in Mr. Hall's cabin, M. & E.

MONDAY AND TUESDAY, 1st and 2nd.—Gentle breeze.

FEBRUARY 4th.—Strong gale.

FEBRUARY 5th.—Distributed 48 Testaments.

SUNDAY, FEBRUARY 7th.—Divine Service on deck by Mr. Cross; in the evening by Mr. B. in Mr. Hall's cabin. Administered the Holy Sacrament to eleven Communicants, gave 300 tracts among convicts.

MONDAY AND TUESDAY, 8th and 9th.—Weather very fine.

WEDNESDAY, 10th.—At 6 a.m. see Porto Santo. Arrived at Funchal, Madeira, at 5 o'clock the same afternoon; went on shore the same evening with Mr. Kemp, Mr. and Mrs. Cross; slept on shore at the British Hotel; next morning went to see St. Peter's Church and St. Mary's Church.

On FRIDAY, 12th—Mr. Hall, Tooi, Teterrie, Samuel Butler and myself rode 5 miles up into the mountains, to see the country, which is very much cultivated with vines. Return and buy oranges, walnuts, etc., at Funchal, and went on board our ship much gratified. Take Mrs. Butler and child, Mrs. Kemp, Mrs. Turnbull to see Funchal; night came on; obliged to go to the Governor's Palace to obtain leave to go on board, as no boats are permitted to leave the shore after sunset.

13th.—Sailed from Madeira.

SATURDAY.—Fine breeze.

FEBRUARY 14th, SUNDAY.—Divine Service on deck, Mr Hall's cabin in the evening.

15th, MONDAY.—See the island of Palma. Snow on the top of the mountain. See the peak of Teneriffe. School commenced among convicts.

17th FEBRUARY, 1849, WEDNESDAY.—Upwards of 70 convicts gave their names to become scholars. Heard a class in the Testament. Began with St. Matthew's Gospel, read three first chapters; purpose going regularly through the Testament.

FEBRUARY 18th.—Heard class in Testament; spoke to them from 5th St. Matthew; several shed tears; all behaved well. Mrs Kemp very ill.

SATURDAY.—Mrs. Kemp a little better.

FEBRUARY 21st, SUNDAY.—Divine Service on deck, Mr. Hall's cabin in evening. Captain Lamb attended.

22nd.—Mrs. Kemp better. Sailor attended our evening prayers. Mrs. R.—, wife of Sergeant R.—, was tied up in



Mr. JAMES KEMP.

the rigging, and kept there for some time, and a large quantity of water thrown upon her, for threatening to stab Ensign White, when commanding her to be silent, and otherwise abusing him in a shameful manner.

FEBRUARY 23rd.—School among the convicts; spoke to them from the 6th chapter of Matthew; all very attentive.

FEBRUARY 24th and 25th, WEDNESDAY AND THURSDAY.—School among the convicts; weather very fine, but very hot. Some sailors attend our evening prayers.

FEBRUARY 26th.—School among convicts. Scaled our guns and exercised them.

FEBRUARY 27th.—School among convicts; in 4 degs. North latitude.

28th, SUNDAY.—Divine Service on deck in morning. Mr. Hall's cabin in evening.

MARCH 1st and 2nd.—School among the convicts, weather very fine.

MARCH 3rd.—Visited a poor woman very ill; endeavoured to point her enquiring mind to Jesus. Spake the "Lowther," East Indiaman, and her consort, 2 degs., 20 minutes north latitude.

MARCH 4th.—School among convicts.

MARCH 5th.—Same; myself very poorly.

FRIDAY.—School as usual; weather continuing very fine.

MARCH 6th. — Neptune came on board; 14 sailors and several soldiers shaved; paid a dollar for each belonging to our party, to save us from undergoing the operation of Neptune's razor, viz., the tar brush and the notched hoop. The evening passed in conviviality.

MARCH 7th.—Divine Service on deck in morning, Mr. Hall's cabin in evening. Administered the Holy Sacrament to 7 Communicants, wrote to Missionary House by the "Hero," ship bound to Rio Janeiro. On Sunday night, February 28th, Mr. C—— laid a wager with Mr. Roberts, passenger, to the amount of 10/-; such a noise was made by them and Mrs. C—— as to cause them to be openly reprov'd for it by the Captain, at breakfast table.

MARCH 8th.—School in Mr. Hall's cabin.

9th.—Tetteree came back to school again.

MARCH 10th.—School among convicts; all very attentive. Received a paper from Thos. Owen to take care of it; put it in my writing desk.

MARCH 11th.—Two convicts flogged; endeavoured to improve the subject of their punishment to the scholars.

MARCH 12th and 13th.—Strong breeze, S.E. School among convicts. Make it a point of speaking to them every day from chapters they read.

MARCH 14th, SUNDAY.—Divine Service on deck in morning, Mr. Hall's cabin in evening.

MARCH 15th.—Washing day; no school.

MARCH 16th, TUESDAY.—In 15 degrees S.L. School among convicts; after school, when I had finished speaking to them from what they had read, David Wilcock, one of the convicts, caught hold of my coat as I was leaving them, and began to weep much, and said, "Oh, sir: stay and pray with me a little longer!" This request I could not deny; I turned and asked the cause of his weeping. "Oh, sir," said he, "I feel myself such a sinner, I know not what to do; my heart is so affected with the thought of sins and the sight of them; I hope the Lord will have mercy on me, a poor sinner; I feel a desire to love Xt: I have longed to speak to you for several days past. I endeavoured to suppress my feelings, but I cannot do it any longer." I embraced the opportunity from St. Matthew 27. of speaking to him, and several others standing by, and in endeavouring to direct his mind, and the others also, to the sufferings of Xt. Who hath redeemed to God by the infinitely precious price of His own blood, and showing at the same time how welcome every poor laden sinner is to come to Xt for pardon, divine favour, and eternal life, and how certain everyone is of obtaining the blessings he desires, if he comes to Xt with an humble, penitent and believing heart. While I was speaking, he wept much. Several of the others shed tears; I concluded with short prayer for the Lord's blessing upon His own words.

In the evening, Mr. C—— and Mrs. C——quarrelled and fought; Mr. C—— after slept on deck nearly the night.

MARCH 17th.—School among the convicts; a heavy squall in the night.

MARCH 18th, THURSDAY.—School among convicts; 30 scholars, all very attentive; spoke to them from the chapters read.

EVENING.—Mr. C—— drunk, slept on deck all night; ran about the deck with his breeches down, and lost his hat. Dr. Halloran wrote a poem upon it. Sailors and soldiers cried, “Shame!” saying “He is drunk all right to-night, and will ape the saint to-morrow.”

The little man and little wife,
Appear so fond of noise and strife,
That no one need be at a loss,
To know that each of them is cross;
So often quarrel, scold, and rail,
And box, and scratch, both tooth and nail.

—Dr. Halloran.

MARCH 19th.—Weather very fine; school among convicts, many attended, paid great attention.

SUNDAY, 21st.—Divine Service on deck in the morning, Mr. Hall’s cabin in evening. Read with convicts; spoke to them from Chapter 6, John; all very attentive. Poor Wilcock seemed much comforted. There are three others, I believe, seeking the Lord in sincerity, viz., Clements, Hindhaugh, Furnival, also a lad named Thos. Owen, known to Rev. Samuel Crowther, seems very serious. I have had some serious talk with this lad several times. I hope the Lord will make it profitable to his soul.

MONDAY, TUESDAY, WEDNESDAY, 22nd, 23rd, 24th.—Regular school, spoke to them from 12 to 15 of St. Mark’s Gospel; all very orderly. May the Lord Jesus bless and multiply the seed sown, to His glory, and the salvation of their souls.

THURSDAY, FRIDAY, 25th and 26th MARCH.—Weather very fine. School among convicts. Sailor flogged for thieving. Mrs. Kemp much better.

SATURDAY, MARCH 27th.—A calm; school as usual. Mr. C—— in the evening so dreadfully inebriated, that he slept on the floor of his cabin until 3 o’clock Sunday morning, his door open and his head over the threshold in the passage, and Mrs. C—— behind him.

SUNDAY, MARCH 28th, 1819.—Divine Service on deck. Squall arose, obliged to leave off in the middle of the service.

Afternoon spoke to several convicts about their salvation; visited a soldier very ill. Divine Service in Mr. Hall's cabin in evening. Captain Lamb and Captain Coates, his lady, the Surgeon, and all the officers, except those on duty, attended, several of the officers having been regular attendants for some time at our evening's Service, from the inconsistency of Mr. C——.

MARCH 29th.—Washing day.

MARCH 30th.—School as usual. Rain in morning, wind fair.

WEDNESDAY, 31st.—School among convicts; two convicts handcuffed for stealing books, and making cards of them.

APRIL 1st.—School among convicts; spoke to them from 2nd Chapter Luke; many attended, all very attentive.

APRIL 2nd.—Fine breeze. School among convicts.

3rd.—No school. Stiff gale.

SUNDAY, 4th.—Divine Service upon deck in the morning, Mr. Hall's cabin in the evening. Myself very poorly with bad cold.

MONDAY, TUESDAY, 5th and 6th APRIL.—Obliged to keep to my cabin from severe cold in my head. Very fine breeze, going 8 knots. ——— quite left off attending evening prayers for some time.

APRIL 7th.—Unable to attend school; weather very fine.

8th.—Unable to attend school.

GOOD FRIDAY, APRIL 9th.—Rather better; administered the Holy Sacrament in the morning in Mr. Hall's cabin to two others, besides those of our party. Divine Service, M.U.F.

SATURDAY MORNING.—Reached the island Tristan De Cunha, and two other small islands, all of them uninhabited. Our captain intended to have sent two boats and crews on shore to forage, but found the surf running so high, as to render such a measure impracticable. Obligated to steer away without obtaining our object.

EASTER SUNDAY, APRIL 11th.—Very fine breeze. Divine Service on deck in the morning; myself rather better. Divine Service in evening in Mr. Hall's cabin; administered the Holy Sacrament to ten Communicants. Mr. C—— asked me to read.

MONDAY, APRIL 12th.—Very ill the whole of this week; unable to attend to anything.

SATURDAY, APRIL 17th.—At 4 o'clock p.m., latitude 40, long. 12 east. A very heavy gale set in from the south west, which continued to rage furiously for 30 hours, the sea rolled along in awful grandeur, ship sometimes climbing the mountainous waves, then rushing headlong into the chasm below. All leadlights put down, doors, shutters of the poop cabin windows closed, to keep out the sea.

APRIL 18th.—No public service could be performed on account of the storm. I thought of the psalmist's words, "They that go down into the sea in ships, and occupy their business in great waters: these men see the works of the Lord, and His wonders in the deep. For at His word the stormy wind ariseth: which lifteth up the waves thereof. They are carried up to the heavens, and down again to the deep: their soul withereth away because of the trouble. They reel to and fro like a drunken man, and are at their wits' end."

APRIL 19th.—Blowing a tremendous gale, ship scudding before it. Much better in health. Gale continued to rage all day most dreadful; at night the ship rolled most violently, sea coming in at the gangways, and over every part of her at times, she rolled one of her cannon off the carriage into the sea, but being fastened by a large rope to the carriage, it was got in again.

There were ten men at the wheel of the ship, and in spite of all fastenings, many things broke loose, and rolled from one side to the other. Children screaming aloud, women very much frightened, but out of all the Lord hath delivered us, blessed be His holy Name.

WEDNESDAY.—Weather very moderate.

THURSDAY.—Very fine.

FRIDAY, APRIL 23rd.—Got my trunks out of the hold, and examined my things; all in tolerably good order. The day very fine, myself fairly well, but much cold remaining upon me.

APRIL 24th.—Very fine breeze in the morning, afternoon very heavy rain, with thunder and lightning. In the night a very heavy gale carried away the foreyard and the weathercock from the top of the mainmast.

25th.—Strong gale, sea running mountains high. Prayers in Mr. Hall's cabin in morning. No public service was able to be performed upon deck. Visited sick in the hospital; one poor man seemed very anxious about his salvation; endeavoured to point him to the blood of Xt, which cleanseth from all sin. In afternoon weather became moderate; in evening Divine Service in Mr. Hall's cabin.

MONDAY, 26th.—Very fine breeze; myself much better. Too bad eyes. School as usual.

APRIL 27th.—School among convicts; spoke to them from the 6, 7, and 8 Romans. Visited the sick in the Hospital. William Bailey, a patient, seemed very anxious about his soul. Myself quite recovered from cold.

APRIL 28th.—A fine breeze; got things up from below; examined Mr. Hassell's case, found the things very damp and mouldy. R. Stevens died on this day. May the Lord be merciful to his soul. He seemed to know but little about the way of salvation by Xt.

APRIL 29th.—Buried poor Stevens at 7 o'clock a.m. Visited the sick in hospital; endeavoured to improve the circumstances of Stevens' death for the benefit of those remaining sick. School among convicts. Spoke to them from the 15 Corinthians; several wept, all very attentive.

30th.—Very fine, almost a calm. School among convicts; read the Epistle of Paul to the Ephesians; spoke to them from the same Epistle. Visited the sick in the Hospital; poor Bailey rather better, and still remains very anxious about eternal things. I hope the Lord has begun a good work in his soul.

MAY 1st, 1819.—Very fine day. School among convicts, all very attentive. Visited sick in the Hospital.

SUNDAY, MAY 2nd.—Very fine day. Public service upon deck; read prayers for the first time. Visited the sick in the Hospital. Divine Service in Mr. Hall's cabin in the evening. Administered the Holy Sacrament to eight Communicants.

3rd.—Very fine breeze. No school, on account washing among convicts.

MAY 4th.—Fine breeze, too strong to have school among convicts.

WEDNESDAY, 5th.—Strong breeze. No school among convicts. Visited the sick in the Hospital. Poor Bailey a little

better, seemed much comforted, and perfectly resigned to the will of God, whether to live or die.

MAY 6th.—Visited the sick in the Hospital. Strong breeze. No school among convicts. Wind increased in the night, split several sails.

MAY 7th.—Very strong gale the whole of this day. Visited the sick in the Hospital.

MAY 8th.—Weather moderate, but very wet. No school on deck. Visited the sick in the Hospital; endeavoured to speak word in season to all present. May the Lord bless His own Word to their benefit.

SUNDAY, MAY 9th.—Divine Service M. & E. in Mr. Hall's cabin. Visited the sick in the Hospital. Very strong breeze.

MAY 10th.—Very strong breeze. No school. Visited the sick in the Hospital. Mrs. Thorpe brought to bed, girl.

MAY 11th.—Heavy gale in the morning, 20 gallery windows drove in by the sea (with the frame), and a great quantity of water came into the ship; the rain came into my cabin and made it exceedingly wet and uncomfortable. Mrs. Watson died, aged 73, on this day—a patient I had long visited. She professed but little knowledge, but seemed earnestly to implore mercy.

WEDNESDAY, MAY 12th, 1819.—Very strong breeze; myself very poorly, not able to attend school. Wm. Brooks died this morning. Poor man, he was accustomed to swear very much at times during his illness, yet he would readily say he was sorry for it. I think he was insane, but, however, towards the close of life, he earnestly sued for mercy. Both bodies committed to the deep this evening.

MAY 13th.—George Matthew died. This poor man seemed very penitent. I believe he is in glory. Read St. Paul's Epistle to the Philippians with the convicts; spoke to them from the same, all very attentive. Visited the sick in the Hospital, endeavoured to impress their minds with the vast importance of eternal things.

MAY 14th.—Visited the sick this morning; a very heavy gale came on, which lasted the whole of the day, and continued to rage the greater part of the night. Blessed be God we are enabled to lift up our souls to Him, when the stormy billows

rise, and when we can neither stand nor go, without having hold of some support.

15th.—Weather moderate. Visited the sick in the Hospital. School in afternoon.

SUNDAY.—Weather very fine. Divine Service on deck in morning, Mr. Hall's cabin in evening.

MAY 17th.—Visited the sick in the Hospital; had an opportunity of speaking to many outpatients who came for medicine.

MAY 18th.—Very fine day and a strong breeze. Visited the sick in Hospital.

MAY 19th.—Very strong breeze; myself taken very suddenly with a pain in stomach; obliged to get medical aid.

20th, 21st, 22nd.—Not able to attend school, or visit the Hospital.

MAY 23rd.—Divine Service on deck in morning, Mr. Hall's cabin in evening. Myself much better, Tooi very poorly; the day very fine, but cold. Wm. Bailey died on this day, 12 noon. With him the storms of wintry times are over, and I hope he is now in glory in the presence of his Redeemer and Lord.

MAY 24th.—The body of Wm. Bailey was committed to the deep. Visited the sick in Hospital. I hope the Lord will bless my endeavours to speak a word in season among the patients of this house of mourning.

MAY 25th.—Strong wind, but foul; the weather is now so cold and hazy, we are not able to have regular school among convicts, but we endeavour to do the best we can.

MAY 26th.—Strong wind, directly in our teeth; patience must now be exercised, and wait the Lord's leisure.

MAY 27th.—On Wednesday night a most violent outrage was committed by Mr. Roberts, Commissary, and Ensign White, belonging to the 48th Regiment of Foot, who by a false alarm, had thrown the ship and passengers in very great distress. Myself was arrested, and made prisoner by a sentinel, and after being shamefully abused by Captain Lamb for speaking in my own defence.

MAY 27th.—Very ill all day from the fright and ill-usage I received in the past night.

28th.—Wind still continued foul and strong, myself pretty well recovered from the ill-usage on the preceding day.

MAY 29th.—Visited the sick in the Hospital; several convicts very ill; endeavoured, according to my usual custom, to speak a word in season; all seemed very thankful. The scurvy at this time has made its appearance, and seems to rage violently among the convicts; water and other necessaries are growing very short. A fine day, but foul wind.

MAY 30th.—Divine Service in Mr. Hall's cabin in morning; taken very poorly with the colic in my stomach, and unable in the evening to perform the duties of public worship.

MAY 31st.—The wind continues very foul, but we look for help from that God Who ruleth the wind and the waves. Myself very poorly, unable to do anything in school matters.

JUNE 1st, 1819.—Wind very foul, the day very fine; myself much recovered from the recent attack of an old complaint in the stomach. We begin to hope and pray to get to our journey's end.

JUNE 2nd.—Visited the sick in the Hospital; all the patients seemed very thankful. I hope the Lord has in some measure blessed my ministry among them. Fine day, but foul wind. Our water is now getting very short. Sailors, soldiers and convicts are now reduced to a pint and a half of water per day.

JUNE 3rd.—Day very fine, wind rather more favourable.

JUNE 4th.—Wind quite foul; another reduction in water and bread found necessary. Visited the sick in Hospital; all seemed contented and thankful; our own party in good health, thanks be to God for it.

JUNE 5th, 1819.—Fine day, wind still foul.

JUNE 6th.—Divine Service on deck in morning, Mr. Hall's cabin in evening. Sent for to the Hospital by a patient named Pointon, a man whom I had visited for some time, to explain the nature and meaning of the Lord's Prayer. When I came unto him, he seemed exceeding thankful, and desired I would pray with him, and tell him something about the Lord's Prayer, for he thought there was more in it than he understood. He was very anxious to know how he could obtain mercy, and he made happy, for he said, "I am sure I shall die before midnight," and which actually came to pass, for he died the same

evening about 9 o'clock. I endeavoured to explain the Lord's Prayer, according to my feeble ability, showing that sinners are redeemed to God by the blood of Christ; that we who are by nature far off God, are thus brought nigh, and are adopted into the family of heaven, so that God is our father in a peculiar manner, on account of what Xt has done and suffered for us; and as a father He will have mercy, and all repenting sinners who come to Him, and sincerely ask His blessing through Xt Jesus. He is gone! May the Lord remove him to His arms of mercy.

JUNE 7th.—A fine day, but a dead calm; hope the Lord will give us a breeze speedily, and waft us into our port, as all necessities are now getting very short.

JUNE 8th.—Weather very fine, but no wind. Visited the sick in Hospital; had some very interesting conversation with a patient named Watson, who has long been ill, and on whom I have long attended. He seemed very thankful for my visits, and above all, that it pleased God to affect him; moreover, he said his sickbed had been to him the happiest thing that had ever befallen him, "for God," said he, "has led me to see the error of my way, and I humbly hope He will grant me His mercy for Xt sake, His dear Son, our Lord. I am now getting a little better, and if the Lord is pleased to raise me up in health, I hope He will give me His grace that I may live to His glory, and I fully determine so to do by His Almighty help." I endeavoured to point out the happiness of man that hath God for his portion, and besought him to pray earnestly for grace, and strength to perform all his good resolutions. I was also sent for a second time into the Hospital this day, by another patient whom I had long visited, named Bartholomew. Poor man; during the whole of his sickness he was apparently very penitent, but he possesses very little knowledge. I asked him why he sent for me again: he said to pray with me and talk with me. I sat down by his bedside about half an hour, and instructed him in the best manner I was able, and then concluded with prayer; the Lord grant His blessing.

9th.—A fine breeze sprang up in the evening of this day, which caused us to be very thankful.

THURSDAY, 10th, 1819.—Vandeeman's Land appeared in sight this morning at 7 o'clock. The day being very fine, and the ship fast approaching to the land, caused a general feeling of great joy; especially as we should soon have been reduced

to the greatest distress both for provisions and water. Blessed be God, He sends help when hope is almost gone. We had not seen land for nine weeks and five days.

JUNE 11th, 1819.—Passed the Mewstone at 4 o'clock this morning; this is a rock in the sea several miles. Nothing can be more romantic than the west and south coast of Vandee-man's Land; the high hills are covered with immense wood, and large trees.

We experienced contrary winds the whole of this day, but effort was made to get ship up to the entrance of a passage that leads up to the Derwent River, that leads to Hobart Town. The whole of the coast is full of rocks. Visited the sick in the Hospital. Several of the patients very ill. All of them seemed thankful for my continued visits.

JUNE 12th.—Wind very strong this morning, and almost in our teeth, but we kept beating backwards and forwards, endeavouring to make some progress, and we consider it a great mercy that we are near enough to take shelter under the land, as there is beyond doubt a very heavy gale at sea at this time.

SUNDAY.—At anchor in Isthmus Bay. Day very fine and calm; Divine Service in Mr. Hall's cabin, morning and evening; the passage up this arm of the sea to Hobart Town is very delightful; deep bays, and high hills covered with lofty trees—a most charming scene. In evening, child taken suddenly ill.

14th.—Child much better than could be expected. Hobart Town appeared in sight at 7 a.m. Pilot came on board at 10 a.m.; at anchor in harbour at 1 o'clock p.m. The little spots cultivated here and there, as we approached the town, gave it a beautiful and picturesque appearance. Went ashore and waited on the Governor immediately, who received us very kindly.

JUNE 15th.—Went to New Town, accompanied by Mr. Mitchell, who, on seeing we were strangers, came up to us in the most gentlemanly manner, and offered his services; this offer we gladly accepted. Newtown is about two miles from Hobart Town. The land about this village is more cultivated than at Hobart Town; we went to a gentleman's house, and were received very kindly; his name is Lutterell, who also showed us his garden and farm.

JUNE 16th, 1819.—Went on a shooting party with Mr. Mitchell and Mr. Lord; the latter is a gentleman of great property. I was informed from good authority, he is worth £100,000. Mrs. Butler and Mrs. Kemp were kindly entertained at Mr. Lord's house the whole day. We returned from our amusement about five o'clock, got refreshments at Mr. Lord's, went on board with about 70 birds, all of a pretty good sort.

17th.—Went to pay my respects to the Rev. Mr. Knopwood, Government Chaplain, who received us with every mark of respect.

JUNE 18th.—Went on shore with the rest of my brethren for a walk. I this morning received a kind letter from the Governor, to wait on him with the rest of my brethren, and Tooi, and Tetterree. We went at the time appointed (say 2 o'clock). We were all received very kindly, and took some ham and beef with him, and some wine also. We afterwards went to see Government Garden and water mill, then returned. Bartholomew, who had been ill in the Ship Hospital a long time, was taken on shore, and there died; several others were landed for the benefit of their health, and are getting much better.

SATURDAY, 19th, 1819.—Wet day; remained on board all day.

SUNDAY, JUNE 20th.—Divine Service in Mr. Hall's cabin in the morning, afternoon went on shore to dine with the Rev. Robert Knopwood. After dinner some interesting conversation took place about the moral and religious improvement of the Colony. I received a report of the Auxiliary Branch Bible Society of Van Dieman's Land, which I have forwarded with my despatches. It is a matter of the most sacred joy and gratitude to see the Holy Scriptures spreading through every land and corner of the world.

21st.—Went on shore to breakfast with Rev. Knopwood, and to bid him farewell, who also expressed his hope that the Lord would bless our Mission with His special grace and favour, and that the Gospel of Xt might soon be spread throughout the Island of New Zealand.

Another convict, named Brown, died on shore this morning.

At 10 o'clock our ship weighed anchor, and we left Hobart Town. We had a fine gentle breeze down the Derwent River,

but, as soon as we reached the ocean, we had a very heavy gale set in, exactly from the point we wanted to sail. Split the mainsail in the night by the storm.

JUNE 22nd.—This morning many persons were very sick from the dashing and rolling of the ship, the gale continuing very strong and foul, we were obliged to return for Van Dieman's Land, which we made in the evening, when of a sudden the wind shifted and became fair. We stood off for sea; for some hours our ship pitched exceedingly on account of our having to meet the sea from the late gale.

WEDNESDAY, 23rd.—A very fine morning, and a very fine breeze in our favour.

THURSDAY, 24th. — A very stiff gale with rain, but exactly in our favour, ship running nine knots before the wind.

25th JUNE, 1819.—Fine breeze.

JUNE 26th.—Arrived at Sydney, New South Wales; went on shore, and were very kindly received by Mr. Eagar. Sent a letter immediately to Mr. Marsden, who sent his man and chaise to fetch me to Parramatta on Sunday morning.

JUNE 27th.—Arrived at Parramatta at 12 o'clock noon. Received by Mr. Marsden and family in the kindest manner; read prayers in the Parramatta Church in the afternoon.

JUNE 28th. — Returned to Sydney with Mr. and Mrs. Marsden, found all our brethren well.

TUESDAY, WEDNESDAY, THURSDAY, FRIDAY.—Getting stores out of the ship, found all right.

SATURDAY, JULY 3rd, 1819.—Returned to Parramatta.

JULY 4th.—Preached from 61 Chapter Isaiah, 1st and 2nd verse, at Parramatta Church.

JULY 5th.—All hands busily employed in putting our things to rights.

JULY 10th.—Wrote to Church Missionary Society. To Rev. Basil Woodd, to Rev. Saml. Crowther, to Mr. John Hitchman, Mr. Wm. Batchelor, to Mr. Thomas Adams, Mr. Nich. Broughton, to Lord Bishop of Gloucester.

JULY 11th.—Preached at Parramatta from 22nd Chapter Luke, 19th verse.

29th JULY, 1819.—Left Port Jackson. Arrived at Bay of Islands on August 12th, 1819.

AUGUST 13th.—We landed some of the goods among several hundred natives, who seemed very glad to see more Europeans come among them.

AUGUST 14th.—Landed goods all this day. Natives behaved exceedingly well. Had some conversation with Shunghe, a very great chief, and with Tarrier, his chief captain. Shunghee was particularly kind, and begged we should let him have some Europeans to live in his district. He would give us as much land as we pleased for cultivation, send his children to school, and protect us in our labours.

We had conversation with several other chiefs, viz., Korokoro, Timaranghe, and others, and all of them praying for Missionaries to live among them. They are a race of people who understand men and things remarkably well; they are men of quick perception, and very large capacities. The fields are white already to the harvest, and nothing seems wanting but good and faithful labourers.

AUGUST 15th, 1819.—Divine Service at Mr. Hall's; all the settlement was collected. I read prayers. Mr Marsden preached from the 16th Verse of the 3rd Chapter of the first Epistle to Timothy.

This "copy" is in the possession of the "Hocken" Collection, and was evidently sent to the Secretary, C.M.S., London, by Butler.

SYDNEY, July 28th, 1819.

Revd. and Dear Sir,

At the point of our departure, I had the misfortune to lose my watch in Mr. Campbell's yard, in shipping goods. I should be glad if you will purchase me a good silver watch and chain and seal, and send it to Mr. Marsden, directed for me at New Zealand, and you will greatly oblige.

Dr. sir,

Your obedt. servant,

JOHN BUTLER.

AUGUST 16th, 1819. — I, John Butler, agreed with the Revd. Samuel Marsden for £160 per annum, to be paid to me, by the Revd. Samuel Marsden, for and on account of the Church Missionary Society in England. Exclusive of my regular ration of food.

To commence 12th August, 1819.

(Signed) JOHN BUTLER.

1819. LETTERS written to England, Nov. 9th, by the
 "Active," brig.

To the Society. To the Bishop of Gloucester.
 To the Rev. Basil Woodd. To Mr. Hitchman.

APRIL 10th, 1820.

A journal to the Society. A letter to Mr. Pratt.
 3 to Samuel Butler (N.S.W.) To Rev. S. Marsden.

APRIL 20th, 1820.

To Samuel Butler. Governor Macquarrie (two let-
 ters).

SEPT. 12th, 1820.

A journal to the Society. A letter to Mr. Pratt.
 One to S. Butler, N.S.W.

By Mr. Marsden, December 4th, 1820.

A journal to the Society.

A letter to Mr. Pratt.

A letter to Mr. Broughton, and 2 Pattu.

do do Mr. Deacon and 1 do

do do Mr. Hitchman and 1 Pattu.

do do Mr. Dobman do do

A letter to Mr. Batchelor (answered Apr. 6th, 1822).

JANY. 18th, 1821.

Capt. Thompson (answered). Three letters Mr. Marsden, and
 1 Samuel Butler.

per Capt. Grime, MAR. 3rd, 1821.

To Mr. Broughton, 1 comb, 1 letter, 1 whistle, 1 mat.

To Mr. Hitchman, 1 box, 1 mat.

To Rev. Crowther, 1 cup, 1 mat.

To Revd. S. Pratt, one letter.

By the "Coromandel," a letter to Mr. Pratt, a journal to the
 Society.

APRIL 23rd, 1821. Journal to the Society. Letter to Mr.
 Hooper, Chatham Dockyard.



Stage for Native Feast.

THE MISSION STATION AT KERIKERI.

Mr. Kemp's House.

CHAPTER II.

THE following description of mission stations is extracted from "Yate's New Zealand," 1835.

RANGIHOUA.—A native village on the north-west side of the Bay of Islands, was the first place occupied; later on, the houses having become so dilapidated, it was recommended to remove the station to Te Puna, on the other side of the hill, in a small valley, formerly cultivated by the natives of that place; the landing is, however, unpleasant, and at times dangerous, on account of the steepness of the beach, and from the heavy surf that rolls in from the great Southern Ocean.

2. KERI KERI.—Next in succession to Tepuna, or Rangihoua, was first established on the arrival of Messrs Butler and Kemp from England. On the hill immediately adjoining the settlement, was a large native village occupied by the tribe Ngai-Te-Waki, with the warrior Hongi as their head. It is a beautiful and picturesque spot, situated at the confluence of the tide and of the fresh water stream from which it takes its name. The vale is an amphitheatre of small extent, but well situated from the prevailing westerly winds by the hills at the back, and from the east and north-east gales, by those in front. The waters of the Keri Keri fall over a rock about nine feet high at ebb tide, into a beautiful and extensive basin, and then pass on with the tide to the Bay of Islands. The river is navigable to within four miles of the settlement, for vessels of a hundred and fifty tons.

3. The settlement at PAIHIA was commenced in 1823. It is situated on the south side of the Bay of Islands on a pleasant piece of ground, a quarter of a mile in front, and containing fifteen acres of level land available for cultivation. At this place, the Rev. Henry Williams and Mr. Fairburn commenced their labours.

4. HOKIANGA (Shukehanga).—Cruise, 1820, says, "Its bleak and dreary appearance from the sea, holds out no inducement to the navigator to approach it; but the passage over the bar is perfectly safe for vessels drawing fifteen feet of water

(or probably more), and the harbour is well sheltered and commodious. The river, which is wide and navigable for ten miles from its mouth, forms many deep coves; and branches into several smaller streams, the banks of which are beautifully wooded."

5. WANGAROA.—(Cruise) Is a singularly and beautifully romantic place; the entrance is not more than half a mile wide, and it is impossible to discover it from any distance at sea, but it is deep quite close to land on either side, which is bold and steep, and when entered, is one of the finest harbours in the world, nor is there a wind from which it is not sheltered.

The interior is lined with lofty hills, richly wooded, and close to the western shore is a series of huge rocks, rising in most fantastic shapes, to an immense height, from the tops of which tumble many cascades that lose themselves among the innumerable trees and shrubs with which the bases of those stupendous piles are profusely covered.

MISCELLANEOUS PAPER FOUND AMONG REV. J. BUTLER'S.

WYCADDY (Waikare).—The structure of this village is one of the most beautiful I have seen in New Zealand, and deserves to be particularly described. It is built upon the banks of the Waitangi, which are about fifteen or twenty feet above the level of the water, and most of the huts are constructed in such a manner as to have a very pleasing effect. I observed some which verged upon the extreme edge of the bank, having on the opposite side an agreeable prospect of a large enclosed field, with the appearance of an English meadow; beyond this field the level ground disappears, and the hills rising gradually one above the other, display, with interesting contrast, the wild luxuriance of the fern, and the picturesque grandeur of the towering pine.

The river is about forty or fifty feet wide, and the water as clear as crystal, reflecting the polished pebbles over which it flows, and exhibiting in this manner a profuse variety of beautiful shrubs; while from its basin, numberless flocks of curious birds are continually emerging and still hovering on either side, blend with the scene and intertwine with their gay plumage the sombre shades of the distant forest. The huts in

this village are built of the same materials as in the other parts of the Islands, and are, generally, of the same dimensions, excepting the hut which was the residence of the chief, and this was the largest I had met with, measuring twenty-seven feet by eighteen, and nine feet in height: the door-way was not more spacious than any other hut, but it was decorated with some curious devices of nude sculpture.

Should an extensive settlement be ever formed in New Zealand, this neighbourhood—Lake Morberree (Omapere)—would form an admirable situation, the extensive forests which line one side of it would afford an immense quantity of timber. The soil is luxuriant in the extreme, and would yield a supply of food, under mild and equitable government, and spirit of sustained industry.

KAEŌ.—Inland in Whangaroa Harbour, and south of Whangaroa.

KARIKARI.—Knuckle Point, north of Oruru Bay.

HOKIANGA.—West Coast harbour, due west of the Bay of Islands.

KAIPARA.—West Coast, about 100 miles south of Hokianga.

KAITAIA.—Inland from Rangiuna Bay and west of Oruru Bay.

KAWAKAWA.—Bay of Islands River, joins Waikare, 30 miles south of Keri Keri.

KAIHIKI.—Near Lake Mawe, Hokianga Harbour.

KIRIKOKAI.—At head of Keri Keri Inlet, 15 miles north of Russell, and known as Kororipo.

KOHURUANAKI.—Part of Kororareka.

KORORAREKA.—Close to Russell, south-east, across the bay from Keri Keri.

KERI KERI.—Six miles up that river, and north-west in Bay of Islands.

MATAURI.—On the East Coast mainland, inside the Cavalle Islands.

MATAWI.—On the Hokianga River.

MANGAKAHIA.—On Wairoa River, 20 miles south of Keri Keri.

MANGAMUKA.—A branch of the Hokianga River, on the northern side.

MANAWAROA.—A bay on an island in the Bay of Islands.

MANAWHENUA.—Inland wheat growing country, behind Keri Keri.

MANGANUI.—Southernmost of Oruru Bay.

MONGONUI.—Called the Tee, at the head of Bay of Islands Harbour.

MOTUROA.—An island, towards the Bay of Islands Heads.

OIHI.—First Missionary landing spot, Rangihoua.

OKURA.—N.W. of Keri Keri. 20 miles west of Rangihoua.

ORIRA.—A small river, in the centre of Hokianga Estuary.

ORAKA.—Okokako, on upper reaches of the Waitangi River.

ORURU.—A large bay (Lauriston), about 40 miles north of Bay of Islands.

OKAUKAU.—On shore at Manawaroa Bay.

PAKANAE.—A village up the Hokianga River.

PUKENUI.—A hill west of Waimate and east of Pakanae.

PUKEHOURA.—A large kainga on north shore of Bay of Islands, adjoining where Mr. Marsden preached his first sermon.

PAIHIA.—South-west, Bay of Islands Harbour, west of Russell.

PAIATAI.—About 7 miles down Waimate River, towards Bay of Islands.

PAIROA.—Deep bay and spacious harbour, south side Bay of Islands.

RANGITARA.—Three miles from Keri Keri, now Rangitane.

RANGIAHOA.—Westernmost of Hokianga Harbour.

RANGIHOA.—On the headland, northern part Bay of Islands.

TAKOU.—A large settlement on the coast above Rangihou.

TAIAMAI.—Above Waimate, and between coasts.

TAPUATAI.—Three miles from the TI (Mongonui) (Te Waiti?). Now known as Tapuetahi.

TOWAIMATE.—Now known as North Waimate.

TEPAPA.—Inland of Hokianga River, towards Bay of Islands.

TE PUNA.—A roadstead north of Bay of Islands.

UTAKINO.—A branch of the Waihou.

UTAKURA.—Village on the Hokianga, on the road Horeke to Kawakawa.

WAIMA (TE).—Tributary of the Hokianga, about fifteen miles in length.

WAIPOU.—Settlement known as Waihou at Hokianga.

WAIKARE.—River, flows into southern side of Bay of Islands.

WAITANGI.—River between Keri Keri and Waimate.

Settlement, on coast near Paihia, treaty signed here.

WAIMATE.—Between coasts halfway, the river enters the Waitangi.

WAIOMIO.—Village about four miles from Kawakawa.

WAIHOU.—River, adjacent northern side Hokianga River mouth.

WAIRIRI.—A Hokianga southern tributary.

WESLEYDALE.—Seven miles up the Whangaroa River.

WHANGAROA.—Harbour, about 20 miles above Bay of Islands.

WIRIA.—Inland, 4 miles south of Hokianga River mouth.

WAIRIRI.—Near Rangihou.

WHAKARAKI.—River, between Oruru Bay and Hokianga.

WHANGATAWATEA.—Ngatewaki Settlement, close to Keri Keri.

WHIRINAKI.—A river and locality about 14 miles up the Hokianga River.

The period 1819 to 1824 is but sparsely referred to by writers, and were it not for extracts from journals published in the C.M.S. annual records, we should be almost oblivious as to the stressful times experienced by the missionaries. Mr. Marsden was in New Zealand for short periods, chiefly travelling, and his own records are available, and have been extensively used; but from those who resided, suffered the shortage of supplies, and shouldered the requisite work from day to day, records have been singularly silent. Upon the coming of the Wesleyans, the journals have been fairly open to publicity, and much drawn upon by the Revd. Alex. Strachan, and others, but those kept by Messrs Kendall, Hall, King, Shepherd, Kemp and Butler have not been given the introspection, which, in justice to these often much maligned men, (Mr. Marsden himself is continually sweeping in his assertions) would show them in that favourable light which is their due.

The first English-speaking clergyman to visit New Zealand according to Mr. McNab, (Tasman to Marsden, page 154) was the Rev. James Bain; who accompanied Governor King to New Zealand in 1793, but did not land there. (Idem page 156). The Rev. James Elder called at the Bay of Islands in 1808. In March, 1814, Messrs. Wm. Hall and Kendall, laymen, went to New Zealand, and Mr. Hall read the first prayers in New Zealand; they returned to Sydney in August, and in November, with their wives, children, Mr. and Mrs. King, and three ticket-of-leave men, left finally to take up their abode as laymen-missionaries in New Zealand. Rev. Mr. Marsden and his friend Mr. Nicholas, accompanied them. Unattached to the Mission were Mrs. Hansen and her son Thomas—connections of the Kings by marriage—Capt. Hansen was in charge of the “Active.” While in New Zealand, Marsden baptised the first boy, born February 21st, 1815, son of Mr. and Mrs. King. (The first girl was born May 28th, being Mr. and Mrs. Hall’s.) Mr. Marsden and his friend returned to Sydney in February, with a cargo of 4848 feet timber, 1344 lbs. flax, and fish and pork of a net value of £451 4s 0d. He despatched the “Active” almost immediately, and she again returned with a full cargo in July, upon the departure of which, Mr. Wm. Hall commenced to build his house. The next voyage occupied too long, Capt. Thompson, therefore, replaced Capt. Hansen; and took with him to New Zealand, Mr. and Mrs. Carlisle and child; and Mr. and Mrs. Gordon and child. The “Active” returned with 6000 feet of timber, and a quantity of flax. In May, 1819, Mr. Leigh of the Methodist Mission, made a temporary visit to New Zealand in the “Active;” then, or in August, Messrs Puckey, Rus-

sell and Boyle had also arrived in connection with the various phases of settlement work. They were followed on August 2nd, by Mr. F. Hall, Mr. and Mrs. Kemp, Mr. Samuel Butler and Rev. John and Mrs. Butler, together with the Rev. Samuel Marsden, who accompanied them. The "Active" had arrived in Sydney before they sailed in the "General Gates;" but Mr. Marsden would not wait; his reasons advanced in his letter 28/7/1819, to Rev. J. Pratt, seem curious. Surely, it would not have cost the £300 to lodge these few settlers until the "Active" was ready! (They had arrived in the "Baring" at the end of June) and his statement also, that the "Active" could not have afforded room for them, is confronted by the knowledge of the number taken to New Zealand by the "Active" in 1814.

The "Active" was probably well filled with cargo, and it was not advantageous to permit the new Superintendent of the New Zealand Mission to inspect its contents, and to note the lengths to which the Mission was conducting trading operations, so concisely put in Mr. Marsden's first letter to Ruatara, 1814. "You will send the 'Active' full of moca, potatoes, lines, mats, fish, nets and everything." With the arrival of Mr. Butler we take up the threads of his diurnal progress, and can follow, and bear with these pioneers of settlement, the trials inseparable from close proximity to the dawn of civilization in New Zealand.

BY HIS EXCELLENCY, LACHLAN MACQUARIE ESQUIRE
CAPTAIN, GENERAL, AND GOVERNOR IN CHIEF

in and over

HIS MAJESTY'S TERRITORY CALLED NEW SOUTH WALES AND
ITS DEPENDENCIES.

By virtue of the powers vested in me, I do hereby nominate constitute and assign you the Rev. John Butler a Justice to keep His Majesty's peace and for the preservation thereof and the quiet rule of Government of His Majesty's people within and throughout the British Settlements at New Zealand a dependency of the said Territory.

Given at Government House
Sydney, New South Wales,
this 24th day of July in the
year of our Lord 1819

(Signed) L. MACQUARIE.

Copy of the Rev. John Butler's Didimus Postattem.

The original sent to Sydney this day, Nov. 16th, 1840.



"Where every prospect pleases, and only man is vile."

There is a river in the range
I love to think about;
Perhaps the searching feet of change To steal the beauty of that brook
Have never found it out. And put it in a song.

Kendall, the Australian poet, was the grandson of Reverend Thos. Kendall, of New Zealand. He died at an early age.

CONSTITUTIONAL HISTORY OF NEW ZEALAND.

(Page 42).

On November 12th, 1814, Thos. Kendall was appointed as Justice of the Peace throughout New Zealand and its contiguous islands. Again, on July 19th, 1819, Macquarie commissioned a clergyman, named Butler, to keep the King's peace and help preserve "the quiet rule and government of His Majesty's people within and without the British Settlements at New Zealand," which were described in the commission as "a dependency of the said territory of New South Wales." This appointment, as well as Kendall's, was no idle one, for Butler apprehended, and sent to Sydney, persons accused of disturbing the peace, and as late as 1840, the New Zealand Company, relying on the virtue of this commission, despatched Butler to Port Nicholson to act as Magistrate in its first settlement.

PARRAMATTA,

July 14th, 1819.

Marsden to J. Pratt, C.M.S.

As the Rev. Mr. Butler will write to you, it will not be necessary for me to trouble you with any long statements. . . . Having obtained the Governor's permission, and knowing the "Active" (108 tons) was too small to carry the passengers and their stores, and being absent on her voyage (arrived from N.Z. on July 30th, with 5246 feet timber and 3 tons pork) I determined to take the first vessel I could, in the harbour, in order that the Revd. Butler, etc., might as soon as possible, arrive at their place of destination and begin their work. I therefore hired an American brig ("General Gates") 200 tons, who was in the cove, and the time fixed for our sailing is 25th inst.

The settlers for New Zealand would get no advantage in this colony, and heavy expense would have been incurred daily while they remained here, where everything is at such a price, and the sooner they begin their work, the longer time they will have to do it in. It is my intention to take over a few mechanics to enable them to put up the necessary buildings, church, houses, etc., and to form a regular government amongst them before I return. . . .

I hope now to introduce Mr. Butler to all the leading chiefs, to conciliate their esteem, and to fix the settlement on a firm foundation. I cannot doubt the suitableness of the instruments you have sent out; their wisdom on the voyage and prudence since their arrival, convince me that they are fully bent upon their work, and if they can only begin at the right end, we may hope for a successful issue of their labours.

Then again, on July 28th, 1819, from Sydney, Marsden to Pratt, London:

I am on the eve of embarking for New Zealand, and expect to be on board as soon as I have closed this note to you. The Revd. J. Butler and his associates are well and in good spirits. The "Active" is now off the Heads, and has sent her boat in, as she cannot get in herself, from the contrary winds. I am happy to say all the settlers are well at the Bay of Islands, and going on well. Twelve New Zealanders are come over now in the "Active." 16 will be left at Parramatta, two are learning to make bricks, one nail making, another in a blacksmith's shop, and the others will be employed in my absence, till the "Active" returns to New Zealand. . . . In order to lessen the expenses, and to get them upon the field of action as soon as possible, I took up the 'General Gates,' in which I took four head of horned cattle, and some sheep, the mechanics and their families. Messrs. Butler, Hall, and Kemp are in great spirits. The young men who arrived in the boat delighted them much. I hope all will be well.

(Copy of a Letter—Thos. Kendall to Samuel Marsden.)

Rev. and Dear Sir,

I am greatly surprised that you should treat me as an inventor of tales respecting your daughter, when I only was desirous to inform you of tales which were in circulation among the natives, and which ought certainly to be put a stop to. It was but justice to you and your children that you should be so far apprized as to apply a proper remedy. Those reports are far from being new. Tuatera (Ruatera) was the first man who spoke disrespectfully; all his friends, and even (Shungi) Hongi, were in the secret; Tooi and Tetadda were worse than all the rest. How could I discharge my duties to God, if I had not consulted with those who were best acquainted with you, on the most proper means to be adopted for telling you of these most vile assertions? I am satisfied I have had no ill wishes toward you in anything I may have said, and many others (if they would but be candid enough to acquaint) know just as much as me. We know nor assert anything improper of your children as facts, but were grieved to hear them evil spoken of.

I am,

Rev. and Dear Sir,

Your faithful servant,

(Signed) THOS. KENDALL.

("HOCKEN" COLLECTION.)

Marsden to Butler.

PARRAMATTA,

Jany. 12th, 1820.

My very Dear Sir,

I have the pleasure to inform you that we had a fine passage in the "Active" to Port Jackson, where I found all my family well, and daughters shortly after at the Lord's Table. I had suffered much anguish

of mind when at New Zealand at the very horrid idea which some entertained of my children, my spirits were more wounded than at anything I had met with in life. They devote their time to instruct the ignorant, and to guide the poor wanderer; no wicked insinuations will ever cause me to relinquish my labours for the good of the New Zealanders, and I bless God that He has honoured me with such a feeling, which I hope will attend me to the grave. Your son Samuel is very steady, and behaves well. I think his visit to Parramatta will be a real service to him. He has no companions to lead him wrong, and he sees none but the best characters this colony affords. I think you will find him more inclined to do all you wish when he returns to you. He is just treated as if he was my own son, and is under no painful restraint, and free from care, and will do well I have no doubt.

With respect to myself, I can say but little. As yet, I have not seen the Governor since my return, nor am likely to see him. How matters will end I cannot tell as yet, but I think I shall carry my point—our difference is now before the House of Commons. The whole state of the Colony will now come before the House. I think the Governor will not remain long in the Colony. Whether I shall return to England or not is yet uncertain, but I rather think I shall remain where I am. Several members of the House of Commons have warmly espoused my cause, and have pledged themselves to see justice done to my character. The Governor must be very angry. What will be done here, I cannot tell as yet; no doubt every attempt will be tried to do me all the injury possible. I have determined to maintain the contest to the end. The foundation on which I stand is truth, and I only have to maintain my ground and not be driven from my post by any attacks, and then I must conquer. I may have hard to fight. We are expecting arrivals from England every day, when I shall know more. I think it probable two King's ships will come out, and after they have landed their prisoners, will visit New Zealand. In short, if they do, I shall visit you again if I can obtain permission, and see how you are going on. I hope you will go on well. Always bear in mind the importance of the work in which you are engaged, and what an honour you enjoy. You cannot magnify your office too much, nor think too highly of your situation as an ambassador to the heathen. Much will depend upon your wisdom, patience and perseverance, and I hope you will possess all these virtues. You know well what a state the Mission was in when we first arrived; when I saw what those sent out to instruct the heathen were doing, my very heart was pained within me. I trembled for the consequences. Their sin appeared exceeding great to me, and I did think then, and have thought since, that if God intended to be merciful unto them, he would bring them into sore affliction. When Mrs. Gordon's father called upon me (who is a pious man), after my arrival at Parramatta, before he saw his daughter, I told him Mr. Gordon had neglected his duty, and I feared on that account he would have some affliction. The next news I had, Mrs. Gordon died in Sydney; none of them saw their conduct in the same light I did, they appeared to be stupid and insensible. Mr. King, I think, will sooner or later be convinced of his error. I hope he will continue now to do what is right, and not fall again into the snare of the devil. I do expect the Society will take very serious notice of his conduct.

(Oh, reader! pause. Do not gasp at the sentiments of the gentle Marsden; in the days of old, it was customary to enjoy the writhings of some poor heretic at the stake, while fire consumed the tortured body. A good description of a

refined flogging may be obtained from that inflicted upon a lad named Patrick Galvin, under Marsden's orders and supervision, detailed by Joseph Holt in his Memoirs. What sympathy had Marsden for poor Gordon? These men, or most of them, were selected by Marsden himself, and placed in an uncultivated locality in 1814, by him; yet not until August, 1819, did he visit them, and then but to chide and deride. Their sin, this, that they had not procured bumper cargoes for Mr. Marsden's brig, the "Active."

Butler! it will be your turn soon to fall into the snares of the devil, but his name is not Satan.)

The letter continues:—

It will give me the greatest gratification to find you all go on well, and that the work prospers in your hands. The field is open for your labour, and you must succeed in the end. I have had repeated conversations with the Commissioner respecting New Zealand, and hope Government will attend to it when present powers that be are removed. I shall embrace every opportunity to promote the interests of the country you live in, so that you may depend at all times upon my support while I remain in this Colony. I hope my difficulties will be less than what they have been in time. I have sent over Mr. James Shepherd to live with Te Morengha and his party. You will give him all the aid you can in building him a little house, as he is well acquainted with gardening, grafting trees, etc., etc., so that he will be very useful in all these respects. I will send him some assistance as soon as I can. Should the King's ships come, I will try to send the horses, etc.

You will be so good as give our kind respects to Mrs. Butler; she will be gratified to know that her son is well, and goes on well. I think he will now be weaned, and when he comes back again, she will not regret that he came with me, as he will be more likely to be a comfort to her, than if he had never been from her. I shall send the wheat, etc., etc., in the "Active."

I remain,

Dear Sir,

Yours affectionately,

SAML. MARSDEN.

To Rev. J. Butler.

Rev. S. Marsden to Rev. J. Pratt.

C.M.S.,

SYDNEY,

Jany. 14th, 1820.

Rev. and Dear Sir,

I first drop a line to say that I returned from New Zealand after four months. I left all the settlers well, and the Rev. J. Butler——.

Nothing can be more encouraging than the prospect at New Zealand. I visited many districts. All the natives are very anxious for instruction. Mr. Butler did not expect to find them so ready for all improvements. He was very much pleased with his situation, as far as respected the inhabitants——.

To Pratt.

PARRAMATTA,

Feby. 7th, 1820.

Rev. and Dear Sir,

I must now write to you about the "Active."

As the Revd. J. Butler has come out Superintendent of the Missionary Settlement, I wish now to be relieved of all responsibility relative to the "Active," from the 1st August, 1819, the period she returned from New Zealand. I have to request the Society to take the vessel into their own hands, from the above period, with all the profits and losses. I have had her valued; the report of her survey and valuation I have forwarded to you, for the information of the Society. I have judged it best, with the advice of Mr. Robert Campbell——to fit the "Active" out as a whaler. She can attend to all the concerns of the Settlement, and still procure oil for the benefit of the Society, towards lessening her expenses. There is nothing at New Zealand that will pay her expenses. The duty upon the timber, and the Port expenses of various kinds are so ruinous, that she ought not to come into this harbour more than once a year, if it can be avoided.

Mr. Butler is in New Zealand, and can forward the interest of the vessel; hitherto this has not been the case. Tho' the settlers were deriving every comfort from the vessel, yet they were totally unconcerned in general about her interest I had got all the supplies on board of her for the settlement, and also a number of natives who were returning home, when the "Dromedary" arrived; but, as the "Dromedary" is going to the Bay of Islands, I have taken out all supplies, and the natives also, and put them on board the King's ship.

I have some very fine youths with me now who are acquiring the English language very fast. I brought Mr. Butler's son back again with me to take charge of these boys, and to devote his time to their instruction. By the sons of chiefs living together in civil life and all paid equal attention to, they will form attachments that will destroy that jealousy which has kept their tribes in continual war——. If the "Active" succeeds, the expenses will gradually cease. Should the Society not approve of purchasing the "Active," I will thank you to have her insured for the amount she is valued at—£1500. If they should take her, they will take her for the valuation put upon her. I shall be obliged to draw upon you for about half her purchase money, and shall leave the "Active" as security for that sum, should she be returned to me again, or if she gets a cargo of oil, I will send the amount to repay the £750 which I now draw upon you for. Her outfit as a whaler will also have to be charged to my account, but not her expenses on her last voyage to New Zealand, from 1st August to 1st December,—as she was during that four months wholly in the service of the Mission.——. A very nice young man, whom I have long wished to employ in the Mission, truly pious, and his heart engaged in the work, is going over with me. His name is James Shepherd, a native of the colony. His father is a very pious man. I sent him once to visit New Zealand to see the natives, and he has been very desirous of devoting himself to the work of the Mission. He understands gardening, grafting of trees, etc. A man of this kind will be of infinite service.

I have, etc.

S. MARSDEN.

Rev. J. Pratt.

The indications are towards the acquisition of the "Active" being chiefly for trading purposes, rather than missionary work, and although the New Zealand settlers had been offered five per cent. of the profits by Marsden, their settlements were upon sites quite unsuitable for this purpose, nor had they the time at their disposal to procure the flax, pork and timber. The natives were interested in war, and the means of war, and currency per medium of fish-hooks, axes, etc., soon became but as "paper money," one native remarking, upon being paid with axes, "What shall I do with all these?"

The suggestion, "Mr. Butler is now in New Zealand, and can forward the interest of the vessel," is surely sufficient proof of the commercial aspect in Mr. Marsden's mind, but poor Butler had his hands full, in dealing with the necessities of the Mission. And with his face set against traffic in powder, balls and muskets, was absolutely restricted in purchasing power. Of this Mr. Marsden must have been well aware during that period 1814 to 1819, in which he owned the "Active," and within that period, the "Haweis." The Society's instructions given Butler are clear, see page 43, *Life and Work of Marsden*: viz.—

In December, 1815 (1819?) when the Rev. John Butler, their first clerical Missionary, entered on his labours in New Zealand, he and his companions were exhorted thus, "The Committee would observe that they wish, in all the missions of the Society, that the missionaries should give their time as much as possible, and wholly, if practicable, first to the acquisition of the native language, and then to the constant and faithful preaching to the natives Do not mistake civilization for conversion. Do not imagine when heathens are raised in intellect, in the knowledge of the arts, and outward decencies about their fellow countrymen, that they are Christians, and therefore rest content as if your proper work were accomplished."

It is interesting to see that he paid £1400 for the "Active," and now, after five years, has her insured for £1500, and asks the Society to take it over at that price.

Marsden to Pratt (Historical Records).

PARRAMATTA,

Feb. 7th, 1820.

By the "Surrey" I informed you of my intention to visit New Zealand with the Revd. John Butler and his colleagues, which I did. I

herewith forward you my journal for the information of the Society——.

Should you see a document published in the Sydney Gazette, relative to the human heads brought from New Zealand, you will not, I trust, give credit to such a statement. It appeared about six weeks ago. It came from the old quarter——.

Idem. Feby. 12th, 1820.

PARRAMATTA.

A letter, Marsden to Pratt, stating, inter alia, “It will require a positive order from the Committee that all the settlers’ wives assist in instructing the natives in everything they can, and their sons and daughters as they come of age——. I directed Mr. Kendall’s older son to be put into the carpenters’ gang, and his daughter into the school. I had forgot to mention that I had purchased a large grant of land from Shungi, and have sent you the deed. It is in a fine situation, rich land and well watered, convenient for the harbour.

S.M.





Rev. SAMUEL MARSDEN.



Mr. W. G. PUCKEY.

CHAPTER III.

DIARY OF J. G. BUTLER, 1819.

TUESDAY, 28th SEPTEMBER, 1819.—Mr. Marsden, Mr. Kendall, Mr. Puckey, and several natives with them, set out for Shukianga, a district about 30 miles distant from Rangihou, to see the natives, and explore the river at Shukianga, as it is thought there will be an excellent harbour for shipping at that place.

Early this morning, Mr. Wm. Hall, F. Hall, Kemp, King, S. Butler and myself, with the carpenter and three other Europeans, went to Kaddi Kaddi, our new settlement, to endeavour to get on with buildings, etc., etc., and also to begin breaking up land for cultivation. We arrived about 1 o'clock noon. There were many natives waiting our arrival, among whom were several chiefs; all of them seemed very glad at our return. We got our dinner, and then Mr. Wm. Hall and the other carpenters and several natives, under the direction of Wm. Hall, set to work, some to digging of sawpits, others to sawing, etc., etc. The remainder of our party, myself and eleven natives, began to clear ground for a garden, and also to break it up with our hoes. The natives wrought exceeding well, and by night we had a pretty good patch of ground cleared for our purpose. In the evening, after we had refreshed ourselves, we read the Holy Scriptures, and offered up our evening sacrifice of praise and thanksgiving to the God of all our mercies. There were many natives about the little house erected for a blacksmith's shop, which at present serves for a dwelling house and lodging house for all Europeans; they were very silent and attentive.

WEDNESDAY, 29th SEPTEMBER, 1819.—We all arose at daybreak, and with cheerful hearts we went to our labour. The natives we had employed the day before came very early, and were very anxious to be employed again. We set some of them to clear the fern root from the ground already broken up, and the others to break up a new piece. Liveliness sparkled in every eye, and joy seemed to vibrate in every heart. In

looking around, and beholding the land breaking up for cultivation, men sawing timber, and buildings erecting for habitations, I felt sensations new, in seeing the dawn of civilization breaking forth, and the glory of the Lord beginning to appear in this benighted land. We are obliged to feed as well as pay the natives we employ; we paid them with fish-hooks, and fed them with rice, potatoes and pork. There were several chiefs at the settlement all the day, who seemed highly delighted to see the works which were going on. In the evening, I made a present of a hoe to one of the chiefs named Tenana, to assist him in working his potato ground; he seemed to be very thankful. In general, there are many natives about us at morning and evening prayer; and they look on with great earnestness. This evening, when I was engaged at prayer, I heard one of them say to another, "Karrakea, Atua." (He is praying or speaking to his God.) I trust this was really the case, and that myself and brethren present were not only praying for ourselves, but also for their temporal and eternal happiness, beseeching the God of all grace to give them the hearing ear and the understanding heart; to cause the light of His Gospel to shine into their hearts, to give them the light of the knowledge of His glory in the person of Jesus Christ.

THURSDAY, 30th SEPTEMBER, 1819.—We have been very busy the whole of this day in putting into the ground a great variety of garden seed, and our natives are still going on breaking up. I have engaged seven natives to break up ground one month, for an axe and hoe each, and victuals, Mr. Hall has made a beginning to learn the natives of Kaddi Kaddi to saw; they seem to act very well.

Everything goes on as well as can be expected, and all wear a pleasing aspect. Here are plenty of children ready and waiting to be admitted into our school as soon as we can get one erected, and the means of feeding them. Several parents have been asking me when their children can be admitted, (whether it will be appopo—to-morrow, or attitida—the day after) even before we have a single plank sawn, or a log of timber to saw for its erection.

OCTOBER 1st, 1819, FRIDAY.—We this day finished putting in our garden seeds. The natives were very curious to know the names of the seed, and whether they were for Kikai (victuals) or not; one youth wanted to know if we were sowing honipu (sugar). We gave them a little seed of different kinds,

and directed them to sow them near their wharris (houses). Mr. Wm. Hall and the other carpenters are busily employed in building a small wooden house for our working natives to sleep in, as the nights at this season of the year are often very wet and cold. This evening, Waterou, the brother of Waidua, and the nephew of Shunghi, came to see us, and brought two baskets of kumeras as a present. In return, I made him a present of a hoe; he was very thankful, and returned. We have now about an acre of land broken up, besides our garden, which we mean to plant with Indian corn, and as much more as we can get ready while the seed time lasts. Cultivation will go on very slowly until we get the plow into the ground, which I hope will be next spring, as Mr. Marsden, on his return to Port Jackson will immediately send me six draught bullocks, and a man or two to go with them, if proper characters can be found. I have no doubt but that as soon as the first harvest is over, I shall be able to supply all our settlement with wheat, and procure food to supply two hundred children, at least.

SATURDAY, OCTOBER 2nd.—This morning we arose at 3 o'clock, and got our breakfast as soon as possible, and after prayer and thanksgiving to our Saviour Christ, we prepared to embark for Rangi Hoo. We had a pleasant passage the most part of the way, but when we came in sight of our settlement at Rangi Hoo, the wind came in strong from the sea, and the waves became so great we were obliged to take shelter behind some rocks, and there leave our punt and walk over the rocks and Rangi Hoo hill to our homes, a distance about a mile and a half; on our arrival, we found our families and friends well, to our great comfort and joy.

SUNDAY, OCTOBER 3rd, 1819.—Divine Service in Mr. Hall's house, morning and evening; administered the Holy Sacrament to Mrs. Butler, Mr. F. Hall, Mr. and Mrs. Wm. Hall, Mr. and Mrs. Kemp.

MONDAY, OCTOBER 4th, 1819.—This morning, the carpenters and agriculturists returned to Kaddi Kaddi. In the evening, we held a Committee, and made a report of our last month's proceedings.

TUESDAY, OCTOBER 5th, 1819.—Mr. Hall and myself went to Kaddi Kaddi; were glad to find all things going on well. In the afternoon, I planted about 100 young fruit trees. I have one European planting Indian corn. I hope we shall be able to put in five or six acres this spring.

WEDNESDAY MORNING, OCTOBER 6th, 1819.—This morning, I planted 85 trees, the remainder of what we brought from Port Jackson. I am exceedingly sorry that we have not English grass and clover seed of every kind, in order to procure food for cattle. Until these are obtained, there will be very little pasturage in New Zealand, as the whole of the country is over-run with fern. Mr. Wm. Hall and myself, in the afternoon, measured the ground on which our church is to be built. It is a very beautiful spot, situated on the top of a small eminence, with a salt water cove at the bottom of the hill, and a fine fresh water river on the other side, which falls into the cove over a rock about five feet high. Our church will be sixty feet long, by thirty-four feet wide; this, perhaps, will be sufficient for a few years, but as there are many people in the district, I hope and trust that, ere long, Kaddi Kaddi will require a church twice as large.

In the evening, I took my leave of our friends and returned to Rangi Hoo. I arrived at two o'clock, and found my family and friends all well. Mrs. Butler and Mrs. Hall had been a little alarmed by a chief from Taiami, named Motui, who came and demanded axes and hoes in a very daring manner, getting upon Mr. Hall's fence quite naked, and waving his pattua about, saying he would kill them and set fire to the house if he did not get them; they told him he must wait my return from Kaddi Kaddi. I was glad, therefore, that I arrived to afford them some little protection should any person come again to annoy them. After prayer we retired to rest without being any further troubled.

THURSDAY, OCTOBER 7th, 1819.—This morning, the chief renewed his application at daybreak; he was informed that I was at home, and that I would speak to him by and by. After prayer and breakfast, about 8 o'clock I went out at the gate among a crowd of natives, and shook hands with the chief, and told him I would speak to him in a few minutes, as I was going down on the beach to buy seven logs of timber, which were brought from Kawa Kawa. I purchased the timber of the natives from Kawa Kawa; but before I could pay them and get rid of this party, the Taiami chief was again upon Mr. Hall's fence naked, waving his spear and pattua in a most threatening manner. Another chief came to me and expressed his sorrow to see such conduct; several natives called upon him to come down, but he would not. I went to him as soon as possible, and said, "Emera (friend), keiore karridi, be no more

angry. Come hither, and I will give you an axe and a hoe." He came down immediately, and I shook hands with him, and said unto him, "You, Emera, are a chief, and, therefore, ought not to be angry; it is enough for kukeys and Taurekarekas (common people and slaves), to be angry, and that chiefs ought always to keep their temper." He then sat down and cried; I made him a present of two hoes and an axe, and he was well pleased, and promised in return, by and by, to give me a pig. I also made a present of an axe each to several others who came with him; they then immediately returned to their district.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY, 8th and 9th.—Nothing of importance occurred.

SUNDAY, 10th.—Divine Service in Mr. Hall's house, morning and evening.

MONDAY, 11th OCTOBER.—Very wet and windy; could not return to Kaddi. Mr. Kendall and Mr. Puckey returned this evening, leaving Mr. Marsden behind at Shourakki, a distance of about six miles, on account of the stormy night. He durst not venture farther; Mr. Kendall, Mr. Puckey and the natives had hard work to weather the bay, but through mercy they arrived safe.

TUESDAY, 12th OCTOBER, 1819.—This morning Mr. Marsden arrived at an early hour quite well, which gave me great comfort. Many natives came with our friends from Shokianga.

This morning I have been endeavouring to engage some natives as sawyers, as our carpenters are almost at a stand for want of sawn timber. Our native sawyers which Mr. Hall had hitherto employed, are at work at their potato ground, and Mr. Hall says they are very careless whether they work any more or not. I asked him the reason why, and he answered: "Because the payment (axes and hoes) was not such as they like; they have been accustomed to be paid with powder and muskets, and without these we shall never get sawing done to any amount." I told him I considered it a very bad practice, and that I would never consent to issue powder or muskets on any account whatever, either in the purchase of pork, or in the payment of work, and that I was sure I should not only justify my own conscience, but that the Society and the Christian world would also justify me, if it cost a thousand pounds more to

obtain the end. The issuing of such things may please the vicious inclination of a savage mind, but afford no comfort or relief to his real wants. We have two pair at work, and a third has promised to come to work in the morning; we have rafted twenty logs of timber this day for Kaddi Kaddi, to be sawn there.

We have named our new settlement Gloucester Town, in honour of our very dear friend, the Bishop of Gloucester.

WEDNESDAY, 13th, 1819.—This day we have been rafting timber, etc. King George came this afternoon to beg two axes, one for his brother, and one for a relation, but we were obliged to send him away without them, as our stock begins to run very short.

THURSDAY, 14th, 1819.—Motui, a Taiami chief came again with his usual insolence, demanding tokis. He also killed a pig in the yard, but at last went away without obtaining them.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY, 15th and 16th, 1819.—Tui's friends were at our settlement; we gave them some fish-hooks and jews-harps. Waidua and Keedar and friends were here; gave Waidua a hoe, and all their friends fish-hooks; all of them went away pretty well satisfied, Saturday evening.

SUNDAY, 17th OCTOBER, 1819.—Divine Service, Mr. Hall's, morning and evening.

MONDAY, 18th OCTOBER, 1819.—Mr. Hall and carpenters went to Kadi Kadi in afternoon; loaded the punt with timber; paid the natives with fish-hooks.

TUESDAY, 19th OCTOBER, 1819.—Mr. Marsden, Mr. Kendall, and Saml. Butler set off on a visit to Taiami, accompanied by several chiefs from that place. At noon, myself, Mr. Gordon, King, Carlisle and Hansen, with three natives, set off for Kadi Kadi with a load of timber for our buildings; the wind was very foul, and we had hard work to make any progress; we laboured until the going down of the sun, and then we drew to shore, on a sandy beach; our natives made a fire by rubbing two pieces of wood together; we then proceeded to make some tea in an iron pot we had with us, and to cook some pork; after our refreshment, being about eight o'clock in the evening, the stars shone very brilliant. I was led to contemplate the peculiarity of our situation: in the midst of a heathen country; among savages and cannibals; the cold

ground for our table and chair; the heavens for our covering; the surf roaring on the beach. I never in my life saw the blessings of civil life, and the value of the glorious Gospel as at this moment; and I am persuaded that these blessings cannot be estimated according to their real value by those who live in the full enjoyment of them. No, this can only be done by those who are placed in similar situations. Did the Christian world know in its full extent what barbarianism and heathenism are, they would leave no means untried to impart unto these poor, perishing souls those blessings which they so richly enjoy.

We had no Bible or hymn book with us, but recollection served for both: we first sang a hymn, then I made a few observations on the 16 and 17 verses of the 13th Chapter of St. Matthew's Gospel, and we concluded with prayer. Our congregation was small, being only five Europeans and three natives, but our Lord has promised to bless even two or three, when they meet together, and call upon His holy Name.

The wind had now ceased, and we returned to our punt, (it was now about nine o'clock) and proceeded on our way to Kadi Kadi; we laboured very hard on account of the tide, which ran very strong against us. After toiling all the night, we arrived at our settlement about 8 o'clock in the morning; the natives soon unloaded our timber, and we got breakfast in the meantime. After breakfast, I went to survey the cultivation and the adjoining land, which we intend to cultivate as soon as the land is bought, and we have the means of doing it. I had a chief with me to shew me the land, and he pointed out certain portions of land which I thought had belonged to Shunghe; he was very anxious to dispose of it. I told him we would buy that which was nearest to our settlement in order to grow food for the New Zealand children in the schools. We returned about two o'clock, and I felt very weary and tired; we then got our dinner and returned to Rangihoo with a fair wind, where we arrived about seven o'clock in the evening, and found all well.

THURSDAY, 21st OCTOBER.—The natives from Kawa Kawa brought fourteen logs of timber to sell, which we bought for axes, chisels, etc.

FRIDAY, 22nd OCTOBER, 1819.—This morning, the wind being fair for Kaddi Kaddi, Mr. King, Kemp, Puckey, myself, and seven natives, determined, if possible, to take up a raft of

timber, consisting of twenty logs which were lying in the bay; we set off as soon as we could get ready, but the wind and sea came on so strong that our timber broke asunder, and we lost ten logs before we could get over the bay; after much labour we arrived safe at Kadi Kadi in the evening; we found our friends well. We then got some refreshment, and, after prayer and thanksgiving, we immediately embarked for Rangihoo, and arrived safe at three o'clock in the morning.

SATURDAY, 23rd OCTOBER.—Mr. Wm. Hall and myself went to a wood about two miles distant, to see if we could find timber suitable for fencing our settlement: it will take 14,000 pales to go round the outer part of our settlement.

Mr. Marsden, Kendall, and Saml. returned from Taiami about twelve o'clock, night, all well.

SUNDAY, 24th OCTOBER, 1819.—Divine Service, morning and evening, in Mr. Hall's house.

MONDAY, 25th OCTOBER.—Nothing particular occurred.

TUESDAY, 26th OCTOBER.—Mr. Hall, Saml. Butler, and carpenters returned to Kedi Kedi. In the evening we had conference with Shunghe about the land at Kedee Kedee.

WEDNESDAY, 27th, 1819.—This morning all our sawyers ran off, and the Rangihoo people also, after a dead whale which came floating into the harbour. In the afternoon, Mr. Marsden, Mr. Kendall, myself, Mr. Kemp, Mr. King, and one of our carpenters went out to see it, and also to obtain some blubber, if possible; when we came to the place, we found it almost impossible to come near it for natives. Not less than from fifty to a hundred naked men were upon it, like so many devouring wolves. There were about twenty canoes, and about two hundred natives, men, women and children. There were many fires on the beach, and some were cooking and some eating, and others at work upon it; the stench of it was suffocating, and we saw one man who had been overcome by it. He looked like a corpse; several were crying and praying over him. A very strong breeze set in, and we were obliged to moor our punt and return over land. In the evening, we saw a sail coming into the harbour, which we hope is the "Active."

Rev. J. Butler to Rev. Josiah Pratt. (The original is in the "Hocken" Library).

BAY OF ISLANDS,

New Zealand,

Nov. 6th, 1819.

Rev. and Dear Sir,

I have the great pleasure in informing you that all our little party arrived in safety and good health at the Bay of Islands, on Thursday, ye 12th August, 1819.

I have been in New Zealand three months, and have endeavoured to obtain what information I can respecting the country and its inhabitants. I have made it my business, as far as I have been able, to visit all the inhabitants around the Bay of Islands, and have everywhere been received with the greatest kindness imaginable; and the natives are everywhere begging and praying for Europeans to come and live among them, and their solicitations are beyond anything you can conceive. The prospects are indeed glorious, and I am fully persuaded that New Zealand is ripe for all the instruction and improvement that a Christian world is able to bestow. The New Zealanders are a robust, athletic and noble race of men, of lively dispositions, amazing quick in perception, and, generally speaking, they are a kind and affectionate people. Many of them speak a great deal of broken English, and are very fond of our language. There is no obstacle in the way to prevent our progress in the glorious work of civilizing, and, by God's blessing, evangelising New Zealand, but the want of means and proper instruments. Many schools might be immediately erected, and thousands of children collected; and by the introduction of Dr. Bell system of education in the English language into our schools, New Zealand (according to all human foresight) would in (comparatively) a little time, become an English nation; and thereby possess the Holy Scriptures and a great variety of other useful and beneficial instruction in a translation already prepared to their hands.

The children are quick and acute. A few days ago, I collected some boys together on the beach, and began to teach them the alphabet, and they all repeated the letters as with one voice, and pronounced every letter as distinct as myself. At our new settlement at Kidee Kidee, we have measured the ground for a church sixty feet by thirty-four feet; also for a school, sixty feet by eighteen feet. Many parents have been with me to solicit the admission of their children into the school, even before a single plank is sawn for its erection. Agriculture is another grand consideration, and as agriculture is the wealth of every nation, there is no nation upon earth, perhaps, more favourable for the operations of agriculture than New Zealand, and certainly none that need it more. We cannot carry on our schools without the means of victualling the children, as their parents are too poor, for want of the means to cultivate their land to furnish them with food at the present time. Agriculture will enable us to provide the first necessities of life, and stimulate the exertions of the natives to industry, and raise them above want; and by furnishing them with constant employment, will tend greatly to their civilization and temporal comfort. I shall, therefore, as far as my means will supply me, turn a part of my attention to this grand public object. This cannot be done to any extent, without considerable expense, in a

land that does not possess in itself a single nail. But I trust the benevolence of a Christian world will not suffer a nation to perish for want of a temporal and spiritual knowledge, as far as they can contribute to their relief.

Upon the liberality throughout the British Empire we will depend, and leave the event to Him Whose is the silver and the gold.

The brig "Active" arrived at Bay of Islands on Thursday, 28th October. After her arrival, I went on board to see her, and found her a very strong and comfortable vessel, and in very good order, as far as my judgment goes.

She had been fourteen days from Port Jackson, and has brought us the remains of our stores, and what arrived from England after our departure; with eight heifers, which are now alive, and one bull, two others having died on the passage. The vessel is well adapted for the Mission, as far as safety and comfortable accommodation are required, Mr. Marsden informs me, he shall now make a tender of her to the Society, as he considers the Mission now settled upon a permanent footing, and those dangers and difficulties which were once apprehended, to exist no longer. He will also leave entirely to myself and colleagues to select such natives to visit Port Jackson in future as we may think proper, and under such regulations as may be deemed necessary from time to time to adopt for the furtherance of the general interests of the Mission. I beg leave to observe that there is nothing at present in New Zealand that will pay the expenses of the vessel; the duty on timber, and other expenses at Port Jackson, are so heavy a drawback upon the proceeds of what she carries.

With respect to other things relative to New Zealand, I beg leave to refer you to the general observation furnished by our dear friend, the Rev. Samuel Marsden. The importance of the situation which I hold, as a Minister of the Gospel, and as a steward of the Society to the poor heathen, it often fills my heart with fear and trembling, and I am led to say, who is sufficient for these things? To preach the glorious Gospel of the ever blessed God to these poor creatures, who are indeed sitting in darkness and the shadow of death, with all meekness, long suffering gentleness and forbearance, to endeavour by every means in my power to correct their various habits, to reclaim their wandering feet, and to guide them into the way of everlasting peace, to administer, as far as possible to their temporal, as well as to their spiritual comfort, appears to me, at least, a work of the greatest magnitude, and requires great prayer and watchfulness, courage and fortitude; and I must humbly pray that the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Xt will give His heavenly grace, and strengthen me with all might in my inward man: and give me strength of body as well as holiness of heart and life to perform the sacred task, and be found faithful to the Society, and to the perishing heathen around me, so that whenever I am called upon, I may be able to give up my accounts with joy. No one can tell his trials until he gets into the field of action, and it is impossible to say who will be able to stand until they are tried. I am fully aware that I shall have many difficulties to contend with, and many of them of such a nature as no human foresight can prevent. But, however, the work is the Lord's, and it must prosper, for the heathen shall be given to Xt for His inheritance, and the uttermost part of the earth for His possession, and I humbly trust that the barren deserts of New Zealand and the valleys

thereof (which are now covered with noxious weeds) will ere long stand so thick with corn that they may be said to laugh and sing, and the inhabitants thereof made to rejoice for the gladness of their hearts, because of the loving kindness of the Lord, and for His great mercy and goodness, which He will pour upon them. I conclude this epistle by praying that our gracious God may pour upon our Society and every member of the same, the continual dew of His blessing over all His labours.

Dear Sir, please to give my sincere love to your family, Rev. and Mrs. Bickersteth, Revd. Samuel Crowther and his family, Mr. and Mrs. Cooper, Mr. and Mrs. Broughton, Mr. Daniels, Mr. Sargeant, Mr. Scott, and all our dear friends. Say to Mr. Broughton I have not had time to collect him little things in New Zealand, but will do so as soon as possible.

Dear Sir,

I remain,

Your faithful and obedient servant,

JOHN BUTLER.

To the Rev. Josiah Pratt,
Church Missionary House,
Salisbury Square,
London.

Rev. J. Butler to Rev. J. Pratt. (Original in the "Hoeken" Collection).

BAY OF ISLANDS,

Nov. 8th, 1819.

Revd. and Dear Sir,

As it will be some time before we can possibly have a school built at our new settlement, I have sent my son back again to New South Wales, along with some of the principal chiefs' sons, by and with the advice of the Revd. Samuel Marsden, in order that he may, in the meantime, take charge of the Seminary at Parramatta.

From what I have seen of those who have been there, I am persuaded it is a matter of first importance always to have some of the chiefs' children at that place, as they will not only have an opportunity of seeing, but of being initiated in the customs and manners of civil life.

Those who have been at Parramatta any length of time do not appear like the same persons; when they return back their natural ferocity seems very much softened, their minds enlightened, and themselves more than ever attached to the white people, and especially to our missionaries.

They also relate to their own people all the things which they see and hear. This will have a great tendency to make favourable impressions on their minds, and of opening their eyes to see our real intention of coming among them, viz., to do them good, both in body and soul. Samuel, also, will have an opportunity of improving himself in the New Zealand language, while he is teaching the natives the

English in Dr. Bell's system. These are five fine, sharp boys as I ever saw, and I have no doubt they will make rapid progress. They also will be hostages for our security, and their tribes led to deal more kindly with us on their behalf, and it cannot fail of having the most salutary effect upon the minds of these young chiefs when the government is laid upon their shoulders.

When we are ready for opening the school at Kidee Kidee, Samuel can be recalled immediately for that purpose, if such a measure is deemed advisable. The "Active," I expect, will sail for Port Jackson this day. May God in His mercy give them a safe and speedy passage, and so bring them into the haven where they would be.

Dear Sir,

I remain, ever faithfully,

Your obedt. and humble sevt.,

JOHN BUTLER.

To the Rev. Josiah Pratt,
Church Missionary House.

THURSDAY, 28th OCTOBER, 1819.—We were very much gratified by finding our hopes of the "Active" realised. Captain Thompson arrived at our settlement in a boat about nine o'clock this morning, after a passage of fourteen days from N.S.W. The "Active" has brought eight heifers and a draught bull, and sundry things for the supply of the settlement.

In the afternoon, Mr Marsden and myself went in the boat with Captain Thompson to Parroa; the "Active" is a fine, sound brig, and exactly suited for the purpose she is engaged in.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY, 29th and 30th.—I remained at Rangī Hoo.

NOVEMBER 9th, 1819.—The brig "Active" returned to Port Jackson, having on board Revd. Samuel Marsden, Samuel Butler, Wm. Hall, Jr., Mr. Gordon and family, Mr. Carlisle and family, and two New Zealand chiefs, and five chiefs' sons. Fair wind.

THURSDAY, NOVEMBER 11th, 1819.—Mr. Wm. Hall and carpenter went to Kadee Kadee with a load of timber in the punt for the buildings.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—Remained at home.

SUNDAY, NOVEMBER 14th.—Preached from 5th St. Matthew, 15. This morning we were much alarmed by a report (which we found too true), that a man was nearly blown to

death by gunpowder at Rangi Hoo, which had taken fire by accident. He was driven several yards by the explosion. Two little children who were sitting near the spot were dreadfully burned; the man lingered until Monday evening, and then died. We afforded him every assistance in our power. The children and mothers we took to the house of Thos. Hansen, where we nourished them, and dressed them; since the accident Mrs. B. and I have attended them every day, and done all in our power for their recovery. We are in a bad state for salves and ointment; when I opened the medicine chests, I was astonished to find there were no salves or ointments. One of the children is since dead, and the other I do not expect to live. The one which is dead had its arms burned from the shoulder to its fingers' ends; its face, also, was so much burned that its countenance was destroyed, and when the head began to swell, it made a frightful appearance; the other child is so much burned about the head and face, and it is so difficult to keep anything on the eyes, nose, and lips, that it appears to me that there is no probability of recovery. I dressed both of them with Turner's Serate Blister Ointment, and hog's lard; these were the only things I had in my possession.

MONDAY, 15th NOVEMBER, 1819.—Went to Kedee Kedee to examine the corn, taking four logs of timber with us.

TUESDAY, 16th, 1819.—Went to the wood at Kedee Kedee to set on natives to cut posts and rails to make a stock yard. Set on George, a native, to make brick for buildings, and another native to help him. He learned his trade at Port Jackson; should he have good success in his undertaking, it will be a great thing for New Zealand.

WEDNESDAY, 17th.—Returned to Rangi Hoo in the evening; went to Paka Tee Tou to see some wheat we have there. The ship "Catherine," a whaler, arrived this day, and has brought several things for the settlers. Captain Grayham, commander. Gave to Capt. Grayham twenty-four boards for the use of his ship. Mr. Kemp made him an iron bolt, fourteen inches by two and a half.

THURSDAY, 18th, 1819.—Went to catch the cow and calf in the wood, which we brought with us from Port Jackson; we succeeded in getting them in the evening.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY, 19th and 20th.—Remained at Rangi Hoo. Saturday evening, Mr. Wm. Hall and Mr.

Kendall went on board the "Catherine," and remained all night, returned on Sunday morning with Captn. Grayham and several sailors; all of them attended Divine Service.

MONDAY, 22nd NOVEMBER, 1819.—Went on board the "Catherine" with Mr. Kendall, Mr. Wm. and Frs. Hall.

TUESDAY, 23rd NOVEMBER, 1819.—Went to Kedee Kedee to look after the buildings; from the reports we heard, we were afraid that our buildings were destroyed by a fight that had taken place between Shunghu and Tema Rangué, but we were glad to find that (comparatively) little damage had been done us; the natives had taken away our pigs, one sow and eight pigs, and another fine sow ready to farrow, and knocked down our pig-sties, and broken into the house intended for a blacksmith's shop, and taken away eight hoes, four spades, three axes, two saws, and several other things. But this we consider a trifle, well knowing that a savage, when exasperated, is capable of committing the most atrocious deeds.

WEDNESDAY AND THURSDAY, 24th and 25th NOV. —All our settlement went into the bush to see if we could catch some cattle, which had been running wild for some years past. We returned in the evening, very much fatigued, and without our cattle. Three men are now in the bush after them.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY, 26th and 27th.—We examined our wheat and other stores. On Friday the bull died, after having all the care imaginable.

SATURDAY.—Mr. Wm. Hall and others, killed a bull in the bush, and brought him home for food.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening, at Mr. Hall's.

MONDAY, 29th, 1819.—All hands set on to get timber and other things to Kedee Kedee. Carpenters went in W. boat. Mr. F. Hall and myself, five natives, Thos. Hansen, loaded our punt with sawn timber, and set out for Kedee Kedee about noon; the wind being against us, we laboured very hard, and made but little progress, altho' the tide was in our favour; at six o'clock in the evening we drew to shore on a sandy beach, as the tide had now turned, and we found it impossible to pull against wind and tide; we also wanted refreshment. We therefore made a fire and boiled some water in our iron pot, which we took with us for that purpose. After our refresh-

ment, we rested ourselves on the beach until midnight, when the tide turned in our favour; we then arose and addressed ourselves to our journey, and after much labour and toil, we arrived at Kedee Kedee at five o'clock on Tuesday morning, and found our friends well. We had also a canoe with us, manned by four natives, which towed four logs of timber. In the afternoon, Mr. Wm. Hall came with the whale-boat, natives for his crew, bringing six logs of timber; we got them all on shore in the evening.

WEDNESDAY, DECEMBER 1st, 1819.—We measured out a stock yard for our cattle to remain in at night, as soon as we have any at Kedee Kedee; this is indispensably necessary, as there are no mounds in New Zealand. In the afternoon, Shunghu and Tarriar, and all their fighting men, came from the Whymatte to see us, and also to see if we had sustained any other injury from Tema Ranghe tribe, to which they then stood opposed. I enquired into the cause of their late battle. Shunghu replied that his cookeys, or slaves, had taken some cockles from some tabood, or forbidden ground, belonging to Tema Ranghe, but unknown to him; I suppose the whole value was not more than four or five fish-hooks, and for which Tema Ranghe and Para Heka, and their people, came and took their potatoes and comeras, and declared war against Shunghu; a battle ensued, but Shunghu ordered his men to fight New Zealand fashion, that is, with spears and stones, and not with muskets and ball, altho' they had plenty of both. But, he said, his adversaries began with tomahawks and muskets, and he had two of his men killed by shot, before he began to fire; but he thought it was then high time to begin. They soon killed eight men, and wounded others, so that their enemies soon fled from the field; he had another man killed in the battle and himself and several of his men got slightly wounded. Tema Ranghe and his party have burned all Shunghu's war canoes at Kedee Kedee; he tells me he has but one canoe left, and that a very small one; he has sustained great injury, and his enemies are pillaging his potatoes every night, in the outskirts of his plantations; we expect there will be more fighting before matters are made up.

We bless and praise our gracious God for all His tender mercies toward us, in preserving us amidst innumerable perils; but, as we are perfectly neutral, we suppose, at least, ourselves, to be on equal good terms with both parties. I have been to Tema Ranghe's place since the battle has taken place, and saw part of our pigs which they had taken from us; he and his

people offered to return them, but then he said they should want some compensation, as they considered them as spoils taken in war; I therefore declined removing them.

Shunghu, and Tarriar, and Rewa, supped with us in the evening in our blacksmith's shop, which is our general dwelling and lodging house. After prayer and thanksgiving, they, with their men, encamped around our house without, and we retired to rest within, some in cots and hammocks, others on boards, which serve for our general table as well as our bedsteads. Rest is sweet to the weary man, and labour softens every bed. Silence and good order was kept during the night by the natives, and we arose in the morning refreshed and comforted.

THURSDAY, DECEMBER 2nd, 1819.—This morning, at breakfast time, Rewa, one of the chiefs, found that one of his cookeys had been stealing, or concerned in stealing, a pig, for which he tied him up to a post, and then took a cord about the size of a penny slip, and beat him for theft; this was done in a mild and gentle manner, as he scarcely left the mark of the cord upon his back, altho' he was naked. He expressed his anger at thieving in the most expressive manner; this youth not only confessed his guilt, but also being an accomplice in breaking open our house, and said our sawyers were all as bad as himself, and this (upon an investigation) we found to be the case; and, in order to excuse themselves, they said they had taken our things away and hidden them in the bush, in order to preserve them. This seemed a plausible story, but Tarriar did not believe them, neither did we believe them; Tarriar, therefore, flew into a great rage, and jumped, and ran about and threatened them very severely, saying he would not spare them if they were found out a second time; all our men seemed very frightened, and several of them wept very much. Tarriar said they should be banished from the settlement, but after my interceding for them, he permitted them to stop and go on with their work as usual; we hope this will have a general good effect. Mr. Wm. Hall said he never saw any of the chiefs take up this matter so warmly before. Almost the whole of our tools have been returned.

In the afternoon, we received fifteen logs of timber from Rangi Hoo.

FRIDAY, DECEMBER 3rd, 1819.—This morning, Mr. F. Hall and myself, Thos. Hansen and three natives, went into the wood to seek timber for posts and rails, and were very

successful. George, our New Zealander, and his men are very busy digging clay for bricks; he seems confident of success.

Tarrear has gone to Why Matti; Shunghu remains at Kaddi Kedee.

This evening, Cui Cui, a great chief, and his people came to Kedee Kedee to see Shunghu, and to render him any assistance that might be in his power.

SATURDAY, DECEMBER 4th, 1819.—This morning, a great number of natives, I should think three hundred at least, assembled around our blacksmith's shop; all their discourse seemed to be how they might carry on the war with advantage. After breakfast, we prepared to set off for Rangihoo; Shunghu set off with us in our boat, but his friends thought it was not safe to go alone with us to Rangihoo; they, therefore, manned a very large war canoe immediately, with about eighty warriors, and accompanied us down the harbour. When we had got about three miles, we met some of Shunghu's friends from Why Tanghi, bringing him a large canoe as a present, therefore he returned to Kedee Kedee, and his warriors and we came on to our settlement at Rangihoo, where we arrived at eleven o'clock, and found our families all well, thanks be to God for His mercy.

DECEMBER 5th, SUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning, at Mr. Wm. Hall's. Shunghu and Tarrier, with their warriors, came to our settlement to-day; all of them behaved in an exemplary manner. In the afternoon, Temorengha and Paraheka came to converse with Shunghu concerning the war, and, after a long conference, peace was established between them.

MONDAY, DECEMBER 6th, 1819.—All our Kedee Kedee natives set off this morning for their own place; the carpenters and myself set out for Kedee Kedee at noon.

We arrived at Kedee Kedee five o'clock p.m. The natives had a grand shaka (or dance) on our arrival. The carpenters began to repair the pig sties which had been broken down in the fight. I went to examine the various works we had begun, and gave some directions about the brick-yard, and returned to our little hut, where we all sat down, and got some refreshment. Afterwards, I called Shunghi, Tarrear, and the other chiefs, and began to speak to them of the evil of theft. They listened with great attention. I began by saying the great God of the Christians was very angry with them, and that

white people considered it a very bad thing, and that those who were known to do such things were severely punished. Shunghi, who had been to Port Jackson, told them what punishments he saw inflicted on thieves at that place. "I have seen them," continued he, "with irons on their legs, and tied to a post and flogged, and one man hanged for thieving." They all agreed that it was very good to punish thieves, and said they should be very glad if I would have a house built to confine them, and give them no victuals, and put irons on them, the same as at Port Jackson, or put an iron on the leg of him who should be found thieving, and let him go into the bush, and then everyone who saw him would say, "There goes a thief! and that then he would be so ashamed that he would cry himself to death." I replied that I could not do anything of the sort myself, but that, if I found any of them guilty of this crime, I would immediately inform them, and explain to them as far as I was able, the nature and extent of the offence.

After some further conversation on this subject, the chiefs enquired when I should return to Rangī Hoo. I answered, "Early in the morning." They said they would call their people together, men, women, and children, and charge them in the most solemn manner not to steal anything from us. I said that was very good, and I appointed five o'clock in the morning for assembling the people, as I wanted to get away early. We then wished them all good-night, and retired to rest. At daybreak, we heard the chiefs and their messengers shouting aloud and calling their people together, young and old, from the village. At six o'clock we went out, and found the largest party of men, women, and children, that I had seen since my arrival in New Zealand. Each chief separated his people to himself, and after they were arranged in order, and the subject known upon which they were assembled, the people being sat down, and a passage found through the midst of them, the chiefs, each one in his turn, rose up and gave his charge to the people, threatening the severest punishment on children as well as fathers, on women as well as slaves, if they were found guilty of this crime. The greatest silence prevailed the whole time. I afterwards expressed my satisfaction to the chiefs for what they had done, and gave them a thousand fish-hooks to distribute among the people, as a recompense for their coming together.

The people dispersed very quietly. After the people were gone away, James Boyle, Richard and myself, set off for Rangī Hoo. We killed two pigs for the blood, and departed for

Man-A-Wou-Ra. The cause of this journey was the want of salt, having none left in the settlement. Mr. F. Hall accompanied me from Rangi Hoo on this expedition; we had a very strong breeze, and arrived at the place of our destination in an hour and a half—distance, ten miles. We found our salt pans safe and ready for working, and a small rush house for Boyle's residence, while he remains at the place making salt. I gave one axe and four flat tokens for building it.

Mr. Hall and myself went to see the flax that was sown some time since. Tooi and Koro Koro, his brother, are gone to fight with the people at River Thames, and are not yet returned. The people are very anxious to know when they are likely to have any Europeans to live among them, and also to know particularly if I intended to have a house at Man a wou ra, as well as Kedee Kedee. I could not tell how to answer them, but, however, I told them that, according to Mr. Marsden's promise, some people would be sent to their place as soon as possible, but this did not seem to satisfy them.

It being now evening, we returned to the rush hut, and, after prayer and refreshment, we laid ourselves down on some bulrushes to rest. Next morning we arose at five o'clock, and after breakfast, set off for Par Roa to seek after some casks for the salt men's use; we had the good fortune to find them all safe at his former place.

We intended to have gone from thence to Rangi Hoo, but the wind blowing very hard, and directly in our teeth, we were obliged to return to Man a wou ra, where we arrived safe after three hours' very hard pulling. The natives are very fearful in a heavy sea. After dinner the wind abated, and we again set off for Rangi Hoo, where we arrived safe at nine o'clock in the evening.

THURSDAY, DECEMBER 9th, 1819.—Mr. F. Hall, Mr. and Mrs. Kemp, Mr. and Mrs. Butler, and Mr. King visited Kedee Kedee, in order to afford Mrs. Kemp and Mrs. Butler an opportunity of seeing our new settlement. Our store house, being nearly enclosed with weather boards, we intend to make it a general dwelling house for the present, and remove to Kedee Kedee at once, and so make shift, until we can better accommodate ourselves.

As Mrs. Kemp and Mrs. Butler were the first European women that had ever visited this place, and, as many of the natives had never seen a European woman before, (having heard the news), they ran together from all quarters, to grat-

ify their eyesight. We landed among a crowd of them. They thronged us very much in going from the waterside to our blacksmith's store. They shouted and danced for joy. After dinner, we took a walk to see the adjacent country, and to shew Mrs. Butler and Mrs. Kemp our plans of operations. The natives crowded about us, laughing, dancing, and singing. Where we went, they would go, in spite of any remonstrance. After a general survey, we returned to our little house, got some refreshment, and departed for Rangi Hoo, amidst the huzzas of a great number of natives. Mrs. Butler and Kemp were much pleased with the new settlement.

SATURDAY, 11th, 1819.—I was obliged to go to Te Ko Ranghu (four miles) to fetch our punt. Our carpenters thought proper to leave it there, because the wind was a little against them; but, as it was very much wanted, I was determined to go after it myself, and with the assistance of five natives, I brought it to Rangi Hoo in four hours.

SUNDAY, 12th, 1819.—Divine Service at Mr. Hall's, M. & E. Church. Mrs. King in the afternoon. In the night, Mr. Kendall's chimney took fire, and the settlement was thrown into great alarm; but, by the timely assistance of natives and the brethren, it was extinguished without much injury.

MONDAY, DECEMBER 13th, 1819.—All hands set to this morning to pull down Mr. Gordon's old house, and to take it to Kedee Kedee. This was completed in the course of the day, with the assistance of a party of natives sent by Shunghu. They behaved very well on this occasion. But we found the stuff so rotten that it would not pay for our labour and expense.

TUESDAY, 14th, 1819.—This day we rafted thirty logs of timber, sent away the large war canoe with a heavy cargo of boards, etc., etc., which also returned in the evening. In the morning, we had a very strong breeze blowing in shore. Our punt, which was heavily laden with boards and moored off about 100 yards from the shore, soon filled with water. We mustered all hands, and had a very hard job to get the water out of her, and to keep the boards and other timber from being floated away. The sea came rolling into her, and sometimes completely over her. We worked for two hours without any seeming hope of success; but the wind abated, and at length we gained our point. The punt leaks very much in her upper seams; but this is no wonder, since we had neither oakum, pitch, nor tar when we built her. A few barrels of each would be of great value to our settlement.

WEDNESDAY, 15th.—At five o'clock this morning, Messrs. Wm. and F. Hall, carpenters, and myself, set off with our punt for Kedee Kedee; we had also twelve logs of timber fastened to the stern. The Europeans had our whaleboat to tow ahead, and fourteen natives and myself on the punt with paddles. At noon we had only reached half way, the wind being against us. We stopped on an island to get some refreshment, but we unfortunately forgot to take provisions for our natives, and as they were very hungry, having had nothing to eat all day, they appeared a little angry, and sent a canoe to a small village over against us on the shore, to purchase some potatoes, but there were none to be had, and we were obliged to proceed. However, I promised them plenty of food as soon as we reached Kedee Kedee. The wind was still against us, and everyone began to shew much fatigue, but we had not gone far ere we saw the large canoe coming to our assistance; we placed it before our whaleboat, and then we rushed on in spite of wind or waves and arrived at Kedee Kedee between four and five o'clock. I immediately called the natives, and gave them ten buckets of potatoes and a large hog. Mr. Wm. Hall killed it for them.

In a few minutes, there were a number of fires lighted to dress their potatoes and pork, and, being very hungry, they had not patience to burn off the hair, according to their usual custom, but instantly cut it in pieces with their tomahawks, and gave every mess their portion. They all leaped for joy. How blessed would it be to behold them as anxious for the bread of everlasting life. This, I trust, will be the case in our blessed God's good time.

We then got some refreshments ourselves, and afterwards I went to our new brick ground and shewed our native brick-maker how to lay out his ground, as it is generally done in England. In the evening Mr. Hall and I returned to Rangi Hoo, and arrived safe at eleven o'clock.

THURSDAY, 16th DECEMBER, 1819.—As I had left orders for the punt and canoe to come down this morning, we were anxiously looking for them. About noon the canoe came, leaving the punt three miles behind, on account of the wind, which was blowing from the opposite point of yesterday. Mr. Wm. Hall and myself and twenty natives started in our whaleboat and brought her home, through a very rough sea. In the evening it was calm, and we sent away the canoe with thirty logs timber.

FRIDAY, 17th DECEMBER, 1819.—This morning we began to prepare to take our cattle on the punt; being nearly low water, we brought her broadside to, and begun to make a platform by throwing the sand against the side, and laying some boards on it, and then a little sand upon them. Our cattle being in the yard ready, we got them all on board pretty well, and also eighteen pigs which we bought in the morning. Mr. F. and Wm. Hall and natives went on this expedition, leaving me at home, having caught a severe cold.

SATURDAY, DECEMBER 18th, 1819.—This morning my cold a little better, blessed be God for His mercy.

The importunities of the natives from all the neighbouring districts for European articles, and people to live with them is almost inconceivable, and trying to the last degree. Also, the collecting materials for our settlers at Kedee Kedee, which is twenty-five miles, at least, from the timber district, is a great work in a land like New Zealand. The natives of the timber grounds have some prejudices against Shunghu, and I am afraid we shall have some difficulty of obtaining sufficient for our purpose. I am sometimes bowed down at the sight of what lies before me, and when by reason of weariness of body, my strength fails, yet I have to praise God for His exceeding great mercy toward me, in giving me a good share of bodily vigour and strength, so that I am enabled to endure much more fatigue than at first I thought myself capable of; and I earnestly pray to our gracious God thro' Jesus Christ for spiritual, as well as bodily strength, that thereby I may be enabled to perform (in some measure, at least) the work which He hath given me to do, viz., to preach to these Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ.

SUNDAY, 19th DECEMBER, 1819.—Divine Service at Mr. Hall's, morning and evening.

(COPY FROM THE "HÖCKEN" COLLECTION, DUNEDIN.)

Rev. J. Butler to Mr. Thos. Kendall.

Dec. 20th, 1819.

Dear Sir,

As several of our brethren and myself are about to depart for Kidee Kidee, all the stores and other things that are in the School Room will be taken away (and agreeable to my instructions from Mr. Marsden), I have to request that you will prepare the School-room as soon as possible for the reception of children, and commence teaching

immediately; and at the same time make a regular monthly demand on the Society's store (according to ration), for the maintenance of such children, as shall from time to time be admitted, and of such other necessities, as may be wanted for the effectual carrying on of the same; also to make a regular monthly return of the expenditure, and all other things relative to the School.

I am,

Dear Sir,

Your affectionate brother in Christ,

JOHN BUTLER.

To Mr. Thos. Kendall.

MONDAY, 20th, 1819.—We have been busy all this day in loading our goods for Kedee Kedee, and in the evening, Mrs. Butler, self, Mr. and Mrs. Kemp, Mr. F. Hall, three carpenters, and their wives and families, went on board the punt, and set off for Kedee Kedee; we got about one third of the way thither, and the tide turning, we were obliged to go on shore. The natives we had to assist us, soon kindled a fire, and we all sat around it, and got some tea and pork—Europeans on one side, and natives on the other. After our refreshment, we all joined in prayer, sang a hymn, and then laid ourselves down upon the ground to rest. It was a very fine night, and the stars shone very brilliant over our heads.

About two o'clock in the morning, ye tide turning in our favour, we went on board and addressed ourselves to our journey. In a short time we were met by two large canoes and a hundred natives at least; both of them immediately took us in tow; we now made rapid progress, and reached Kedee Kedee about six o'clock in the morning. We immediately got our goods unloaded, and then prayer and breakfast.

I gave the natives two hogs and ten buckets potatoes, which were soon eaten. Afterwards they became impatient for their payment. As they had now done a great deal of work, we distributed thirty English hatchets, about the same quantity of axes and hoes, a quantity of knives, fish-hooks, combs, plane irons, etc., etc.

In the afternoon we began to put our things in a little order; our storehouse, which is at present a general dwelling house, is in an unfinished state; we have ground for the floor, and our cooking, etc., etc., we are obliged to perform outside among the natives. But my great desire is to be on the spot where our future operations are to be carried on. Mr. and Mrs. Kemp live in the blacksmith's shop.

WEDNESDAY, THURSDAY AND FRIDAY.—All busily engaged in putting our stores and other things in place, and in marking out a fence to go round our premises to keep off the natives from ye doors as much as we can at present, as we have hundreds about us all day long, and from their natural curiosity, they throng the doors, so that we are scarcely able to get out or in. And from their noise, singing, talking, laughing, ochre, lice, and oil, and other filth, it is exceeding disagreeable, especially for women and children; indeed, it is impossible at present, for children to go out of doors.

DECEMBER 25th, CHRISTMAS DAY.—This morning I assembled all the chiefs of the district of Kedee Kedee, and informed them that I should expect them and all their people to attend Divine Service at eleven o'clock, and that I expected they would be very quiet and orderly. They said it was very good, and, at the time appointed, they and their people were all assembled. I had a table and chair placed, and Mr. and Mrs. Kemp, and carpenters and families on seats made of boards behind; the natives sat in a semi-circle on the ground. I placed our native brick-maker (named George), in a chair near me, to act as my interpreter (he speaks English remarkably well), and the chiefs next to him. I endeavoured to explain to George, in the plainest and easiest manner possible, the great object we had in view in coming among them. I began by saying our great object and desire was to do them good, and to make them happy, as far as we were able, in body, mind, and soul. I endeavoured to explain to them the meaning of Christmas Day, and on what account we kept it holy; and how that, a long while ago, the great God Who made us, and the sun, and moon, and stars, the earth and sea, and all things in them, and everything which they saw about them; how that He gave His only son to come down from Heaven (a place of great blessedness above the sun and stars) to make us happy; and that He was born on Christmas Day; and that the Book, which I held in my hand, contained the words which He spake when upon earth; and that it had been written for our instruction, to inform us what we must do to be happy; and that we came from a very far country to teach them and their children the words of this Book. Moreover, I continued to say unto them that the great God and our Saviour were very angry with wicked and cruel people, but that He loves those who are gentle and kind, and did good things. I further said that I hoped they would better understand me by and by, and that I should better understand their language, and then I should be more able to explain these things unto them.

They were remarkably silent the whole time, and appeared much pleased.

After morning prayer, I preached from ye Second Chapter, Gospel of St. Luke, and 11th verse: "Unto you this day is born a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord."

After service I gave the people two pigs and five buckets potatoes. Shunghu, Tarrar, and several other chiefs dined with me. In the course of the afternoon they quietly dispersed. Mr. Kemp's place, being the largest, in the evening we had Divine Service there, and I administered the Holy Sacrament.

SUNDAY, 26th DECEMBER, 1819. — Divine Service, morning and evening, at Mr. Kemp's, as the day was unfavourable to outdoor service. Many natives crowded about the door, which we kept open, for them to see and hear.

MONDAY, DECEMBER 27th.—Mr. Kemp, myself, three carpenters, and ten natives, set off for Rangihoo to assist in getting up the remainder of the stores. Tarriar and the other chiefs followed us with the war canoe. We began to load immediately, but the Ranghu Hoo and Wangha Roa natives who were there, behaved very rough indeed. They pretended to lend us a little assistance, but their true intention was to steal; therefore, they threw down our boxes and broke a great quantity of window glass; and endeavoured to break the casks, and to get out the axes and hoes. They also threw the boxes into the punt with such force and vengeance, that I thought I must have had some of my limbs broken, as I was endeavouring to save and load them.

In a short time, however, the Kedee Kedee natives appeared in sight with their war canoe, and they immediately sat down, and as soon as the Kedee Kedee natives landed, they immediately dispersed, some one way and some another, and we finished loading our punt, and then we loaded their canoes, which set off immediately, and we had no further molestation; but as the tide was ebbing, and we had to wait for some little things, we unfortunately got aground, and it hindered us several hours, and it was not until eleven o'clock at night that we got her off; and then we made all speed. We rowed until four o'clock in ye morning, and then the tide turned against us, and we were obliged to draw to shore. We got some refreshment, and then laid ourselves down to rest until the tide turned, and then we arose and proceeded; we had not gone far ere we were met by the war canoe coming to our

assistance. We reached Kedee Kedee about two o'clock, and after dinner we got our things unloaded and housed, as far as possible.

WEDNESDAY, 29th, 1819.—This day I have bought one hundred and fifty buckets of potatoes of the natives; they are very tedious, and if there is the least flaw in any article of barter, they will not receive it.

30th DECEMBER, 1819.—This morning I engaged ten natives to take the punt to Ranghi Hoo for the iron and empty casks, etc., etc. Mr. Hall and Thos. Hansen were ready at Ranghi Hoo to assist them.

FRIDAY, 31st.—Employed in buying potatoes, and in the storehouse.

SATURDAY, JANUARY 1st, 1820.—Mr. Wm. Hall arrived with the remainder of the stores, etc., etc.; we were busily employed the most part of the day in unloading and placing them. In the evening I bought seventy-seven buckets of potatoes.

SUNDAY, 2nd JANUARY, 1820.—Divine Service, Mr. Kemp's, M. & E. Baptized Mr. Bean's child—George Thos. Bean, born at Ranghi Hoo, in New Zealand, October 21st, 1819.

MONDAY AND TUESDAY, 3rd and 4th.—Employed in assisting to make the fence round the buildings. I am not, I must confess, a very good carpenter, but I can drive a nail, and in many other ways assist. I have also bought a great quantity of potatoes. We have continually a large party of natives about us, either to beg something, or to sell their property. They have plenty of ochre, oil and lice upon them when they come to barter, of all which I get a pretty good share.

THURSDAY, JANUARY 6th, 1820.—This morning I set off for Ranghi Hoo (with one European and five natives for my crew) with some things for the use of that settlement, and from thence to Man A Wou Ra, with blood and provisions for James Boyle, our saltmaker. We had a strong breeze across the bay to Man A Wou Ra, and reached that place at seven o'clock in the evening, and found Boyle in good health. But he (Boyle) being alone, and so far from the settlement, the natives are very rough with him, and have robbed him several times, and have frequently taken half their potatoes away after being paid for them. I told them I did not like to hear of such wickedness, and that, except they were more kind in future to James Boyle, they must not expect any Europeans to

come to live among them. After some further conversation on this subject, I gave them a few fish-hooks, and told them that if they were kind and friendly, that by and by, I had no doubt that a settlement would be formed at their place. However, they were not satisfied with this; they said they had been promised so long, they were tired of waiting.

After prayer and some refreshment, I laid down my mat for my bed, and a small bag of biscuit for my pillow, and I slept very soundly amongst them the whole night. In the morning we rose early; after prayer and breakfast we began to get our salt and other things into the boat; there were many natives about us, and they grumbled very much, saying, "If you take away the salt to Kedee Kedee, you ought to pay us for the salt water," etc., etc. But this spirit and conduct arises from their not having any Europeans to dwell with them. We left Boyle about nine o'clock, and arrived at Kedee Kedee about two in the afternoon.

SATURDAY, 8th JANUARY, 1820.—Bought in the evening of yesterday, and to-day, one hundred and forty-three buckets of potatoes. We have also been into the country to-day with Rewa, a chief, to examine some damage which our cattle had done to his potatoes; when I saw it, I paid him the damage, and then all was well.

SUNDAY, 9th JANUARY, 1820.—Divine Service, M. & E., at Mr. Kemp's. Messrs. Kendall, King, Hansen and children attended from Ranghi Hoo.

MONDAY, 10th JANUARY, 1820.—This morning have been to several places with our native brickmaker to seek out clay proper for the bricks, as that which we tried first does not answer. I believe we have at last found good clay for this purpose, and therefore hope to succeed in our brickmaking. Our carpenters are building a shed for potatoes, as our store-house loft is quite full. Mr. F. Hall has been lame for some time (by running a nail into his foot), which has deprived me of his valuable services; but, through mercy, he is much better.

Shunghi's feet are very badly chapped and sore; he came and begged hard for a pair of shoes, and I gave him a new pair. I think he should be clothed, as he is our principal chief.

TUESDAY, 11th, 1820.—I have now had Tarrear's brother at our place a fortnight, sick; but he is now getting better, and will go away in a day or two. I have had four others on

the sick list for nine days, and they also are much better. Mrs. Butler cooks rice, tea, and other nourishing things for them; and thus we endeavour, by kindness and sympathy, to convince them of our real regard for their comfort and welfare.

WEDNESDAY AND THURSDAY, 12th and 13th.—These two days I have been working at the clay pit, in order to show the natives how to temper it. I have engaged three strong lads and one man to assist George in this important work, and here (through George's instrumentality), I was enabled to speak to them about their eternal interests, and to point out to them that it was their everlasting happiness which we had principally in view, by teaching them the knowledge of our good God; but that it was necessary for them to know the ways of English men; how they live as neighbours and friends and Christians; how they plough, and sow, and reap, and mow, and plant, and build; how they wash, and keep themselves clean; all which tends to make them comfortable and happy in this life, and, by the instruction of God's holy word, to be happy for ever after death.

FRIDAY, 14th.—This day, the ship "Martha," Capt. Apsey, came into the bay for a supply of wood, water, pork, etc.

SATURDAY, 15th.—Our carpenters have been busy in fencing, and building pig-sties this week.

SUNDAY, JANUARY 16th, 1820.—Divine Service at Mr. Kemp's, M. & E.

This week I set on four fresh hands to break up land for wheat. We have thirty natives regularly employed. Every native gets ten pounds of potatoes per day, and one pound of pork at least, and very often two pounds.

SUNDAY, 23rd JANUARY, 1820.—Preached at Ranghi Hoo; administered the Holy Sacrament. Capt. Grayham, ship "Catherine," the chief mate of the ship "Martha," and crews attended both morning and afternoon services.

In the course of the last week, James Boyle has been robbed of all of his property, and also of the Society's. It was first said that Wyecacaddi Joe and his people had done this. Boyle, at the time, was on board the ship "Catherine." Wyecacaddi Joe had been found thieving something from the "Catherine," for which he got a sound beating with the end of a rope. I was told he jumped overboard to escape, and then

he and his people went and robbed Boyle for the (hutu) payment. They broke open his box, and took everything out of it, and also his bedding, and every other utensil was then taken away. I think it was very fortunate he was on shipboard, or it is probable they would have done him some serious injury in their rage and fury. Kora Korra, Tui's brother, and even Tui himself, are not altogether innocent in this business. I have been satisfactorily informed that they have, at this time, part of the property in their possession. I have engaged to make the poor man's property good on the Society's account.

Mr. King has this day complained to me of his ration, and states that for several days together, and at sundry times, they have not had meat, or at least such as they could eat; but, however, he at all times received the same, and as much in proportion as myself. Moreover, his statement appears strange and untrue, since he sent on board the "Martha" a large quantity of pork, lard, and other things, and for which he received a barrel of porter, spirits, and other things, besides 25lbs. powder. Is this right?

Mr. Kendall also received from Capt. Apsey 125 wt. of gunpowder for himself, and a very fine fowling piece, to purchase things for him (the Captain). He also received eight blunderbuses, and other things of a like nature. This I consider as foreign to the Society's object, and what ought not to be done. If we are driven to the distressing necessity of disposing of such articles for the support of the settlement, yet we have no reason to employ our time and vend these articles for others.

Mr. Kendall and Mr. Hall are still at variance; Mr. K. enquired of me if Mr. Hall was going to Kedee Kedee; I asked him his motive for enquiring; and he said, if Mr. Hall remained at Rangihoo, he would not, but would go to Kedee Kedee; and, if Mr. Hall went to Kedee Kedee, then he would remain at Rangihoo, and that he would not any more live at the same place where Mr. Hall lived. I am truly sorry to see such bickering and strife. The spirit of P.T., and running after shipping for advantage has been the means of kindling the fire, and is still the fuel that feeds it; and the settlement will not be in peace until that is entirely done away; but in this business I believe Mr. Kendall certainly is not a whit behind, say first.

JANUARY 24th.—Held a committee at Ranghi Hoo in the morning, and returned to Kedee Kedee in afternoon.

TUESDAY.—Sent Mr. Wm. Hall, James Boyle, and ten natives to fetch away the salt pans from Manawoura, as it was not safe for Boyle to stop any longer at that place.

26th and 27th.—Buying potatoes; looking after our native farmers, brickmakers, etc.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY, 28th and 29th.—Employed in building a chimney for Mrs. Butler to cook in; but, as we have no bricklayer, I was obliged to take the trowel myself, and with Richard Russell's assistance, I completed it in two days, at least sufficient for our present purpose. By and by, I hope we shall get a better. Our carpenters are building out-houses, etc., and places to cook in.

JANUARY 30th, 1820.—Divine Service at Mr. Kemp's, M. & E.

SATURDAY, FEBRUARY 5th, 1820.—The whole of this week we have been busy burning brick, farming, etc., etc. We have eight thousand bricks burned, but they are not so good as we could wish, as the clay was new and not very well tempered. We shall have, no doubt, very good bricks, by and by.

The cow we brought with us from Port Jackson brought forth a male calf yesterday. This we consider a great blessing, as we had no male.

SUNDAY, FEBRUARY 6th, 1820.—Divine Service at Mr. Kemp's, M. & E.; administered the Holy Sacrament. Puckey, one of the carpenters, has become a regular attendant at the Lord's Table, and conducts himself, at present, with great propriety. I have had some conversation with him, and he appears very humble, and declares his earnest desire to spend the remainder of his days in the sacred cause of Christ.

MONDAY AND TUESDAY, 7th and 8th.—Attending my studies, conversing with natives, etc., etc. Our native brick-maker is gone on a visit to see his friends, ten miles distant. They were at the Kedee Kedee some little time since, and I made them a small present.

WEDNESDAY, 9th, 1820.—This day we had the misfortune to lose one of our heifers by dysentery, and also our valuable ram, by native dogs. I have an excellent native lad as stock keeper. It was not his fault respecting the ram. The dogs came on it in the bush unawares, and killed it.

Mrs. Butler has four natives to cook for daily, besides our own family: "and all our native sawyers, farmers, brick-makers, wood cutters, etc., are served daily from our place, as well as all pigs killed and salted, for the use of the settlement, and as Mrs. Butler has a young child, and no female (except a native girl) to assist her, to say the least, she is a complete slave to the concern. I am, myself, also compelled to buy almost all things that come to the settlement, as some plead incapability, and others that it is not their duty.

However, Richard Russell, who was engaged on the Society's account when Mr. Marsden was here, proves at present a very faithful servant. He kills the pigs, serves the natives, and renders himself serviceable in every way he is able. Were it not for him, I should be completely set fast in the Commissariat department, Brother Hall having to attend to the writing and serving of rations to Europeans on Saturdays.

THURSDAY, 10th, 1820.—This day we have been visited by Captain Spence, of the ship "Echo," and Mr. Kendall. They dined with us, and returned in the afternoon. Mr. Kendall had remained on board the preceding night. I understand he left England on 10th October, and arrived at Bay of Islands, New Zealand, February 8th, 1820.

This makes the fifth ship that has been into the Bay in six months (and two of them twice, say "Catherine" and Martha), for provisions, wood and water, and I understand from Captain Spence there are many more, eleven ships coming to New Zealand. This will make provisions very dear. The Bay of Islands is become very thin of pork (and no wonder), as every ship takes away all she can get, and the natives pay no attention to breeding their pigs; therefore, as every ship issues scarcely any thing but muskets and powder, they, of course, get most of the pork and potatoes. This will eventually so drain the Society's resources, and so under-rate their articles of barter, as greatly to impede, if not altogether stop, their plans and operations, and reduce the settlement to great distress; unless we are furnished with cattle, and seed, and other means necessary for carrying on cultivation to a large extent, in order to have means for every purpose within ourselves. I was very much grieved to find that Mr. Kendall, on his departure, persuaded the natives of our Kedee Kedee district to send their pigs on board the ship "Echo;" at first, I did not believe the report, but Mr. Wm. Hall informed me that Shunghee had told him it was true, and that Mr. Kendall asked

him if he had any pigs, and informing him that there were excellent muskets on board the ship. After tea, I went with Mr. Hall round the village to look at some pigs, and then I found the news that I had heard was too true; and, as we are altogether dependent on the natives for a supply of this article (and pigs are scarce at this time), it is like taking the bread out of our mouths. Such conduct is disgraceful to any servant of the Society. But gifts blind the heart.

FRIDAY, FEBRUARY 11th, 1820. — Bought twelve pigs and thirty buckets potatoes.

SATURDAY, 12th FEBRUARY, 1820.—I have this day been obliged to give a larger quantity of trade for the pigs than I should otherwise have done, had it not been for the conduct of Mr. Kendall in persuading the natives to take their pork on board ship. They all threw his words in my teeth, saying there was better payment on board ye ship "Echo." I remonstrated with them, and asked if the captains of ships would supply them with tea and other comforting things when they were ill, or otherwise in distress. They all seemed to feel the weight of these arguments, or I should not have got any of them. I also bought twenty-four buckets of potatoes from George and his friends, who returned this day, and his friends with him. I was obliged to send away Mr. Wm. Hall and carpenters by a secret expedition to fetch a musket from on board ship, in order to pay for the same.

SUNDAY, 13th, 1820. — Divine Service, Mr. Kemp's, M. & E.

MONDAY, 14th, 1820.—This morning I called all our settlement together at Kedee Kedee, and with them proceeded to Ranghu Hoo, in order to investigate the charges against Mr. Kendall in persuading the natives to take their pigs on board ship. About half way we were met by the ship's boat, having on board Mr. Wm. Hall and Thos. Hansen. Mr. Kendall had sent a letter with them to Mr. F. Hall, wherein he states that he was sorry for what he had said to Shunghee. They returned with us to Ranghi Hoo. When we arrived at Ranghi Hoo, Mr. Kendall and Captain Spence were on the beach; I told Mr. Kendall I was come down to hold a special committee as soon as convenient to all friends. It was now twelve o'clock, and we appointed two for business.

I took the carpenters with me in order to give them an opportunity of hearing the rules read, and everything fairly brought to the test. Because, under the specious pretence

that the missionaries were trading secretly, they also were determined to do likewise, and already had agreed with the Captain to send pigs on board the ship. I had enquired into this business on the Saturday preceding, and received for answer that I ought to look at the missionaries who set the example; and that whatever any one of them did by way of private trade, it was but right that they should have the same privilege, and further, that they had no notion of missionaries spending and idling their time on board every ship that came into the Bay, procuring supplies for themselves, and receiving their comforts as a recompense, while they were hard at work. I answered, if this was the case with any of the Society's missionaries, yet this would not justify their breach of the Society's rules. Neither would I allow them to dispose of Indian corn, hogs, pork, or potatoes, or any other article which tended to lessen the Society's supplies for carrying on the great object of ye Mission.

At two o'clock we assembled in the school-room at Mr. Kendall's, but Mr. Kendall refused to sit on the committee while any person except the missionaries was in the room. Everyone was then ordered to withdraw.

We began business in the usual way: by prayer. I then told Mr. Kendall the charges preferred against him. He immediately flew into a most violent rage, and stamped and stormed about the school-room for half an hour; he would not be called to account for anything he did, neither would he have anything more to do with the committee. However, after all, he confessed that he told the natives there were excellent muskets on board the ship; but he further stated that he said nothing until he heard they had determined to take them. I answered: "If that was the case, there was no need of your persuasion." But the real truth is, he used all the influence he had to get them for Captain Spence. As a further proof, he had fifteen pigs in his own yard for the ship at this time; and part of them were fetched away while the committee was sitting. After this, I told Mr. King that I had been satisfactorily informed that he also had sent pork on board the ship "Martha." He also flew into a great passion, and said if he had, it was to remunerate him for some trade he had bought out of his own pocket. He further said that I had no right to come there to call them to account; and then he took his hat and ran away. After this I sent for the carpenters and husbandmen, but Mr. Kendall for some time would not admit them into the school. At length he was prevailed upon, and

they were let in. I then read the articles unto them, and put the question unto the committee whether, in their opinion, the rules of the Society were not as binding upon the carpenters and others as well as missionaries. Mr. Kendall contended they were not, and that they might trade if they were so minded, and that I had no right to stop them. I told the secretary, if that was Mr. Kendall's opinion, to write it down, but this he would not agree to. He said altho' it was his private opinion, yet he wished to give his voice against it.

After this business was ended, the subject of increasing the ration next came before the committee. I have had many complaints from almost all parties about ration. After some conversation on this business, it was unanimously agreed that every man should receive 12lbs. per week, but not increase the ration to women and children.

The committee closed, and we returned to Ranghi Hoo. Kedee Kedee in the evening.

TUESDAY.—Buying potatoes and pigs.

About two o'clock Wednesday morning, while asleep, I was taken with great pain in my stomach and bowels. It caused a violent convulsion, and my inside seemed convoluted. In a little time I was taken with a violent retching and purging, which I think, by the blessing of God, was the means of carrying it off. About ten o'clock I began to get much better.

About two o'clock I received a letter from Mr. Kendall addressed to me and all the Mission settlers. I think it highly proper, and have therefore sent it with my journal to the Society. It is full of fallacy and deceit, and, if regarded, would have a baleful effect.

Mr. Kendall begins by declaring his fixed determination to follow, and abide by, the rules of the Society. But how, let me ask, does his conduct agree with his statement? when, instead of devoting his labours, gifts and abilities in the Society's cause, he is running after, and spending his time on board every ship that comes into the harbour, scudding about with them from place to place, and making his own house a common rendezvous. How does it agree with the sixth article? When, if he does not actually purchase hogs, potatoes, etc., he is still the agent by which they are obtained. Does he serve captains for naught? O, no, but here I stop. How does it agree with the other rules, when he despises all order, and will only do what he pleases? Moreover, he declared publicly, that if Mr.

Pratt or Mr. Marsden resided in New Zealand, he would not be called to account by them. He wishes to promote harmony, but he is the principal jarring string. He wishes every one to prove his own work; it would be well for him if he did this; he would then (if he had any conscience), be ashamed of his negligence. We have no school at Ranghu Hoo, altho' he has nothing else to do but attend one. We have plenty of food for a small school; and, if not deprived of our supplies by shipping, might soon have a large one. Mr. Kendall, as yet, has not paid any attention to the letter I wrote to him on the 20th December last upon school business (a copy of which you will receive with these papers). He charges me with assuming exclusive authority over missionaries. How grossly false is this accusation, as may be seen by my calling all the missionaries and every other servant of the Society together to talk over this business; to bring everything before a committee, and, if possible, to pull up this noxious plant from the bottom of its roots, that no vestige of it might appear hereafter for ever. Mr. Kendall received one musket from on board "Echo," Mr. King two ditto, six axes, and powder, hat, etc.

THURSDAY, 17th, 1820.—Through mercy, I seem quite recovered, but the disorder has left me very weak.

Our carpenters have this day begun a regular dwelling house for Mr. F. Hall and Mr. Kemp.

Our friend, Tarrier, and part of his tribe, have been to visit us to-day. He wanted an axe, but we have not one in the settlement; I therefore made him a present of two chisels.

FRIDAY, 18th, 1820.—Burning and clearing the fern from summit of the hill at settlement. Buying tie-up wood for fencing and setting boundaries in order to its being put up.

SATURDAY, 19th FEBRUARY, 1820.—Have this morning set on seven natives to make a pool for the convenience and supply of water for the houses and school that may hereafter be erected upon the hill.

Some part of our Indian corn looks remarkably well, being more than seven feet high.

Our timber is almost gone, and Mr. Wm. Hall is of opinion there will be a great difficulty in procuring a supply of this article for Kedee Kedee, as Kawa Kawa is thirty miles from this place, and the natives of Kawa Kawa are very saucy, and full of trade; and they will not look at us, except we have a

new musket in our hands. Mr. Hall is of opinion we shall never get a supply of timber until we have a team and timber carriage to fetch our timber from the Society's wood.

We have to praise God with unfeigned thankfulness for a long succession of fine, dry weather; since our arrival in New Zealand this has been a great blessing, as we have been very much exposed; and moreover, we have thereby been enabled to make a greater progress in building places to dwell in.

FEBRUARY 20th, 1820.—Divine Service in my own place, M. & E. Mr. F. Hall poorly, could not attend.

MONDAY, 21st, 1820.—Assisting and directing the natives at the pool. Afternoon, study.

TUESDAY, 22nd.—Buying potatoes, pigs, etc., etc. Afternoon, study. The remaining part of the week employed in the general business of the Mission.

COPY OF A LETTER IN THE "HOCKEN" COLLECTION,
DUNEDIN.

Rev. J. Butler to Mr. Thos. Kendall.

KIDEE KIDEE,
Feb. 24th, 1820.

Dear Sir,

I think your journey to England is very ill-timed on many accounts. Several of us are just arrived in the country, and our settlement is in its very infancy, and we, of course, can have no knowledge of the language, and, therefore, require every assistance. Moreover, there is no object can justify you, in leaving your family unprotected in a heathen land. I should have thought you have suffered enough in your family heretofore to prevent you ever leaving them.

By taking away Shunghee, you take from us all our protection; the natives are exceeding rude now, but how much more after his departure. I greatly question whether we shall be able to live among them when he is gone, as I have no doubt but they will abuse us, and steal everything they can lay their hands on.

Further, to take Shunghee to England would be to act in direct opposition to the instructions of the Society, and I very much doubt whether he or yourself will live to return; I well know how very prejudicial the climate of England is to the health of a New Zealander. The Lexicon and Grammar I cannot spare, as I want them for my own use. I shall, D.V., be at Ranghee Hoo to-morrow, or Saturday, and shall be glad to converse with you (if you please), a little further on the subject.

Yours faithfully,
JOHN BUTLER.

SUNDAY, 27th FEBRUARY, 1820.—Divine Service, morning and afternoon at Rangihoo. Preached from the 5th Chapter, 2nd Corinthians, 17th verse. Three boats' crews from three whalers lying in the Bay attended, and six officers renewed their solemn dedication of themselves to God, at His Holy Table. In the afternoon, christened Mrs. King's child—Wm. Spence King.

About two o'clock p.m., the ship "Dromedary," Captain Skinner, commander, came into the Bay, having on board our dear friend, Revd. Saml. Marsden, and stores also, and cattle for the settlement. The stores are a very timely supply, as all our stock was expended.

In the evening, Messrs. Butler, Halls, Kemp and King went on board, and were happy to find Mr. Marsden quite well, as was all the ship's crew. I was also exceeding happy to hear that his family was in perfect health at the time of his departure.

I slept on board, and, in the morning, Mr. M. and myself and several officers went to Wye Tanghee, both to give the officers an opportunity of seeing the place, and procuring food for the cattle.

Government has sent twelve yoke of oxen, in order to facilitate the getting of timber to the ship. Returned to Kedee Kedee Monday evening.

TUESDAY, 29th FEBRUARY, 1820.—To-day we have been exceeding busy in doing all we can toward the erection of a stable, for three horses brought down to New Zealand by Mr. Marsden.

WEDNESDAY, MARCH 1st, 1820.—Went to ship "Dromedary" to fetch away our cattle. We got them into the punt in safety, and also to Kedee Kedee after eighteen hours' hard pulling; distance twenty miles. We had a heavy sea, and tide against us a great part of the way.

THURSDAY, 2nd MARCH, 1820.—In the afternoon, Mrs. Butler and myself went down to Ranghu Hoo on business, and slept at Mr. Wm. Hall's.

FRIDAY.—I took Mrs. B. on board to see Mr. Marsden, also to endeavour to get our stores unladen. Captain Skinner kindly offered the ship's launch for this purpose, and proposed to begin this business on Saturday morning early; this was

agreed upon, and Mr. Marsden kindly offered to conduct them to Kedee Kedee. In the evening, Mrs. Butler and self returned to Kedee Kedee.

SATURDAY AFTERNOON.—I went to meet Mr. Marsden, and to render every assistance in my power towards getting the stores to the place of their destination. We arrived at Kedee Kedee about nine o'clock in the evening. It being very dark, we found it impossible to unload in the night; we therefore set a watch over them, and they remained until morning.

SUNDAY, MARCH 5th, 1820.—This morning we were under the necessity of unloading our stores, as they were lying in an open boat and in great danger of being stolen or pilfered by the natives. We began work at six o'clock, and we succeeded in landing them all in safety by two o'clock, save that we lost the lead from the sounding line, but, after some exposition with the natives, it was brought back again.

In the evening, we had Divine Service in the saw yard. I read prayers; Mr. Marsden preached from the parable of the rich man and Lazarus. The natives were very silent and attentive. Several officers from the "Dromedary" attended, and who also had come thus far on their journey to Shukianga to seek for spars, and to examine the harbour.

MONDAY, 6th, 1820.—The whole of this day we have been busy in putting our things in order.

TUESDAY, 7th.—This morning I set off for the "Dromedary" to enquire after, and the best means of getting up the remainder of the stores. A strong gale set in against us, and we did not reach the ship until between nine and ten o'clock in the evening. Captain Skinner kindly offered to send the remainder of the stores in the schooner, and also to accommodate us for the night. For this latter gratuitous offer I felt exceedingly thankful; but I felt it a duty to go immediately to Tippoonah, as I had heard that the "Active" had arrived, and I wished to see Captain Thompson, because I expected some letters by him from Port Jackson. I therefore arranged with Captain Skinner about the stores, and set off, and reached Tippoonah about twelve o'clock at night. However, I found the ship to be the brig "Haweis," instead of the brig "Active." I went on board, and saluted Captain Nicholson and Mr. Orsmond, one of the Otaheitian missionaries who was also on board; after this I proceeded to Kedee Kedee, and arrived safe at four o'clock in the morning.

WEDNESDAY, 8th.—Bought twenty-four hogs of different natives.

THURSDAY, 9th.—Captain Skinner, his lady, and several officers of the “Dromedary,” Captain Kent, of ye “Regent,” a schooner, Captain Nicholson, of the brig “Haweis,” visited our settlement at Kedee Kedee. We all felt much pleasure in their friendly visit, and in making them as comfortable as our circumstances would admit. They remained with us one night, which gave the gentlemen an opportunity of viewing the extended plains of Kedee Kedee, which, if cultivated, would keep more than ten thousand people.

FRIDAY, 10th MARCH.—This morning, the gentlemen took a general survey of the settlement, and after breakfast our visitors began to prepare for their return. I made them a present of some hogs and potatoes, as a recompense for their kindness in rendering us so much assistance with the stores. At ten o’clock they started, and I accompanied them five miles down the river, and returned.

SATURDAY, 11th.—Remained at home in the study.

SUNDAY, 12th.—Divine Service, M. & E., in my room.

In the course of the last week, I received a great deal of abuse from several natives; one man came near to me and spat in my face three times, merely because I asked him to go out of the yard. Two others, one named Tenana, and his brother, behaved in a very outrageous manner. I had engaged several natives to cut bullrushes to thatch a stable, and the wife of Tenana, without any order, thought proper to go and cut some and bring them for sale. It was a small quantity, and I gave nine of ye largest size fish-hooks for it. This was much more than it was worth. The payment was taken away, and in about an hour after, Tenana brought the fish-hooks back, and demanded three hatchets for the rushes, and said if I did not comply with his request he would set fire to the whole, and burn the building to the ground. I answered, “I cannot help that; the payment you have already received is much more than the worth of the rushes, and I shall not give you any more. After this, his brother came and demanded a tokee for a log which was lying in the water, and said he would have it, or he would be very angry, altho’ the log was scarcely worth accepting as a gift. This request I refused to comply with; and they began to be very rude, and to push me about; this I did not mind; but, afterwards, they went out of the yard

and actually set fire to the rushes, and if the fire had not been extinguished by some other natives, the whole building must have been destroyed. As soon as they were defeated in this object, Tenana made a violent attack on my hut and the store. He and some others began by throwing some heavy stones at the yard door; and after two or three volleys the door was broken open, and they made a rush into the yard. Rewa, another chief who saw this, came to our relief; however, Tenana mounted the top of the house, and at the same time holding a large piece of board in his hand threatening to kill me; himself quite naked and vociferating with all the rage of a cannibal. The settlement was thrown into great alarm; Mrs. Butler was quite frantic with fear; the shutters were closed, and everyone was looking out for a place of shelter. Rewa mounted the roof after him, and they had a sharp skirmish. Rewa threw him off the roof into the yard, but (cat-like) he came upon his legs. He reascended the roof, and his brother with him. Rewa and one of our sawyers immediately followed, and down they came together, and then a general set-to took place in the yard, with about a dozen of them. Tenana soon found himself on the weakest side. He was therefore obliged to give in, and shear off. After the fray was over I made Rewa a present of an adze and axe, and two others of an axe each.

THURSDAY, MARCH 2nd.—Mr. Kendall, with Shunghe Hika, the chief of Kedee Kedee, sailed for England in the ship “New Zealander,” Captain Munro, commander.

Since Mr. Kendall's departure, Mrs. Kendall has taken up the business of private trade. During the last week, Mrs. K. bought a lot of pigs for a musket, and sent two hogs and two buckets of potatoes on board the “Haweis,” Captain Nicholson.

MONDAY, 13th MARCH, 1820.—I am sorry to say that George, our native brickmaker, left us this day. The natives of Kedee Kedee have been very rude with him for some time, telling him to be gone to his own place. One of the natives a few days ago stole a mat and several other things from his wife; and afterwards one of them pointed a loaded musket at him, and declared he would shoot him. I think, also, that he would have done it had not another native taken the gun from him. Under such circumstances, George declared he durst not stop any longer. They were jealous of him on another account, which was because he acted as my interpreter and explained to me their conversation, which oftentimes was

of the basest kind, and not very favourable to Europeans. He said: "I am very sorry to leave you, but my life is in danger; but if Shunghe had not gone to England, no doubt I should have remained with you, as he would have protected me." His place lies about sixteen miles off; he bade me farewell and set off. At present, therefore, all my expectations with respect to brickmaking in New Zealand are at an end. Shunghe's going to England is a bad thing for our infant settlement.

SATURDAY, 18th MARCH, 1820.—During this last week we have been severely tried by the natives. They are very insolent, and enter our houses with impunity. They abuse us, and if any of the chiefs ask for an axe or anything else that we have as trade, we dare not deny them.

This morning we have had a complete skirmish in my yard, by the natives, one against the other. Mrs. Butler fainted with fear, and we were obliged to give several axes, hatchets, and other things to the chiefs in order to pacify and get them out of the yard. They plainly tell us if we will not issue powder and muskets, we must go away, which appears the only alternative.

The account of the incident as given by Major Cruise is as follows: MARCH 18th.—Shukiangah natives appear to be easier to deal with than those of the Bay of Islands, who demand muskets and powder for everything. As it was possible that the "Dromedary" would go there, the chiefs of that district remained on board. On the 19th, Mr. Marsden went on shore, as the natives were troublesome. One of the natives, who had forcibly entered Mr. Butler's premises, upon being told to go away, behaved with such violence, breaking one of the windows, and knocking everything about that was near him, that his brother, who had always been particularly kind to Mr. Butler's family, opposed him and struck him. The consequence was that the two brothers, in a passion amounting almost to frenzy, commenced a battle which must have been fatal to one or the other, had they not been separated by their mutual friends. The noise and confusion was excessive, and the first aggressor, in the height of his rage, declared his intention to bring another tribe to his assistance, who would carry everything that the missionaries possessed; while Mr. Butler's friends expressed their determination to prevent him doing so.

MARCH 20th.—The "Prince Regent," schooner, sailed in the morning to examine the south-eastern coast, and the timber which grew on it, as far as Bream Bay. In the afternoon, the "Cumberland," whaler, came into the harbour. The natives traded in the curiosities of their country, which they sold for axes, knives, etc., but for the articles most essential to the health of men, viz., hogs, and potatoes, there was a determined struggle of obstinacy between them and us—they insisted upon muskets and ball, while we as steadfastly refused them. Long as the ship had been here, scarcely any refreshments had been obtained.

MARCH 23rd.—In the evening, the “Prince Regent,” schooner, returned; she had examined a considerable part of the coast between the Bay of Islands and Bream Head, but, where she had met with much timber, there was no safe anchorage, and, where shelter for shipping had been found, there was no cowry (kauri).

Therefore, the necessary preparations were begun for sailing to Hokianga. The jealousy of the people of the Bay of Islands was equal to the joy of those among whom it was intended she should go; and, determined as the former were to force us into a traffic for muskets and powder, now that they saw things at a crisis, they would, if the timber had been within their reach, have given it to us for our axes, sooner than let them go into the hands of strangers.

The “Dromedary” returned to the Bay of Islands on April 5th. Cruise (page 96) gives a more complete account of the following continuance of Butler’s Journal.

APRIL 10th.—There has been some disturbance at Te Poonah. The natives last week killed a woman; she was a slave, and took her to Moturoa, two miles distant, and there ate her.

APRIL 16th.—I left the “Dromedary” this morning for Wytange, and Cowa Cowa to purchase pork and potatoes for the settlement, and was successful at both places, and visited Wytange, and reached Cowa Cowa in the evening. I informed the natives why I was come, and desired them to bring such things as they had to dispose of.

In the morning, at daylight, the natives came together in groups, with hogs, potatoes, birds, fish-lines, curiosities, etc. I made all the purchases I could, slept among them two nights in the open air, and was very kindly treated by them. De Kogie (Te Koki), the chief of the district, is a very mild man. I left them and reached home with a heavy load on Thursday, at one o’clock.

APRIL 29th.—This week the natives of our district have been remarkably quiet, and those of them who have come to trade with us have been very civil; there have been also several applications for European clothes, and articles of barter, for pork and potatoes, etc. I am glad to see such applications, and shall feel particular pleasure in supplying them to the utmost of my power. I hope the time is not far distant when they will all be clothed, and in their right mind, sitting at the feet of Jesus, and hearing His holy word.

APRIL 30th, SUNDAY. — Divine Service in my room, morning and evening. Administered the Holy Sacrament.

MAY 3rd.—The agricultural plough was for the first time put into the land of New Zealand at Kideekidee, and I felt much pleasure in holding it after a team of six bullocks brought down by the “Dromedary.” I trust that this day will be remembered with gratitude, and its anniversary kept by ages yet unborn. Each heart rejoiced in this auspicious day, and said, “May God speed the plough.”

4th, 5th, and 6th.—In the course of these days, got in two acres of wheat.

MAY 13th.—This week we were busy employed in farming; we have now five acres of wheat in the ground. The plough will go remarkably well, after the ground is once broken; but scarcely any strength is sufficient the first time, on account of the fern-root. The natives employed in farming work exceedingly well. The carpenters are going on with Messrs. Hall and Kemp’s house. The timber is cut by native sawyers.

MAY 15th.—On taking a survey, I felt much gratified in seeing six acres of wheat springing up, with a fair prospect of a future harvest, in the place where, three months ago, fern and every sort of weed was growing; and let us all pray that the same good God, who giveth seed to the sower, and bread to the eater, may soon cause the seed of His holy word to be received into the hearts of these people, so that the mind of the New Zealander, which is at present so wild and uncultivated in this country, may by that dew and the seeds of the Holy Spirit become like a tree planted by the water-courses; and like a watered garden, whose waters fail not. Our working natives behave exceeding well; at present, I have twenty employed in farming.

MAY 21st, SUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening, in my room. Mr. Marsden preached in the morning, and administered the Holy Sacrament; in the evening, myself.

27th.—Our settlement still enjoys tranquillity, and the natives are at present kind to us; the whole of my working natives are making repeated applications for European clothes, and as a plea to obtain them, say, “We want them to come to church in on Sundays, as we do not like to come in our filthy mats.”

MAY 31st.—We are very short of animal food. The natives retain their hogs for the shipping, in order to obtain muskets and powder for them.

JUNE 13th.—Set off for Te Waimate, the principal residence of the chiefs and people of this district.

The distance is about fourteen miles; my object was to purchase some hogs, as we had none at the settlement. I took with me one European and three natives to carry food, trade, etc., for the journey. Being winter, the paths were very bad, and the woods full as deep in mire and clay. We were kindly received at the residence of the principal chief, who ordered his slaves to make a good fire and dry our clothes. I directed our people to get the tea-kettle ready, that supper might be over before dark.

Supper being ended, we sat around the fire, and some conversation took place about their farms, and the method of improving their circumstances, and educating their children. After this I proposed to sing a hymn, to pray, and read the Bukabuka, as they call the Bible, which was immediately agreed on. They said it was very good, and, a great party being assembled, I began to sing the evening hymn, assisted by the European I had with me; after prayer, several of them wanted to know all that I had prayed for. I hardly knew how to explain myself, but answered, "I prayed that all of you may have plenty of kumera (sweet potatoes), pork, potatoes, etc., and that you may be happy, and that the great God may cause you and your children to understand the Bible which I have in my hand, and then you will be very happy." They replied, "It was very good." We had some further conversation on various subjects, when we lay down to rest.

JUNE 14th.—We rose at daylight, had breakfast, prayed together, and then went to take a survey of the district. The land is very good, and the timber excellent. The natives have a great deal of cultivation at this place. I spent a very pleasant day among these people, lifted up my heart for them to the Father of mercies, and dropped a tear of compassion for them. The air was foul with thunder and lightning, but the natives came round the hut to hear the Bookabooka and prayer, after which they dispersed, and we retired to rest.

JUNE 15th.—I made all the purchases that I could, sent away my things, visited several chiefs, and set out for Kidee-kidee, where we arrived in safety at four o'clock in the afternoon, thankful for all our mercies.

JUNE 24th.—We have been busy farming and gardening the whole week. The natives engaged in husbandry, going on very well. In the course of the week, a native at work in my

garden, dug up the stones on which Tooi's father was roasted, and afterwards eaten. He was slain in a battle between Shunghie's people and his people, in which Shunghee proved victorious. The man ran through a narrative of the battle with great feeling and simplicity, and added, "My father was killed at the same time."

I had some further conversation with him concerning the evils of war, and the shocking practice of eating one another; he said it was the custom of their country to eat their enemies. I asked whether he had ever eaten human flesh. He answered, "No;" he did not like that. I enquired why? He replied, "I no like to do it." I said, "I hope you never will, and that you will all soon know better, and see the evil of such things."

JULY 8th.—The natives of our district, and those at work, have behaved very well for a long time. It must, nevertheless, be remembered, they are heathen, bound by no law, human or divine, and often bursting into the most dreadful passion. Their present kindness must, therefore, be not too much relied on. We must keep in mind, too, that they are poor and destitute, naked, ignorant, and miserable, and as such, call for the greatest patience and forbearance.

JULY 12th.—Mr. Bean, one of our carpenters, lost a child, a fine boy three years of age.

13th.—Sowing oats and pease.

JULY 14th.—This afternoon, I buried Mr. Bean's child in my garden. All the Europeans attended, and walked in regular order, as this tender lamb was the first (illegible) that it hath pleased our Holy Father to take to Himself and shield in His bosom from our little flock at Kideekiddee. It was my particular request that everyone should attend, not out of any vain ostentation, but to show the natives the manner of a Christian burial. Part of this service was read in the house, and the remainder at the grave, and two appropriate hymns sung on the occasion. The afflicted parents indulged in grief, and seemed wholly absorbed in it for a time. We spent the evening together in prayer and praise, and the weeping family was not a little comforted thereby.

JULY 17th, 1820.—I set out, accompanied by Mr. Hall, Mr. Shepherd, Mr. Graham, two European servants, and ten natives, for Whyematte and Mobery (Omapere), in order to procure pork, and potatoes, for the settlement. We travelled until dusk, and then stopped by the side of a wood belonging

to Wymattee. Our natives were very prompt in erecting a shed, getting water, cooking our food, and doing everything that was necessary for us. After supper, we spent the evening in prayer and praise, got plenty of ferntops for a bed, and then lay down to rest. The night was wet and cold.

JULY 18th.—This day we spent at Wymattee, and were very kindly treated by the natives, but, having done all the business we could, we thought it proper to proceed on our journey a few miles towards Mobery. We again travelled on till dark, when we came to the side of a wood, and then took up our lodging for the night.

JULY 19th.—We reached Mobery (Omapere) about eleven o'clock.

We were received by the natives with great hospitality. They offered us a good dry shed for our use while we remained, which we gladly accepted. Several of the party set off, and in a little time brought plenty of ferntops and firewood for our use. At this place there is a most beautiful fresh-water lake, about six miles long by four wide; the natives say the depth is from two to six fathoms.

There is an abundance of ducks and wild fowl upon it. We spent the day very comfortably, bought some pigs and other articles, and closed the evening in our usual manner, endeavouring to explain to the natives the great object we had in view in coming to their country, slept in peace and safety.

JULY 20th.—Offered our morning sacrifice, and then prepared to move. Having taken leave of the inhabitants, we departed, and reached our settlement in the evening, about five o'clock. Distance, upwards of twenty miles.

AUGUST 12th.—This week we have been employed in splitting timber for fencing. The natives of our district are still kind and civil, and the farming natives very diligent. Oh, that the time was come when we could see them working out their salvation with peace and tranquillity, and crying out in anxiety of soul, "Where is God, our Maker? Where is the Lamb of God Who taketh away the sins of the world? Where is He Whom my soul loveth?"

AUGUST 13th.—Divine Service, morning and evening; administered the Holy Sacrament. The natives who attend the church are well behaved during the service.

AUGUST 26th.—On Wednesday and Thursday last, I received some little insults from three natives; one struck me on the breast, and two others spit upon me, with intent to spit in my face. I pray God to forgive them their rudeness. However, the natives whom I employ, are very diligent and attentive, and are still anxious for European clothes; but it is not in my power to furnish them at present. Several slaves have lately died of want in this district, and were eaten by dogs, before I knew it; one had been killed by his master for theft, and eaten by his master and friends. The chiefs think more of their dogs than of their slaves. A slave in New Zealand, take him in either a spiritual or temporal view, is the most wretched and miserable being alive. Oh, Lord, God, when shall the fierce lion of New Zealand become as harmless as the lamb that feedeth upon the mountains of Israel?

SEPTEMBER 5th.—Went to Parroa (Pairoa) on business, and had the great satisfaction of meeting our dear friend, Mr. Marsden, at that place. He had travelled overland from the River Thames in a circuitous route to the Bay of Islands, which is an immense distance.

It was reported at Kidee Kidee, by some strange natives, that Mr. Marsden was killed at Wycoto (Waikato). This melancholy news caused much alarm and uneasiness at our settlement, but his safe arrival set our fears at rest; Mr. Marsden will, I am sure, furnish the Society with many further important and interesting particulars respecting New Zealand.

(Part of Butler's Journal is missing. Cruise reports as follows.)

SEPTEMBER 6th.—The "Dromedary" anchored in Parroa Bay, and found there the "Catherine," "Anne," and "Indian," (British), and "Independence," (American), whalers. And that, two days before, two whales had come into the harbour and been killed, and the blubberless carcasses seized upon by the Maoris.

To the collection of the late Dr. Hocken, we are again indebted for the material missing from the original journals, which are still in the possession of Butler's descendants, wherever both sources are comparable, the data is reasonably correlative. The "Hocken" Journal runs as follows:—

SATURDAY, SEPTEMBER 2nd.—During this last week, we had a large number of natives at our place, and some of

them strangers. They have behaved very ill, inasmuch as they have broken into my stable three times, and stolen therefrom twelve bags of kumeras, and all the bedding belonging to a European servant, who sleeps in it to protect the property. The robberies have been committed between dusk and bedtime. Besides these, they have stolen from me out of a shed adjoining my house, one dead hog, and several articles of wearing apparel, yet, after all, it must be recollected, they are but natives. The carpenters are still going on with Mr. Hall's house, and I am beginning to wish it was finished. The natives we employ are very kind, and certainly improve very fast.

SUNDAY, SEPTEMBER 3rd.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY.—Held a committee on the general business of the Mission.

5th.—(See ante).

6th SEPTEMBER.—Returned to Kedeē Kedeē on the 6th, and the remaining part of the week employed in the general business of the Mission.

And now, my dear Sir, (to the Rev. Josiah Pratt), if you find these few remarks worthy of reading, I shall be abundantly recompensed for having written them down.

And believe me to be,

Dear Sir,

Your faithful and obedient servant,

JOHN BUTLER.

Extracted from "HISTORICAL RECORDS OF NEW ZEALAND."

Capt. J. Nicholson to Commissioner J. Bigge.

BAY OF ISLANDS, New Zealand,

March 11th, 1820.

Sir,

. I visited the new missionary settlement in the "Regent" a few days ago. The name of the place is Kidi Kidi English blood boils to see the indignities the natives shew to the missionaries who live among them, and to us they are unbearably insulting; and were it not for a regard to those who live among them, I hesitate not to affirm that they would meet with severe repulse from persons from whom they now receive civility. Powder and muskets are the only things for which they care

Your obedient, humble servant,

JOHN NICHOLSON.

The Hon. the Commissioner of Enquiry.

“ HISTORICAL RECORDS.” (McNab).

H.M.S. “Dromedary,” R. Skinner, Comg., to His Excellency Governor Macquarie.

I beg to acquaint your Excellency that James Dunleary, Thomas Lynch, John Grady, and James Horan, private soldiers of the 84th Regt., having been committed by the Revd. J. Butler, Resident Magistrate at the Bay of Islands, charged with murder of William Oldridge, seaman, of this ship, on the evening of the 21st Nov., 1820, and the deposition having been enclosed by the said Magistrate to the Judge Advocate, I have to request your Excellency will be pleased to give directions for their being taken out of this ship and lodged in prison.

Extract from Revd. S. Marsden to Rev. J. Pratt, London. (“Historical Records.”)

S.S. “DROMEDARY,”

BAY OF ISLANDS,

April 24th, 1820.

Mr. K. (Kendall) left his wife and eight children wholly at the mercy of the natives. Some individuals must think of and provide food for his family. I believe myself and Mr. Butler must take this trouble, or they will not be provided for

After a long comment upon the missionaries trading privately with the natives, he continues :

I did suspend Mr. ———, as stated in a former letter. The Rev. J. Butler saw this evil in the same light I did, and also Messrs. F. Hall and Kemp.

During my stay in New Zealand, I experienced much distress from the misconduct of those employed in the Mission. I hoped mutual friendship was restored amongst them in a certain degree when I left them in November; at the same time I was afraid the Rev. J. Butler would not be able to maintain his authority, and to carry on the Mission with comfort to himself.

On my arrival in February, I found the Europeans in great confusion, and the tares were sprung up again within the wheat. The settlers had fallen into their old barter with the ships and natives for muskets and powder. Mr. Butler, either for want of authority or from fear of persuasion (*suggest want of food !*) had been prevailed upon to pollute his hands with the same traffic, not on his private account, but to procure animal food for the support of the settlement.

This trial I was not prepared to meet. I called a meeting again, stated my abhorrence of this traffic; Mr. Butler condemned it as much as I did. They contended that without muskets or powder the natives would not sell their pigs, that they could not get a log of timber, nor potatoes or any article they wanted to purchase. I did not credit all they said (*No! he had just come from the best of living in Sydney*) but told them I should be here for some time, and then I should be judge. . . . If I found that they could not get animal food without muskets and powder I would send them salt meat from Port Jackson till the matter was submitted to the Committee at Home. Mr. Butler was much distressed; told me he could not govern the Europeans, and if I had not

come, he should have returned to Port Jackson by the first opportunity Mr. Butler wants experience—he has had men under him, but not missionaries, who have no idea of subordination. I think the “Dromedary” will remain long enough for me to prove that they can get all the native productions without muskets or powder; I hope I shall establish Mr. Butler on a more comfortable foundation than he was before. I know Mr. ——— will plead for this barter very strongly, and had he remained, Mr. Butler would have found more difficulty in abolishing it than he will at present. They have suffered a little inconvenience, a few privations while residing among the heathens, but some of them must, in the common course of things, have suffered more had they lived in England, and had their families to maintain.

I am, etc.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

Rev. J. Pratt.

Records from other sources should have satisfied Mr. Marsden about the settlers' inability to procure meat; it would have been interesting if he had recorded his impressions, upon his leaving at the end of that period; however, Major Cruise has rectified his omission, page 67, (“Ten Months in N.Z.” by R. A. Cruise, 1820):

“Long as the ship (‘Dromedary’) had been here, scarcely any refreshments had been obtained; and though on the departure of the whalers, it was presumed that the want of another market would induce the natives to come to our terms, the arrival of the ‘Cumberland’ now precluded all hopes.”

Idem, page 286. “Our men were doomed to live ten months on salt provisions.”

(What about the women and children in the Mission settlements who had years of it?)

Ensign McCrae, 84th Regt. (“Historical Records of N.Z.” McNab, page 584).—“The same difficulty was experienced by the ship’s company of the ‘Dromedary,’ and, in consequence, they were never able to procure by barter, a fresh meal, during the whole time we were in New Zealand.”

Dr. Fairfoul. (Idem page 554).—“They (the natives) had both, (pork and potatoes), but they would not sell them for our articles of barter.”

(Did Mr. Marsden rectify this?)

“Brett’s N.Z.,” page 317, July 3rd, 1824.—Mr. Williams wrote, “We shall this day cook our last potatoes, and have been out of pork for some length of time. Indeed, the provisions of all the settlements are short, and should not a vessel arrive in a little time, we shall be driven to eat fernroot.”

KEDEE KEDEE,

In Bay of Islands,

New Zealand,

April 11th, 1820.

Sir,

In July of last year the brig "General Gates," Captain Briggs, master, being in the Harbour of Port Jackson, the agent of the Church Missionary Society, the Revd. Samuel Marsden, took her up to convey me and my colleagues to the Bay of Islands, in New Zealand, the place of our destination.

We sailed from Port Jackson July 29/19, and shortly after we had got to sea, several felons were discovered to be on board (I believe five) belonging to the colony of New South Wales.

On my arrival at the Bay of Islands, August 12th/19, there being no British ships in the harbour, nor any jail to confine these convicts in, I made no official demand on Captain Briggs to deliver them up, and the "General Gates" sailed from the Bay of Islands on or about the 15th of September, having these convicts on board. She has returned and is now lying in the harbour. I therefore feel it my duty, as Resident Magistrate, to communicate to you the above circumstances in order that necessary steps may be taken to secure and return them to the colony and Government of New South Wales, for whom

I am, etc.,

JOHN BUTLER,

Resident Magistrate, Bay of Islands, New Zealand.

Capt. R. Skinner, H.M.S. "Dromedary," Bay of Islands.

AN AGREEMENT between Thomas Hansen and the Rev. Saml. Marsden.

On behalf of the Church Missionary Society at 10/- per week and rations commencing August 21st, 1819, which sum will be paid to him on the Society's account as long as the Rev. Mr. Butler shall find his services necessary for the general benefit of the Settlement and he the said Thos. Hansen is willing to continue in the employ of the Church Missionary Society.

Paid Mr. Gordon on account of Mr. Hansen, Nov 9th, 1819.

COPY OF GOODS SENT FOR SALE BY MR. MARSDEN.

1 piece of blue cloth, 18 yards at 18/-	..	16	4	0
1 piece Waistcoat, 5½ yards at 6/-	}	..	2	2 0
1 piece Waistcoat (marked F.H. 22)				
1 piece Mixture, 21½ yards at 16/-	..	17	4	0
1 piece light print, 12½ yards at 2/6	..	1	11	3
1 piece brown print, 5 yards at 3/6	..		17	6
1 piece dark blue, 15 yards at 3/6	..		2	12 6
1 piece light blue, 14 yards at 2/6	..		1	15 0

£42 6 3

Paid Mr. Marsden, Sept. 7th, 1820,

The following articles appear in the accounts of 1819 and 1820, as having been sold from the store to various settlers:—

To WM. BEAN.—Calico, dungaree, cloth, hat, shoes, thread, powder, butter, rum, brandy, print, bed ticking.

To GEO. GORDON.—Calico, print, dungaree.

To JAMES KEMP and JOHN KING.—Miscellaneous articles, as also to FRANCIS HALL, WILLIAM HALL and Mr. KENDALL.

To SUSANNAH KENDALL and Mrs. KENDALL and JOHN KENDALL.—Each, shoes.

To JOSEPH KENDALL.—Boots.

To Mrs. HANSEN and Mr. HANSEN.—Each, shoes, as also to HANNAH HANSEN and THOMAS HANSEN.

To JAMES BOYLE.—Numerous articles, including hatchets, chisels, axes, knives, etc.

To RICHARD RUSSELL.—Much the same.

To GEORGE.—Frock, trousers, shirt, black handkerchief, axes, hoes, hatchets and reaphook.

(George being the brickmaker, a native, who learned his trade at Port Jackson.)

To GEORGE HARRISON.—Blankets, jacket, and minor items.

These accounts are, as a rule, countersigned by the recipient, on date of balance, and balanced by bills drawn on or in favour of Mr. Marsden, Sydney.

A “gift” book also appears to have been kept, in which items given to natives on account of the Society were duly entered. This procedure was carried out until Mr. F. Hall took over the duties from Mr. Butler.

At a meeting of the Committee, August 14/20, it was resolved, in reference to Mr. Kendall’s return from New Zealand, and the visit of Shunghee and Wykato:

- (1) That Mr. Kendall, in coming to this country under the circumstances stated by him, has acted in opposition to the known Regulations of the Society; that

the reasons assigned by him for coming do not justify his breach of these Regulations, and that the Committee do, therefore, though with much regret, from the value which they feel for his former service and character, highly disapprove his conduct in returning.

- (2) That while the Committee will receive, and treat with all kindness, the chiefs who Mr. Kendall has brought with him, they entirely disapprove of their coming to this country, as every advantage of gradually increasing intercourse with Europeans may be had by visiting, under Mr. Marsden's directions, the colony of New South Wales, without the expense, inconvenience and dangers attending a voyage to England, and that the Committee, do, therefore, strictly enjoin on all persons connected with the Society in New Zealand, that the wish of any native in future to visit this country be referred wholly to Mr. Marsden, and the other friends of the Society in New South Wales.

Extracted from the minutes, Nov. 27/20.

(Signed) JOSIAH PRATT,
Secy.

RESOLUTIONS OF THE COMMITTEE OF DEC. 11/20.

- (1) That under the peculiar circumstances of the New Zealand Mission, and in consideration of Mr. Kendall's large family, he be authorised, in case Mr. Marsden sees no objection to the measure, to draw on the Secretary for his salary in favour of some person in this country, and that if any other of the Society's settlers in New Zealand shall desire to draw his salary in this manner, he be, with Mr. Marsden's concurrence, allowed to do so.
- (2) That indents, containing particulars of the articles wanted, and of the objects to which they are to be appropriated, be prepared annually, or more frequently if circumstances require, at a meeting of the missionaries, schoolmasters and settlers of both stations, and that the said indents be sent to Mr. Marsden for his approval, and to be forwarded by him to the Secretary.

Extract from the minutes, Dec. 16th/20.

(Signed) JOSIAH PRATT,
Secry.

CHAPTER IV.

EX "HOCKEN" COLLECTION, DUNEDIN.

Rev. S. Marsden to Rev. J. Butler.

On board H.M.S. "Dromedary,"

WANGHAROA,

Sept. 13th, 1820.

My Dear Sir,

As I am now on the eve of my return to Port Jackson, I avail myself of the present moments to address a few lines to you before my departure, with the sincerest wish to assist you in the great work of the Lord, to which you have been solemnly called and set apart. You will remember at the time I arrived in New Zealand in Feb. last, I found you greatly "discouraged because of the way." You had experienced six months of severe trial in a new field of action, during which period, I have no doubt, you have suffered more real anxiety and pain of mind than you had ever experienced during as many years at any former period of your life. Your trials were new—your graces were exercised with new temptations, and perhaps, in some instances, you saw yourself in a different light from what you had been wont to do. Your patience was put to the test, and often completely exhausted; you seemed to feel more of that unbelieving despondency spirit that the Ten Rulers of the Children of Israel, who had been appointed by Moses to examine the Land of Canaan, manifested, when they returned and made their report. "We are not able to go up against the people, for they are stronger than we." When you mentioned to me the state of your own mind and the situation of the settlement, I felt much grieved for the evils that existed; yet, from my long experience of mankind, I was not astonished at them. To despise authority is inherent in human nature. I have often seen this disposition manifest itself, more in missionaries than any other men who have come under my notice. The Scriptures are the best comment upon the conduct of mankind, whether they are religious or irreligious. Wherever God appoints a Moses and places Israelites under his authority, there will always be a Korah or a Dathan or an Abiram to say to him, "You take too much upon you, seeing all the congregation is holy, every one of them; wherefore lift ye up yourselves above the congregation of the Lord?" Even men of sound piety are liable to fall into this sin, and it is a dreadful one for disturbing the church of Christ. Our blessed Lord hath told us that offences will come, but adds Woe to him by whom the offence cometh. Did not Miriam and Aaron (own sister and brother to Moses), and partakers of like precious Faith with him, break out into open sedition against him, and laboured to bring power and authority into contempt before the congregation of Israel? They carried their opposition against Moses so far as to kindle the anger of the Lord against them, and to make them public examples of His high displeasure, as a warning to others, by instantaneously inflicting Miriam with the leprosy, and com-

pelled both Aaron and her, with guilt and shame, to entreat Moses to pray for them, that the divine judgments might be averted from them. Sin is sin; and rebellion, rebellion; whether found among angels or saints, and God will always punish it. If any despise our legal authority, we should not seek to avenge ourselves. "Vengeance is Mine," saith the Lord, "and I will repay."

(Several more pages follow in this strain; advice, which Mr. Marsden never himself carried out, being constantly in conflict with legal authority; he was probably "killing time" on the "Dromedary" before it sailed. The advice is good, no doubt; this for example):

If they should provoke your spirit, and cause you to speak unadvisedly with your lips, it will go ill with you for their sakes. . . .

You have been accustomed to obey and be obeyed. Perhaps some of your colleagues have neither been accustomed to obey, nor to be obeyed, but they have got these lessons to learn. You are now at the head of the settlement, and have no superior. Tho' it may be the duty of those under you to obey your orders in a certain sense, as readily as the men you had under you in London were wont to do, yet, if you expect this, you expect too much. You might as well expect a man to make a watch because he had seen one.

(The remainder of this letter is missing; probably Mr. Marsden supplied this to the C.M.S., London, whence it came into the possession of Hocken.)

According to Rev. Butler's Diary, he was with Mr. Marsden on Sept. 12th., as vide the following continuation of that portion of the Rev. Butler's Journal, which is in the "Hocken" Collection.

Extract from John Butler's Journal, contained in a letter to Rev. Josiah Pratt.

GLOUCESTER TOWN,
New Zealand,

Now Dec. 1st, 1820.

Rev. and Dear Sir,

The following are a few remarks which I have made since my last:

TUESDAY, SEPTEMBER 12th.—Set off with Mr. Marsden for Wangaroa, in order to see him embark on H.M.S. "The Regent," schooner, for Port Jackson. We arrived at the "Dromedary" at eleven at night. In the morning, the wind blew directly into the harbour, and continued to do so for several days, so that the schooner could not get out. This gave us an opportunity of examining the woods, and seeing the spars which were cut down for the "Dromedary." Here, I beheld the wreck of the "Boyd," the sight of which caused me to heave a sigh.

SUNDAY, SEPTEMBER 17th.—The morning was fine, but no wind, but Capt. Skinner determined to send away the

schooner, by towing her out of the harbour with boats. Mr. Wm. Hall and myself accompanied Mr. Marsden, until the vessel was a mile without the Heads. We then took our leave of him, and returned unto the "Dromedary," where we remained until Monday noon, and then returned to Kedee Kedee. The remaining part of the week I have been farming and gardening.

SATURDAY, SEPTEMBER 23rd.—Received a note from Mr. Marsden, saying the "Prince Regent," schooner, had encountered a heavy gale off the Three Kings, at the north point of New Zealand, and returned to the Bay of Islands yesterday. Mr. Marsden was very ill during the storm, and is obliged to remain in New Zealand until the "Dromedary" goes to Port Jackson.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service in Mr. Hall's house, M. & E.

SATURDAY, SEPTEMBER 30th.—The first three days of this week, gardening and fencing, the latter three in enlarging the front yard belonging to Mr. Hall and the store. The natives employed in husbandry go on well, and improve very fast. They are very anxious for European garments, and I mean to give them a suit from the slops which I bought, as an encouragement to go on and be diligent.

OCTOBER 1st.—Divine Service, M. & E. Administered the Holy Sacrament in the morning.

OCTOBER 2nd.—Held a committee. In the afternoon, received by Mr. King a letter from the H.C.M.S., bearing date April 5th, 1820. Also an account of the loss of the "Echo," whaler, Capt. Spence, off the coast of New Zealand; crew saved. Also an account of the death of Mr. Hassell.

TUESDAY, WEDNESDAY.—After timber for the Society's work, with one European and two natives; obtained two fine logs.

THURSDAY.—Gardening.

FRIDAY.—Went into the bush in search of our herd of cattle; took a native with me to assist in this business. We had the good fortune to find them all, though in several divisions. We collected them into one herd again; and were glad to find them looking remarkably well.

OCTOBER 8th. — Divine Service in Mr. Hall's house, M. & E.

OCTOBER 9th.—Captain Ker, of the ship “Saracen,” visited our settlement, accompanied by Mr. Marsden, and dined with me. Captain Ker expressed great satisfaction on seeing the improvements made in so short a time.

TUESDAY, OCTOBER 10th.—Having understood from Captain Ker, on the preceding day, that he could spare a whale-boat, Mr. F. Hall and myself set off in a canoe to Parroa to purchase it. When we arrived, we found that Mr. Marsden and Capt. Ker were gone to Tipponah (Te Puna), and as the Captain did not return till evening, we were obliged to remain on board all night.

In the morning, we agreed for a new boat, oars, and sail, for £30, which we paid at the same time; the price we considered very high, but Capt. Ker said he paid £35 for a new whaleboat in Sydney, and therefore could not let us have one for less than £30. Our settlement was in the greatest distress for a boat. We are twelve miles from Tipponah, and sixteen from Parroa, and no way of getting to either place but by water; so that, whatever occasion might occur, or whatever accident might happen, or whatever might be wanted, we had no conveyance but a canoe, which is exceedingly dangerous for Europeans. I have had several narrow escapes in crossing these large bays in canoes. If we had another boat at Kidee Kidee, it would be very serviceable.

Having finished our business, we returned, and arrived at Gloucester Town at eight o'clock on Wednesday evening.

THURSDAY AND FRIDAY.—Employed in general business.

SATURDAY.—I employed in reading. In the evening, I gave nine natives a suit of clothes each for their good behaviour, and as a stimulus to further exertion. These garments consisted of a striped cotton shirt, blue jacket, and trousers, duck frock, and handkerchief. As soon as I informed them what I was about to do for them, they leaped for joy. I told them that these clothes were to be worn only on Sundays, and that I hoped they would attend church very regularly, and behave well. This they promised to do. Having furnished them with soap, I ordered them to go to the river and wash themselves clean, which was done in a few minutes. As soon as they were dressed, I caused them to stand in a row, and, after a short exhortation, they were permitted to walk in them, as the evening was very fine. They viewed each other with admiration, and it was no less gratifying to us. When shall

their souls be clothed with Christ's righteousness, as well as their bodies with European garments? He that loveth the cause of Christ, let him pray for this wished-for period.

SUNDAY, OCTOBER 15th.—Divine Service in Mr. Hall's house, M. & E. About fourteen natives attended, and behaved exceeding well.

SATURDAY, OCTOBER 21st.—The principal part of this week I have employed in writing, and the natives in falling timber, and fencing, etc. In the evening, we were visited by Mr. Marsden, and Mr. Fairfoul, surgeon of the "Dromedary." Mr. F. remained with us two days, and was much pleased with the prospect we have of usefulness at Gloucester Town.

OCTOBER 22nd.—Divine Service, M. & E.

OCTOBER 28th.—This week my natives have been employed in fencing, and myself in the general business of the Mission.

SUNDAY, OCTOBER 29th, 1820.—Preached at Ranghee Hoo, and administered the Holy Sacrament. I beg leave to observe that the reason why I have not preached at Ranghee Hoo for some time past, is owing to my not having a conveyance.

OCTOBER 30th.—This morning I set off with Mr. Marsden, Mr. Shepherd, and Mr. Puckey, on a journey to the river Kiperro. We left Ranghee Hoo in my whaleboat, and passed Cape Brett at seven. The first place we touched at was Wangahmoomoo, about twenty miles distant from Ranghee Hoo. Here we bought some fish off the natives, who were very desirous for us to go on shore, and spend a little time with them; but this request we could not consent to, as we were very anxious to proceed. The next place was Wangahdoodoo. The next, Shanah. The next, Mee Mee Wangahootoo, and the next, Wanahnackee, where we slept for the night. All the natives as we passed were equally solicitous for our company.

The shore was very bold, and the hills were covered with lofty timber. After landing, we prepared food for supper, hung our hammocks in a tree, and, after refreshment and prayer, laid ourselves down to rest, having journeyed forty miles. We rose in the morning before daylight, and set out while it was yet dark, and proceeded to Matta Podee to breakfast. This place belongs to Te Morengah, and is well adapted for a missionary settlement. After breakfast, we had some conversation with Te Morengah and his people, and departed.

The next place we arrived at was Too Too Ka Kah. Here is a small harbour sheltered by rock standing in the mouth of it. There is plenty of fine kowrie timber at this place, fit for masts or any other purpose.

The next place was Wangaree. Here we arrived at eight at night. The principal chief, Wyhee Wyhee (Waewae), and his people received us with great joy, and shewed us every mark of attention. After some refreshments and prayer, we enjoyed a friendly conversation with them until a late hour, when we retired to rest, our hammocks being hung in a tree as before. In the morning, we stopped for breakfast, after which we were presented with a large hog for our party. We had intended to leave our boat at this place, and proceed by land to Kiperro, but were informed that the natives of Wyeroa (a river we had to go down), were all fled, on account of Coohee Coohee, a great chief, who was invading their border with a great force. After such information, we found it necessary to go on for the River Thames. We passed Bream Head at three p.m. The wind was blowing strong, and we stood in for the Harbour of Mangheewye, and entered the same between four and five o'clock. It is a bar harbour, and a very dangerous entrance, but there appears to be plenty of water inside. Here we took up our lodging in similar manner to the preceding night. We started in the morning at six o'clock, and passed Point Rodney into the Thames at noon. There was a very strong breeze, and we sailed fifty miles before dinner. Hunger turned us into a small harbour for refreshment; after which we crossed part of the river to an uninhabited island—about twelve miles distant. At this time, the sea was very rough, and we thought it prudent to run into shelter, and remain for the night. Having taken our things out of the boat, we hauled her up above high water mark, then took a walk on the island, and returned to the beach, offered up our evening sacrifice and thanksgiving, and then laid down to rest.

The wind being fair in the morning, we set off for Mog-oeah (Mokoia) at daybreak, but there was an amazing heavy sea going, and Mr. Marsden mistook the entrance into Mog-oeah Harbour, which nearly proved the most serious consequences. We went to the upper, instead of the lower, side of an island. As we drew near, I went forward to look out, and I observed the land on one side very low, the entrance narrow, and the water discoloured. I said to Mr. Marsden, "Sir, you have mistaken the passage; there appears to be no water."

He replied, "There is water for the 'Coromandel.'" At this time, we were going before the wind at the rate of nine knots. As we drew very near, the mistake was clearly seen, but it was too late to go about; we rushed through a tremendous surf, and, through mercy, we had just water enough to carry us into shelter. You may easily imagine our feelings at this moment.

We then went on shore, and the natives of the place hauled our boat over the sandbank into the deep water. On finding ourselves sheltered and secure, we felt exceeding thankful.

We next proceeded on for Mogocah, and arrived about four in the afternoon. The natives came running to the beach in great numbers. We were saluted by the firing of a musket, and were received with every mark of respect and gratitude. They even ran into the water with eagerness to shake hands with us, so that, for a few minutes, it was impossible to land, for the press.

After every expression of joy on the part of the natives, we landed, and ascended an eminence to the residence of Enackee (Hinaki), one of the chiefs of this large district. As we approached we found him sitting on the ground with his friends, ready to receive us. I would remark that sitting is the usual way of receiving friends in N.Zd. Enackee is a man of mild countenance, and gentlemanly in his manners. After receiving us with every mark of friendship, he shewed us every favour in his power, offering us hogs, potatoes, and a house to sleep in, etc., etc.

We then entered into conversation, and I expressed a desire to go on the top of an adjacent mountain. Enackee accompanied me with all readiness, leaving Mr. Marsden and Puckey with his friends. We passed through a fine tract of land, principally cultivated, and set with potatoes.

When we arrived at the foot of the mountain, and began to ascend the side, I found, on examination, the grass and fern growing upon burnt earth and calcined cinders, which led me to conclude that it had been a volcano.

Reaching the summit, I found a large crater, and proportionately deep, but the eruption must have ceased long since, as the grass grows spontaneously at the bottom of it. The prospect from the summit is grand and nobly pleasing. I observed twenty villages in the valley below, and, with a single glance, beheld the largest portion of cultivated land I had ever

met with in one place in New Zealand. Having taken a general survey, we returned by another path to the Eppah (pah), where we found Mr. Marsden enjoying a friendly chat with the people.

The next thing to be done was to cook for supper, and the natives were very anxious to see this performed. Our utensils consisted of a frying-pan, an iron pot, and tea kettle. On seeing the flour, they were at a loss to know its utility; we fried pancakes, boiled pork, and made tea; and, after supper, we handed the chiefs and their children some pancakes, who appeared very fond of it.

The evening being fine, Mr. Puckey and myself visited several villages, and the natives seemed quite at a loss to know how to express their gratitude in a proper way and manner.

(The Journal of Mr. Butler to the Society is not exactly word for word with that retained by himself; the period from May to November 4th has been lost, but, owing to the foresight of Dr. Hocken, the Journals to the Society were obtained by him, placed in his library in Dunedin, and have been kindly made available in order to complete the narrative. Butler's own original Journal again continues.)

On our return to the Eppah (the pah), we had Divine Service; the natives were very quiet.

FRIDAY, NOVEMBER 4th, 1820.—We rose early and prepared for our journey. This morning, Totohee, a chief, and relation of Enackee, came to me, desiring me to go with him to his paa, about half a mile off. When I arrived, I found his object was to present me with a good mat, for calling one of his children after my name, a fine boy about four years of age. He considered this a great favour, and pressed me to take the mat as a recompense. I took the mat, and in return made him and his family a present of some fish-hooks, after which I took my leave of them, and went down to the boat.

These people are most anxious to have Europeans to live among them. They appear to be kind and affectionate toward each other, and exceedingly well disposed toward the white people, and, so far as my judgment goes, it is by far the best place for a missionary settlement that I have ever seen in New Zealand. The natives are very numerous. Enackee informed me that there were as many as seven thousand men, women and children, but, judging it impossible for him to tell accurately, I put down four thousand, which I think, from observation, is near the mark. We informed them that, by and by,

the missionaries would be sent to them; they seemed impatient to know when, and expressed their doubts in the most feeling manner, saying, "Our eyes, we are afraid, will be all dark before that period arrives, and we shall never see them." I answered, "You must have patience; England is a long way off." Great crowds accompanied us to the water side, and gave us a hearty good-bye.

Mogoea is about two hundred miles from Kiddikiddi. The "Coromandel" was lying about forty-five miles off, and, as Mr. Marsden wished to visit her, we bore away with all speed, having Enockea and his son Rupee in the boat.

After we had got without the heads, a very heavy squall came suddenly on, and the wind directly foul, we were obliged to bear away for an island about four miles to leeward. In a few moments there was a great sea up, but thro' mercy we reached the island in safety. Here we remained all day and night, and were glad to embrace the rock for shelter. Here, prayer and praise for the first time were offered to the God of Heaven Whose mercies are everlasting, and Whose truth endureth from generation to generation. The storm abated in the evening, and on Sunday morning, November 5th, at six o'clock, we bore away for the "Coromandel." We had a fine breeze, and arrived about eight in the evening. We remained on board till Tuesday, November 7th, when we again made sail for Mogoia.

During our short stay, I went on shore among the natives, with Rupee, Enockea's son, who found some of his relations living there. After embracing him in the most affectionate manner, two women sat down opposite each other and cried, or rather howled, for an hour or more, and cut themselves from the wrists upwards to the shoulders, as regular as you would cut the rind off port to roast it. The blood ran off their finger ends profusely, and their faces and breasts were covered with it. I was glad when the ceremony was over, as I did not like to see it. I afterwards asked them why they did thus; they replied, on account of the love they had for the lad. I answered, "We express our sorrow by inward affection, and by weeping." They replied, "Your love is not so strong as ours; we think little enough to shed our blood to testify the same."

After we had passed the River Thames and entered the Wye te Matta, a stiff breeze set in against us, and we were obliged to put into a well-sheltered creek and wait for a fair

wind. Here we continued two nights and one day. We hung our hammocks on the branch of a tree, and covered them with the boat's sail; but, as there was much rain falling, and our house not being weather-proof, our lodging became very uncomfortable. During our stay, I went into the woods and shot pigeons for our food—on Butler's Island.

Thursday morning, we made sail for Mogoia, and arrived about noon. Here we had to leave the boat, and, as soon as matters could be arranged and natives procured to carry our necessities, we departed by land for Manukau, a settlement about nine miles from Mogoia. We arrived about five o'clock p.m., and were, as usual, received with every mark of gratitude and respect. No Europeans had ever been here before, and everyone, young and old, was eager, if possible, to touch the hem of our garments. The natives are numerous, the land good, the timber fine, and the little naked children ran about like rabbits in a warren. This would be a good place for a missionary settlement, but not equal to Mogoia.

We remained in this place one day and two nights, during which time we engaged in a great deal of interesting conversation with the natives.

The River of Manukau runs into the ocean on the west side of New Zealand, and is separated only by a narrow neck of land about half a mile wide, from Mogoia River on the east side, and also from the Wye te Matta on the north-east side, by the same extent of land.

During our stay, we went down to the heads of the harbour of Manukau, but, as the distance is about twenty miles from the town, we had not sufficient time to say much about the entrance. It appears to be a bar harbour; we sounded inside, and found from four to ten fathoms.

The name of the head chief of this place is Kowow. He appears to be a man of a bold disposition, and a good countenance. He furnished us with pork and potatoes, and did everything he could to serve us during our short visit; and offered his services, and as many of his people as we needed to conduct us to the Kipero; this offer we gladly accepted.

We left Manukow on Saturday for Kepero; our party consisted of about twenty persons. As we passed along, we came to a large volcano mountain down which the path led. When we had ascended the summit, we sat down a little while, both to rest and take a survey of the country.

On this elevated spot we had the opportunity of observing the entrance of Manukow Harbour to the western, and the River Thames on the eastern side of New Zealand.

In the course of three hours, we arrived at the Wyetematta, where we sat down and breakfasted, up which we had to go twenty miles, and Kowow furnished us with a canoe for this purpose. But, as we met with some little impediment on account of the tide, etc., we only reached half way up the river; we were obliged to go on shore, and remain until morning; however, this gave us an opportunity of killing a pig we had with us, and of washing and cleaning ourselves a little for the Sabbath. On this beach, in the open air, I enjoyed as good a night's rest as ever I had in my life.

SUNDAY, Noon, 12th.—We rose very early, performed Divine Service, and proceeded; we arrived at the head of the river about ten a.m., and after that, walked twenty miles in the course of the day. The land we passed over this day is not very good. A little before the going down of the sun, we reached a small village on the west side, near the sea.

These people had never seen a European, and the younger of both sexes were filled with wonder and astonishment. When I pulled off my hairy cap I travelled in, they shouted aloud; I apprehended they conceived my hat formed part of my head. The old chief made a long speech, and said he dreamed white men were coming to see him, the night before. We spent the evening among them in the usual way, in prayer and praise, and conversation, and were treated in the kindest manner possible. We slept among the trees, and in the morning, after many a hearty good wish for our welfare, we departed. This place is called Moodewye. There is also a fine waterfall, fifty to sixty feet deep. The chief's name is Homihamoo.

The natives accompanied us over the sandhills to the sea-shore, and then bid us good-bye, and returned. We walked on the sea beach upwards of twenty miles. This was a very fatiguing march on the sands; and also, we suffered a good deal from thirst, as the day was hot and windy, and no water to be had for sixteen miles. The sandhills reach for sixteen miles to this coast, and very much resembles a deep snow in winter. You behold an immense tract of sand, with a stunted shrub here and there growing through it. The wind whirls about the sand like a cloud; and it is almost impossible to stand or face it in a windy day. In passing along, I sat down on a small, sandy eminence to rest a while, being hungry and

thirsty, and no water to be obtained among these barren sands. All our people, except Mr. Shepherd, lagging a long way behind, I was led to contemplate a little while on the 42nd Psalm, and I can truly affirm I never felt the force and excellence of those pious words of the psalmist in such a manner before, "As the heart panteth for the water brooks, so longeth my soul after Thee, O God. My soul is athirst for God, for the living God; when shall I come and appear," etc., etc. 1 v. and 2 v. I thought our situation was very peculiarly interesting: on the very verge of the world, or at least on the farthest shore that is known, and nearly the Antipodes of England; the tremendous roaring surf, which is seen and heard on this sandy coast many miles; the barren sand hills; the dreary wilderness of New Zealand; surrounded by cannibals; exposed to the heat by day, and the cold dews by night. On reflecting on the dangers we had already passed, and the goodness of the Lord in preserving us amidst innumerable perils, my mind was filled with an awful sense of the majesty of God Who is everywhere present, and fills the universe with His presence. But how comforting to think that he is everywhere present for the comfort and support of His people!

We arrived at the place where we had to turn off inland about four o'clock, and, walking a little way, we halted in a valley between the sand hills, where we found water, and a few heath shrubs with which we made a little shelter for the night. Here we offered up praise and thanksgiving to our adorable Redeemer for all His tender mercies. I rested during the night but very little; I believe through weariness. Mr. Puckey was attacked with rheumatic pains, insomuch that in the morning he was obliged to be carried by natives; however, we had but a short distance to go, say about eight miles, which we accomplished before breakfast.

When we reached Kapooah, a settlement on the banks of the Kepero River, and the residence of the great chief, Teenana, we were received, as at every other place, with every mark of kindness and attention. Here we halted for the day to refresh ourselves, etc. Teenana is an aged man, but of an amazing size, and full of flesh; his head is extraordinarily large, and his beard very thick and long, which gives him a lion-like appearance. Mr. Marsden said he would give twenty guineas for his likeness, if it was possible to obtain it. One would suppose he had sprung from a race of giants. His sons, Paheehorah, Arora, Aronah, Derahranga, and Tyeheest, are all of them very fine large men. We spent the day very com-

fortably, and the old gentleman wished us to sit up all night, that he might have the pleasure of seeing us; of course, this we could not consent to.

On Thursday, November 16th, in the morning, at daylight, they manned a canoe, and proceeded down the river for the heads, but the wind blew strong out, and we were afraid to venture lest we should be blown out to sea; we therefore went on shore at a small village, six miles within the heads. Next morning we started at daylight and sounded the water as we went along, and found from six to fifteen fathoms, but there are three sand shoals lying near the harbour. Our survey, of course, was very superficial; however, from our observations, we were led to believe that there are two, if not three, passages for ships of any burthen. The width between the heads is about five miles, or perhaps a little more.

As the day advanced, the wind began to blow strong out to sea, and we were glad to run into a small bay within the heads, leave our canoe, and return back to the village by land. We remained in this place until Saturday, on account of the weather.

Having now accomplished the objects of our journey, we began to think of home. Mr. Marsden and Mr. Shepherd proposed to return by land to Kidee Kidee, and Mr. Puckey and myself to Mogoia for the boat, and go by sea.

This distance by way of Mogoia, from the village to Kidee Kidee, is three hundred miles, while the way by which Mr. Marsden returned is only one hundred and eighty; this happens on account of the circuitous route of journey.

SATURDAY, noon, 18th.—This morning we rose early, committed each other to the care and protection of our Heavenly Father, and departed; Mr. Puckey and self for Mogoia, Mr. Marsden and Mr. Shepherd for Shukianga, taking with them one of Tenana's sons, and two cookeys to carry their necessaries; and we, on the other hand, had a strong party with us in the canoe.

We arrived at Topooah (Kapua), about noon, and stopped to refresh ourselves, while the tide turned in our favour. Having several hours to spare, we endeavoured to turn them to some account, by conversing with the natives. They were very desirous to know if there was water enough for shipping, and being answered in the affirmative, they were much pleased.

There is plenty of fine timber at Kipperoo, and near the water side. After talking a while about their farms, etc., etc., our conversation turned upon the works of creation; the earth with her productions, the heavens and all the starry host, and and that our God was the Maker of them all. They wished to know if our God was good and kind to us, and sent us plenty of good things. I replied, "He does, and He is a very great God—a very good God, and very kind to all people." They said, "Perhaps he will not be good to New Zealand men!" I answered, "He is, and always will be very good to you, and hath sent us to tell you how much He loves you."

Native: "Your God is a long way off in Europe."

Reply: "Yes, and He is in New Zealand also, and every other place. He made New Zealand men, as well as Europeans; He is the God of black men, as well as of white men."

Native: "Can we see Him?"

Answer: "No, He is a Spirit, and, altho' we cannot see Him, yet He sees everyone, and knows the thoughts and sees the actions of all men, and is good to all; but He loves good men very much, and when they die, their spirits go to live with Him."

Native: "Where is His house for spirits?"

Answer: "Above the sun in Heaven; a beautiful and happy place."

Native: "Shall you live there after you are dead?"

Answer: "Yes; and if you love one another, and leave off fighting and killing each other, God will send good men to you to learn you the way to that happy place."

They answered: "Your conversation is very good, but you only joke with us; we shall all be dead before any white men come to Kipperoo. Kai ore ka ki tea, we shall never see them."

This was such an appeal to our feelings, that we scarcely knew how or what to answer. "The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few; pray ye, therefore, the Lord of the harvest that He would send forth labourers into His harvest."

It being now six o'clock in the evening, and the tide flowing, and very fine, I expressed my desire to proceed; they prayed us to stop till morning, but, seeing my determination,

they came forward in a very noble manner, manned a canoe, gave us a large hog and three baskets of potatoes, and we took our leave and departed.

We proceeded up the river as fast as possible, and pursued our course until one o'clock in the morning, when we arrived at the path that leadeth to the Wye te Matta. The night being very fine, we made tea to refresh us, and then lay down on the bank of the river to rest. We arose at six, and the natives of Kopooah returned to their place, and we proceeded on our journey. We had now twenty miles to walk before we reached the village on the banks of the Wye te Matta, and, though we were much exhausted, yet we performed the whole distance with no other refreshment than a little water from the creeks as we passed.

In the course of this march we had some very heavy showers, and a deal of water to wade through, so that when we reached the Wye te Matta we were much fatigued and worn down. But, after a good meal and a little rest, we felt comforted and encouraged to proceed. Having procured a canoe, we again embarked, and were on the water until one in the morning, when the natives became tired and sleepy; we therefore drew to shore for refreshment and rest.

In the morning, after breakfast and prayer, we made sail for Mogoia, and arrived about two p.m.

Enackee and his people received us with the accustomed kindness; we found the boat and other things that had been left in their charge, perfectly safe. We tarried with them till ten o'clock the next day, and, if I may be allowed the expression, we were loaded with kindness. We bade them adieu on Tuesday, November 20th, about ten o'clock, with a promise to visit them again at the earliest opportunity; and, by the blessing of God, we reached Kiddee Kiddee on Thursday about noon, very much fatigued, having had to row all Wednesday night.

This is an abstract of our journey of between seven and eight hundred miles, and if you find the narrative worth reading, I shall be amply paid for writing it down.

I would observe, by way of conclusion, that, so far as I am able to judge, the principal sins to which these heathens are addicted, are: pride, lust, and cruelty. They give unbounded limits to their lusts, and the first thing a chief will offer you as a compliment, is a fine woman.

When we arrived at Enackee's, he wished to furnish me with a wife during my stay. I told him I was tabbood, and also a priest, and if I committed such wickedness my God would destroy me. I further explained to him, in the best manner I was able, the wickedness of having more than one wife, and that the great God was angry with all men that had many wives. I asked him if he was not afraid of God's anger. He replied, "No; our God is not angry with us, and your God does not live in New Zealand."

I answered: "Our God is a Spirit, and lives in New Zealand as well as Europe, and that He understands all that we are saying, and I was very much afraid that He would be angry at such bad discourse."

He said: "If you are afraid of His anger, I will say no more."

They are cruel and insatiable in their revenge, and war is their delight. This may account, in some measure, for their cannibalism. Although covered with lice and filth, they are as proud as Lucifer, and they look upon their cookies as mere dogs, and not of half so much value. Oh! the dreadful chains of darkness with which Satan has bound these unhappy people, "Lo, these many years!" Who has any bowels of compassion—who? In God's name, and for Christ's sake, let us shew it by endeavouring to send the glorious Gospel unto them, and earnestly praying that it may dispel the darkness from their minds, as the material sun chaseth away the shades of night.

Copied and sent by Mr. Marsden,
December 4th, 1820.

SUNDAY, DECEMBER 3rd, 1820.—Divine Service in Mr. Hall's house; administered the Holy Sacrament. Afternoon, accompanied Mr. Marsden to Rangheehoo, and from thence to H.M.S. "Dromedary." Captain Skinner had sent for me to go on board, and take the depositions of eighteen witnesses against four men—soldiers—who killed a sailor named William Aldridge. It appeared in the evidence that one man was the principal perpetrator of this horrid deed. He was beating a native, and Aldridge went to rescue the native, when he was stabbed with a bayonet in four places—which caused his death. I committed them by warrant to Captain Skinner, to be delivered up, and to take their trial at Port Jackson. This business detained me on board until Tuesday morning, when the "Dromedary" weighed her anchor, and sailed away for Port Jackson with an excellent cargo of spars. Mr. Marsden, at this time,

was quite well. I took an affectionate leave of him, and returned to Kiddee Kiddee. The remainder part of this week I have been employed in the general business of the Mission.

Our settlement enjoys peace and tranquility, and the natives employed go on well.

SUNDAY, DECEMBER 10th, 1820.—Divine Service in the small house erected for the blacksmith's shop.

MONDAY, DECEMBER 11th, 1820.—Writing the whole day.

TUESDAY.—Reaping barley.

WEDNESDAY.—Work in the garden.

THURSDAY.—Reaping wheat.

FRIDAY.—In the bush, looking after the cattle.

SATURDAY MORNING.—Setting up grain. Afternoon, in the study.

At this time we are on the most friendly terms with the natives of our own, and the surrounding districts, and those employed by us go on in their stations exceeding well.

SUNDAY, DECEMBER 17th, 1820.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY, 18th DECEMBER.—Writing.

SATURDAY, DECEMBER 23rd, 1820.—The remainder of this week I have been busy in reaping the harvest. In the evening we observed a brig going into the harbour at Par Roa, and, as we were anxiously looking out for the "Active," and, supposing it to be her, Mr. Willam Hall, Mr. King, and self, set off immediately for Par Roa, and, as we passed along, we felt confirmed in our opinion that it was the "Active." On our arrival, which was not until after dark, we were much disappointed in finding the vessel to be the "Macquarie," brig, bound for Taheiti. This vessel was bought at Port Jackson by Mr. Eager, for Pomarrhei, King of Taheite, who agreed to repay Mr. Eager in pork. I understood from Mr. Henry, the captain, the vessel and stores cost five thousand pounds. He further stated that it was the King's intention to trade for himself, by taking his commodities to Port Jackson and other markets, in his own vessel. We remained on board all night, as it was now growing late. Captain Henry entertained us in the kindest manner, and accommodated us to the best of his power.

Monday being Christmas Day, we arose very early, and I set off for Kiddee Kiddee, and reached home about noon. In the afternoon, performed Divine Service and administered the Holy Sacrament. The natives who attended church behaved very well. I endeavoured, according to my ability, to explain to them the meaning of Christmas Day, and the great love of God in sending His dear Son to redeem us miserable sinners. Oh, may these heathens soon be brought to understand that unto them is born a Saviour Who is Christ the Lord. The remainder of the week I have been busy in the harvest field. I hope there will be a harvest of souls as well as of grain, by and by, which shall safely be gathered into the granary of the Lord.

During the last week, I have been very unkindly treated by Mr. F. Hall, a thing I never expected to experience. I had a piece of a wrapper that was round the bale of cloth brought out with us from England for use of schools. But, as there are no schools at present, part of the cloth has been disposed of in a very useful and beneficial manner, by clothing our native workmen, who are very fond of European garments.

He expressed his dissatisfaction several times among the workmen, of my having the wrapper. The wrapper was about two yards, and the value of it could not be more than 1/-, as it was nothing more than a bit of canvas. I sent for Mr. Hall and asked him what was the matter about the canvas; he replied, nothing at all, but he wished it to go into the store. I immediately sent it to his house, and replied: "I am applying it to no other purpose but the good of the settlement."

As I have no barn, and I am obliged to thresh out of doors, I made with it, and several mats of my own, a floor to preserve the grain from being full of dirt. I further asked Mr. Hall if I was not at liberty to draw from the Society's store such things as might be necessary, to carry on such part of the labour and objects of the Society as I might have in hand. He told me I was at liberty to draw upon the store, but under certain restrictions; what those restrictions are, I am at a loss to know. However, this I do testify, that I have faithfully applied all and every part of the Society's property, as well as my own labour and time, to the temporal and eternal interests of these poor heathens. I should be glad to be informed what the Society's property is for, if it is not for the benefit of the natives.

SUNDAY, DECEMBER 31st.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY, TUESDAY and WEDNESDAY.—Busy in the harvest field with my natives.

THURSDAY, JANUARY 4th, 1821.—This day the brig “Active” arrived at Tipponah, with supplies for the settlement.

FRIDAY, JANUARY 5th, 1821.—This morning, I set off for Ranghu Hoo after the stores, accompanied by Mr. F. Hall, and, with the assistance of our regular natives, we succeeded in getting them to Kiddee Kiddee in the course of the day.

SATURDAY, JANUARY 6th.—Looking after the stores in the morning; in the afternoon we were much alarmed by fire. One of the carpenters’ sons, named Wm. Puekey, a boy of about fourteen years of age, set fire to the fern, which had like to have burned our standing wheat, the day being windy and the fern high. The fire raged with great fury, so that, with the assistance of a great many natives, we had great difficulty in saving the corn, and putting it out. Mr. F. Hall had some barley burned, but not much.

SUNDAY, JANUARY 7th, 1821.—Divine Service, morning and evening. Administered the Holy Sacrament in the morning.

MONDAY, JANUARY 8th, 1821.—We were visited to-day by Captain Graham, of the ship “Catherine,” Captain Thompson, of the “Active,” and Mr. Wm. Hall, and Mr. King. They remained with us till after dinner, and then returned.

The original in the “Hocken” Collection, was probably sent to the C.M.S., London, by Mr. Marsden, as it is minuted, Recd. July 30/21, Com. Aug. 13th/21., Ack. Aug. 20/21.

Rev. J. Butler to Rev. S. Marsden.

KIDEE KIDEE,

Jan. 9th, 1821.

Rev. and Dear Sir,

With pleasure I inform you that Capt. Thompson, by whom also you will receive this letter, brought us down a seasonable supply of stores, as we were quite out at the time of his arrival. Help often comes when hope is gone. Since your departure, we have been on the most peaceable and friendly terms with our natives, and nothing seems wanting but courage and exertion to go on in our great and glorious work. However, there are many difficulties to contend with; one is the great want of animal food, occasioned principally by the shipping. There are five ships, besides the “Active,” at this time within the harbour, and it is said there are twelve others without, and may be expected at Bay of Islands every day. I need not say to you, that like

the locust in the Land of Egypt, they devour everything: on account of their dealing in muskets and powder. You are fully aware of the evil of these things, as they prevent us from obtaining supplies from the natives, and render pork and potatoes very scarce and dear.

There is no timber at present at Kiddee Kiddee, toward building me a house, and the old American house stands as you left it, save that there are a few shingles on one side. George Harrison is gone to the Coromandel; he went immediately after you left. Enclosed you have his account.

The whole of this last month, I have been very busy in the harvest field, but, from the sourness of the land, and the long continuance of the dry weather, our crops are very thin. I have reaped Mr. Shepherd's barley at Ohkula, but it is not winnowed. The wheat I intend to reap next week. I hope you will give my Christian respects to Mr. Shepherd, as I shall not have time to write to him by this conveyance.

The cattle are all doing remarkably well. Messrs. Kemp and Hall have taken to themselves the heifer of the black cow we brought down with us in the "General Gates." She has a fine calf, and Mrs. Kemp makes butter. It is agreed upon that I shall have the mother, viz., the black cow, and calf for my use. We mean to write Mr. Pratt, as well as yourself, on this subject, and what Mr. Pratt, or you, Sir, may be pleased to charge, we shall be thankful and willing to pay. As you were pleased to write me a letter permitting any person to have a cow or two, at a certain price, accordingly, Mr. Bean, Mr. Fairburn, Mr. F. Hall, and myself, have chosen one each from among the heifers you sent per "Active" last time. Please to charge the same to our respective accounts. And now, dear Sir, permit me to say it is my earnest prayer and fervent hope that you are at this time in perfect health, and happy in the bosom of your family, and your children like olive branches round your table. May the candle of the Lord ever shine upon you, upon Mrs. Marsden, and upon your children. May the Lord be unto you as the dew unto Israel, and pour upon you the continual dew of His blessing.

I doubt not, that, long ere this, you have called your flock around the Lord's Table, again and again, and that He has met you there and made Himself "known to you, in breaking of bread," and you have found the Lord Jesus "precious to your souls." Although absent in body, I have been with you in spirit, beseeching the Lord to give you many souls for your hire as seals to your ministry. Please to give my sincere respects to all friends, and greet them in my name. Mrs. Butler joins with me in the sincerest love to yourself, Mrs. Marsden, and to all your family, and believe me to be,

Dear Sir, .

Yours very affectionately,
JOHN BUTLER.

To the Rev. Samuel Marsden, Parramatta.

P.S.—I hope you will have the goodness to write to me by every opportunity, and send me as many newspapers as you can conveniently spare.

TUESDAY, JANUARY 9th, 1821.—Writing in the morning; afternoon, reaping barley.

I am truly sorry to see our building department go on so slow; the carpenters are very dilatory. Provisions for the natives are scarce, and, being badly looked after, they are very idle.

There is not a single log of timber at Kiddee Kiddee at this time, and Mr. Wm. Hall, whose province it is to look after this business, is very inactive, neither does he exert himself in a manner as he ought to do, altho' he is furnished with suitable means for that purpose. I acknowledge, with Rev. S. Marsden, that Mr. Wm. Hall is an industrious man, and that he is well qualified to carry on and do a great deal in his line of business. I am aware of Mr. Marsden's prejudice in favour of Mr. Hall, and am (with him) persuaded that Mr. Hall will go through thick and thin to obtain and accomplish his object; but then it is when there is a great deal of this world's goods to be obtained by it. He has a pair of natives sawing timber, (Is money the Christian's God?) for one of the whalers, although I am with my family (as it were), living out of doors, and not a single foot of timber at present toward a house for me to live in. I am obliged at last to turn carpenter for myself; I have engaged two pair of native sawyers to go into the wood about three and a half miles distant, to cut down and saw timber to build some outhouses, and fence in the spot, if I never get a house erected upon it.

You will see by my journal how I have been obliged to spend my time in New Zealand; I confess it has been spent at times in a way not very consistent or agreeable to myself as a minister; nevertheless, you must be fully aware that in a heathen land like this, without a single habitation, there is a great necessity for everyone to put his shoulder to the wheel, in order to get the machine in motion. For this purpose, I have tugged at the oar night and day; for this purpose, I have gone to the wood to fall the timber; and to the pit to dig the clay; for this end, I have been both ploughman and vine-dresser, stock-keeper and herdsman; and happy should I be if, by any means, I could forward the great object of our Mission. But when I see those who are appointed to those manual exercises lag and grow careless, negligent and inactive, it very much hurts my mind and spirits.

With respect to the New Zealand language, I think I am getting on pretty well, but not so well as I could wish, or as I might if I had a place to dwell in, and thereby be more at leisure to pursue my own work. I intend to begin a regular

vocabulary as soon as possible, and to follow the English language, in order to make it complete and expressive. There are things innumerable in the civil world which these natives have no name for, and, as they are introduced among them, I am of opinion they ought to retain their proper name. I think this method will facilitate, and make the translating the Holy Scriptures more easy.

I now turn from complaining to rejoicing. While I am writing these lines, I have seven natives in sight, reaping down a field of barley, which twelve months ago was over-run with fern. It looks like the dawn of civilization, and is certainly a pleasing sight; and I firmly believe their bodies and souls will improve under proper culture, as well as their country.

The remaining part of the week I have been with my natives in the harvest field.

SUNDAY, JANUARY 14th.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY, JANUARY 15th, 1821.—This morning I set off to Kikati oh Roah, with seven natives, Messrs F. Hall, Kemp, and three carpenters, to fell timber and commence sawing for my house. After we had cleared the brushwood a little and just felled two trees, we received orders to stop from Rewah, the chief, saying that the timber was not paid for. However, we considered this wood as belonging to the Society, but we were obliged to comply, until matters could be explained. When we returned, I endeavoured to enter into a full explanation of the business. I sent for Rewah and his two brothers, and we had a long talk about the agreement for the land and timber belonging to the Society. Rewah contended that Kekataah Roah was not included in the grant, but I said it was; however, as no compact can be binding when there is no law or power to put it into execution, I was obliged to give him sundry articles before I could pacify him; an account of which you will find entered in the monthly returns.

TUESDAY, 16th.—Busy in the harvest field.

WEDNESDAY, 17th.—Taken with a bowel complaint, which lasted several days. The attack was very severe, and brought me very low, but the Lord helped me.

THURSDAY, JANUARY 18th, 1821. — Mrs. Kemp was safely delivered of a fine boy.

THURSDAY, FRIDAY and SATURDAY. — Employed about the settlement, as I was very poorly, and not able to go into the field.

MONDAY, 22nd JANUARY, 1821.—This morning I set off, accompanied by Messrs. F. Hall, Bean, and Fairburn and ten natives, to cut down and bring home some wheat which was sown by Mr. Shepherd, at Ohkaotoi, a settlement about two miles from Kidee Kidee, while he was in New Zealand, and who has returned to Port Jackson with Mr. Marsden (I believe) to get a wife. New Zealand is a dreadful place for single men. I firmly believe that all the single men that have been employed by Mr. Marsden have committed fornication among the heathen!! This is also notoriously common among all sailors and captains of ships. I am exceedingly glad that my son, Samuel Butler, is at Port Jackson at Mr. Marsden's, with his little flock of New Zealanders: and, altho' he is young, I hope he will marry before he comes down to New Zealand.

TUESDAY, 23rd JANUARY, 1821.—Busy in the harvest field with my natives.

WEDNESDAY, 24th JANUARY.—Went again to Kekaatah Roah, accompanied by Messrs. F. Hall, Puckey, Bean and Fairburn, and ten natives, to fell timber, and commence for my house. We felled eight large trees, from seventy to ninety feet without a branch, and about four feet (or rather more) in diameter, as well as many of a lesser sort, and a great deal of underwood.

Food is very scarce, but I hope I shall get a dwelling by and by.

Mr. William Hall, I apprehend, has written to the Society about difficulties that stand in the way to getting up buildings at Kidee Kidee.

However painful the task, I feel it my duty to say that Mr. Wm. Hall does not come forward with that energy and zeal which he (a builder), ought to do.

THURSDAY, 25th.—In the morning, in the garden; afternoon, writing.

FRIDAY and SATURDAY.—Writing and reading.

Copied and sent to the Society by the "Coromandel,"

Jany. 5th, 1821.

SUNDAY, JANUARY 28th, 1821.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

SATURDAY, FEBRUARY 3rd.—This week I have been very poorly, and able to do but little.

The carpenters this week have done but very little; two days they have been at work for themselves. Mr. Wm. Hall has not been at Kidee Kidee to do anything the last month. My farming natives go on exceeding well.

SUNDAY, FEBRUARY 4th.—Divine Service, morning and evening. Administered the Holy Sacrament.

MONDAY, FEBRUARY 5th.—Held a committee at Kidee Kidee.

TUESDAY.—Gardening. The remaining part of the week employed in the general business of the Mission. The carpenters had done very little this week. Little jobs about the settlement have occupied the whole week.

The natives employed by me in general work go on exceeding well.

On Wednesday, Rewah, the chief, and most natives in our district, set off on a war expedition toward the south part of the island.

SUNDAY, FEBRUARY 11th.—Divine Service, morning and evening. Churching Mrs. Kemp, and christened her child—Henry Kemp.

MONDAY, FEBRUARY 12th, 1821.—This morning, Mr. F. Hall and the carpenters, with some natives, set off for Cowah Cowah to purchase timber to carry on the building department.

SATURDAY, 17th FEBRUARY, 1821.—This week I have been very poorly with a bowel complaint, and able to do but very little. My natives whom I employ in fencing, farming, etc., etc., go on very well considering; I have no one to go on with them, nor any to superintend them but myself, and I cannot always be among them. The natives in our district that are at home, are very civil to us. There has been but very little sickness among the natives, this summer, at least, as far as I am able to learn. When they are ill they will apply for tea and sugar, etc., but at the same time they will tell us that it is our God which afflicts them. I have many times endeavoured, and sometimes they seem to acquiesce in what I advance, to convince them of the absurdity of this notion. The shipping are still gleaning up all the hogs in these parts. Sailors are coming to the settlement continually, and they traverse the country far and wide for hogs.

On Wednesday evening last, I felt myself under the disagreeable necessity of refusing to entertain two officers belonging to ships ("Saracen" and "Cumberland"), who were on their way to Shukeeangah after pork. They had muskets and powder with them, to pay for such things as they might meet with to suit them. Myself being very poorly, Mrs. Butler informed them that muskets and powder, for the purpose of trading with the natives, could not be suffered in our house, as it was contrary to the rules of the Society, and further, by their thus sweeping the country, they very much distressed our Mission.

Mr. King was here at dinner time on his way to Shukeeangah, to purchase (if possible), some pork for himself and Mrs. Kendall. The officers asked if Mr. King was at Kidee Kidee, or gone forward. What Mr. King had to do with them, whether anything or nothing, I am not able to say, only it appeared they expected his company.

SUNDAY, 18th FEBRUARY, 1821.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY.—Held a committee, and received trade for a ration of pork, and trade for three months—potatoes for my family. Captain Wyer, of the ship "Rambler," came to make an affidavit before me concerning some convicts who stowed themselves away in his ship at Van Dieman's Land, and who had run away since his arrival in New Zealand, taking with them one of the ship's boats. Wrote a letter to Captain Ker, Brend and Wyer concerning the taking away two men (sailors) from New Zealand, left by the "James," whaler.

TUESDAY MORNING. — Went to Ohkular (Okura), accompanied by Mr. Kemp, to purchase a canoe, and to bring away three logs of timber. In the afternoon, working with my natives in putting up fencing.

WEDNESDAY, THURSDAY and FRIDAY.—Occupied in the same employment. The carpenters this week have been to Kekatooh Roah to fell timber into the creek, in order to be ready against a flood. But their general conduct is become bad, and they are proud, saucy, and idle withal. I have received a great deal of personal abuse from them this week; one of them refused to sharpen my saw, and the other gave me very insolent language without cause.

SATURDAY MORNING.—Made a stable door; afternoon, study.

SUNDAY, FEBRUARY 25th, 1821.—Preached at Kidee Kidee; could not go to Ranghee Hoo on account of the weather.

MONDAY, FEBRUARY 26th.—Made a gate for my garden.

TUESDAY MORNING. — Captain Wyer, of the ship “Rambler,” came to Kidee Kidee, bringing the four runaway convicts, with intent to leave them at Kidee Kidee, but this I could by no means consent to, as I had no means of restraining their persons, or of correcting their vices. I told him that he must deliver them up to H.M. Ship the “Coromandel,” at the River Thames. Captain Wyer replied, “I am quite ignorant of the River Thames, and the place where the “Coromandel” is lying, and I do not like to risk the ship by going into a strange place for the sake of four runaway convicts.” In order to obviate this evil, I offered to accompany him to the River Thames, and pilot the ship into Coromandel Harbour. To this he agreed, and, as soon as I had packed up some linen, etc., etc., we set off for the ship “Rambler,” and got on board at dusk. The ship men weighed anchor at five o’clock on Wednesday morning, and we stood out for sea. When we reached the outer entrance of the harbour, we espied a ship in the offing, and immediately bore away for her. On coming up with her, we found her to be the “North American,” from Nantucket, commanded by Captain Wyer’s brother. The Captain came on board and saluted his brother, and dined on board the “Rambler.” A calm came on in the afternoon, which lasted all night, and part of Thursday, so that we made but little progress; toward evening a strong breeze sprang up, and on Friday morning we reached the mouth of the Thames. It now came on to blow strong and directly against us, so that we were tacking and working the ship all day, but gained very little ground; night came on, and the weather looked very hazy, and there was great danger lest we should get upon rocks; the Captain, therefore, thought it prudent to stand out to sea for the night, lest we should get upon the rocks in the dark. The wind continued against us all the night, and on Saturday morning we were a good distance from land. The wind still continued against us, but we endeavoured to gain the ground we had lost by working the ship, but at three in the afternoon we were further off our mark than in the morning. The wind, however, changed at four and became fair, and we stood in for the Thames. The evening came on very dark, with mizzling rain, and the Captain would not go in. He therefore put the ship about and stood away for the Bay of

Islands, and declared he would not go another step for all the convicts in the world.

Sunday morning at six we were within five league of Cape Bret; the winds were light, and our progress slow. At ten, the Captain, contrary to the advice of myself and his officers, determined to land the prisoners and leave them to their fate; accordingly, a boat was manned and armed, and Mr. Reeves, the first officer of the ship, was sent away with them to put them on shore, which he did, landing them on the beach near Cape Bret. The boat returned to the ship at half past one o'clock, at which time the ship was within the heads, and within sixteen miles of the settlement. I expressed a desire to be off, and Captain Wyer ordered a boat to be manned immediately. I bid him good-bye, and sailed away for Tippoonah, and arrived safe about half past four. We went to Mr. Hall's, and he gave the boatmen some refreshment, and they returned to the ship. I went to see all our friends at Tippoonah, and slept at Mr. Hall's.

MONDAY MORNING, MARCH 5th.—We rose early, breakfasted, and set off for Kiddee Kiddee, and arrived at noon, thankful to God for all His mercies. Afternoon, held the monthly committee, etc., etc.

TUESDAY, MARCH 6th.—Writing the whole day.

WEDNESDAY.—Set off to visit the saltman, and found him going on very well. Just before I arrived at his place, a native had brought two of the four prisoners which had been landed by Captain Wyer. The chief considered them as his property, and he was then in the very act of holding a consultation about killing them. I immediately interfered, and begged they would hear what I had to say on the subject. They replied: "They are King George's slaves, and very bad men." I told him they were so, but then they must not kill them by any means; if they did, King George would be very angry, and I was very angry at such cruelty, and moreover, that the great God would be very angry indeed with them. After a great deal of polemical discourse, their passions abated, and they agreed not to kill them; but the chief who had them in possession, said they should go back and stop at his place and work for him four months, and then he would give them up to go on board any ship that would take them. He further stated that if they worked well he would be very kind to them, and give them plenty of food. I told him I should be glad to find his words true. I then made him a present of a small

tokee, and some large fish-hooks, which pleased him much. The men stood by and begged hard for their lives, and of me to do all I could for them; this I did, for my very heart ached for them. I never saw two more miserable objects in my life. I endeavoured to pass by all their iniquity in order to feel as a Christian for their misery. I counselled them to the best of my power, and advised them to go willingly with the chief, until something could be done for them. It was now evening, and they went with the chief in his canoe to remain with him. I purchased fifty bags of potatoes from them, and set off for Kiddee Kiddee, and did not get home till three in the morning, as the distance was more than twenty miles, and we had a heavy load.

THURSDAY.—Writing the whole day.

FRIDAY and SATURDAY.—Reading and writing.

Sunday morning, at seven o'clock, set off for Ranghu Hoo to preach, administer the Holy Sacrament, and to christen Mr. Wm. Hall's child.

I had a very unpleasant journey, as the wind was very strong against us, and a heavy sea going; however, I arrived before eleven o'clock; the natives worked exceeding hard, and did their utmost.

The wind continued to increase all day, and the rain in the afternoon came down in torrents. The storm continued to rage most of the night, but the morning became fair and pleasant, and after a general visit through the settlement, I returned to Kiddee Kiddee.

TUESDAY, 13th MARCH, 1821.—Went on board the "North American" to purchase a few necessaries for my family. Mr. Hall's men stole a bottle of treacle from my boat.

WEDNESDAY.—Mr. King received gunpowder from Captain Wyer, Mr. Hall ditto.

Set on four natives to prepare land for wheat.

THURSDAY.—Among the sawyers rolling timber, etc., etc. We have now four pair of sawyers at Kidee Kiddee, who are victualled at our place, together with eight other natives who look after goats, cattle, farm, etc. As Mrs. Butler has no female servant, our hands are pretty full in cooking and looking after them. We are still on exceeding good terms

with the natives of our district; and the natives who are employed by us go on exceeding well.

FRIDAY.—Employed in the garden.

SATURDAY.—In the morning among sawyers; afternoon, reading.

SUNDAY, MARCH 18th.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY, TUESDAY and WEDNESDAY.—Employed in the field with my natives in burning the fern, and preparing land for wheat.

In the evening of Wednesday, the brig “Hope,” Captain John Grimes, came into the harbour, bringing stores for the settlement, and by which my son, Samuel Butler, returned from Port Jackson to New Zealand, as also Mr. Shepherd and his wife, and John Lee.

The above brig was bound for Otaheite, having on board Messrs. Haywood and Wilson and their wives, returning to Taheiti. The brig, I understood, was to load with cocoanut oil at Taheiti, and proceed immediately to England. Mr. F. Hall and myself set off in the morning with a punt, and a crew of natives, after the stores. We completed this business in the course of the day.

SUNDAY, MARCH 25th.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY.—Went on board the brig to bid good-bye to the Taheiti missionaries.

TUESDAY, WEDNESDAY, and THURSDAY.—Employed with my natives in fencing.

FRIDAY.—Went with a chief of Kiddee Kiddee to see his farm, and to encourage him in his cultivation.

SATURDAY.—Employed in reading and writing.

SUNDAY, APRIL 1st.—Divine Service, morning and evening; administered the Holy Sacrament.

MONDAY, APRIL 2nd.—Held a committee on general business. In the evening, a boat belonging to the “Sarah,” Captain Munroe, visited our settlement, bringing a box from England, containing a parcel for Mr. Kendall, and sundry registers from the Society, also a letter from the Revd. Josiah Pratt.

TUESDAY and WEDNESDAY.—Gardening.

THURSDAY.—Writing and reading.

FRIDAY.—Building a goat shed.

SATURDAY.—Writing and reading.

In the course of this week I have been grossly insulted by Mr. Bean, one of the carpenters from Port Jackson. The native sawyers who are cutting timber for my house go on exceeding well at present; Mrs. Butler cooks for them, and I give them every encouragement in my power.

My natives who farm, garden, fence, etc., etc., go on remarkably well; they are very expert in pulling a boat, and in almost all out-door work. There is a great and manifest change for the better among all the natives of this large district since we came among them; the darkness of their night, I hope, is nearly at an end. The dawn of day is appearing, the general aspect of things, like the reddening streaks of the east, fortell the approach of the glorious Son of Righteousness to illuminate and bless this dark, benighted people. I have one observation to make respecting men that are sent from Port Jackson from time to time. It may be thought a hard saying, but it is what my conscience will not let me omit declaring, that in general they are such that ought not to be employed in any Mission, as they are far more likely to bring a curse than a blessing. Mr. Marsden has sent down ———, an emancipated convict, to go with the bullocks, and farm for the settlement. He was bullock driver at Wangaroah for Captain Skinner, in getting a cargo for the “Dromedary,” and, I have no doubt, answered the purpose well; but that he has committed fornication among the natives I have had frank confession from his own mouth. I pointed out to him the dreadful evil of such conduct. What soundness can there be in the body, while so many members are corrupted? Or what concord hath Christ with Belial? With all deference to so great and good a man as Mr. Marsden, I must say that in his warmth and zeal for the good of New Zealand, he is not particular enough in his choice of instruments to carry on the great and good work. When I named those things unto him, he replied: “We cannot introduce civilization, without introducing the evils of civil life!”

My son, Samuel Butler, is busily employed among the natives, and improving them in every possible way.

COPY FROM THE "HOCKEN" COLLECTION, DUNEDIN.

H.M.S. "COROMANDEL,"

Wujou Harbour,
River Thames,

4th April, 1821.

Mr. Butler,
Sir,

The bearer of this letter, Chief Timarangi, has promised to provide a cargo of one hundred and twenty spars of the kourie timber fit for top-masts for His Majesty's navy, from ten to thirteen faths. long, and free from knots, if possible, but particularly so below six feet from the upper end of the spar.

The spars of sixty feet ought to be trimmed to eighteen inches; sixty-six feet to nineteen inches; seventy-two feet to twenty-one inches, and seventy-eight feet to twenty-three inches square, but the chief can only be trusted to take off the bark. He says he will have them ready for trimming at Wangatoodu Harbour against the time a ship arrives at that harbour, sent by the Navy Board to take them in. He may afterwards provide some spars of less dimensions in case they may be wanted to fill up stowage—for one half of the number he is to be paid with muskets, and for the other half with axes.

The first two spars he lands at Wangatoodu should be well examined in every particular in dimensions, knots, and quality, as we have found numbers of them when nearly trimmed, partly decayed.

It would be doing the Government a service if you could spare Mr. Hall and Mr. Puckey, or either of them for a few days, to examine these spars, in order that they might point out to the chief any defect, either in size or in quality, and give him directions for his guidance in future.

When the chief informs you he has collected one fourth of the above number, and that you find that he can procure the rest with tolerable facility—have the goodness to acquaint the Honble. Commissioners of the Navy with it by the first conveyance direct to England, and also to write to them through the Sydney Post Office, besides acquainting the Governor in Chief at Sydney with the number of spars already provided by the chief Timarangi, and the prospect of his providing a whole cargo at Wangatoodu, and that I begged to request His Excellency would be pleased to forward your information to the Honble. Navy Board; but previous to your writing, it would be proper that the number of spars then collected should be well examined. Some of the kourie spars when felled, are from $2\frac{1}{2}$ to 3 and $3\frac{1}{2}$ feet thick. Off such spars the chief might be trusted to trim 2, 3, and 4 inches, which would make them swim much lighter, the outside sap being the worst and heaviest part of the timber. Mr. Hall, on seeing the spars, would be able to describe how much the chief might venture to trim off, according to their size. I feel authorised in writing so full on this subject, having been instructed by the Navy Board to ask every assistance from the missionaries, that it was in their power to afford.

I have been grievously annoyed and retarded in procuring the timber by the aversion of the natives (on whose ground the timber grew) to work. My men are very much fagged, dragging the timber in cold, frosty rivers. We have been out of bread since 20th of March; it is likely I must go to Port Jackson for a supply of provisions. The

natives will only sell pigs for muskets and powder, which I am determined they shall not get; they say, if not, we can get the muskets and powder for masts from the missionaries at the Bay of Islands. I shall begin to load about the middle of this month, and sail about the latter end of May. I hope you will insist on Timorang's (Te Morenga) exerting himself to procure the timber, otherwise tell him King George will be very angry, and that he will not get the sword and cock't hat, I had promised him. Adieu.

I am, Sir,

Your most obedt.,

JAS. DOWNIE,

Master Comg.

To Mr. Butler,

Chief Missionary, Bay of Islands.

SUNDAY, APRIL 8th.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY, 9th, 1821.—Mr. Hill, Mr. Samuel Butler, and self went into the bush with our natives to collect our cattle, and to examine them. We had the satisfaction of seeing them looking exceeding well.

TUESDAY, 10th APRIL, 1821.—I set out, accompanied by Mr. F. Hall, on a journey to Wyemattee. As nearly twelve months had passed since I had last visited this large native settlement, I felt desirous of seeing them again, especially at the present moment, as it is now their harvest, in order to satisfy myself of the quantity of sweet potatoes and Indian corn raised by them this year. Moreover, as Wyemattee and Kiddee Kiddee are settlements belonging to one tribe, I feel it an imperative duty to go round this large district as often as I have opportunity, to encourage them to habits of industry, to point out the advantages thereof, and to instruct them in every possible way. Nothing tends more to conciliate their affections, and to gain their confidence and esteem than such visits. We had five natives with us to carry our necessities and food, trade, etc., etc. We arrived in the evening, and were received with every possible mark of respect; poor creatures, they seemed over-rejoiced to see us. We informed them we were hungry, and they immediately began to prepare some sweet potatoes, while we boiled some water for tea. We had some cold pork with us, and we sat down and made a hearty supper. Afterwards, we had a great deal of conversation with them about their farms, their families, the goodness of God in giving them such an abundant crop of potatoes, the evils of war, and the blessings of peace, and at the same time

we endeavoured (if possible) to sow one grain of spiritual instruction. It being late, and ourselves weary, we informed them we wished to lie down. They remained very silent during prayers, and we then wrapped ourselves up in our greatcoats and laid ourselves down on some bullrushes to rest. A great many natives sat round about us, who kept talking about us and our country people, more than half the night. I slept soundly until daylight, when I awoke. I looked round me, and beholding the natives, two or three in one place, and four or five in another, I thought they very much resembled a flock of sheep in the field. We breakfasted between six and seven o'clock, had prayers, and proceeded to visit the whole settlement. At our departure from our resting place we made them a present of some fish-hooks, and they went to their work. We had a most fatiguing day, and we did not get through the whole settlement until the going down of the sun. But we had the gratification of finding a much larger quantity of Indian corn and sweet potatoes than was given last year. Everywhere we were received with equal kindness, and everyone seemed eager to shake hands with us, and to accommodate us with the best he had. We distributed a few fish-hooks among them at every place we came to. It being evening, and we being weary and almost stunned with their shouting and noise, we began to look for a place of retirement; we determined, therefore, to proceed on our journey about three miles into a wood in order to be alone.

We arrived at our intended lodging a little after dark, and having kindled a fire, we proceeded to cook our supper, which consisted of two fine pigeons which we had shot in passing through a wood in the morning, and sweet potatoes; these, with some tea, afforded us a very refreshing meal. Our natives gathered plenty of fern tops for our bed, and after supper and prayer we laid ourselves down in this place to rest. Our natives collected a large quantity of wood and made a great fire, in order to keep off the night air. As rest is sweet to the weary man, so labour softens every bed, and on a few fern tops in the wood, I experienced the truth of the above remark, for I enjoyed a most refreshing night's rest. In the morning we arose at daylight, got our breakfast, and then proceeded on our way to Kiddee Kiddee, where we arrived in safety about six in the evening, thankful for all our mercies.

FRIDAY.—Have done but very little.

SATURDAY.—Employed in reading the whole day.

SUNDAY, APRIL 15th, 1821.—Divine Service, morning and evening. Several natives attended and behaved with great propriety.

MONDAY.—In the field with my natives, preparing land for wheat.

TUESDAY, APRIL 17th.—Writing in the morning; in afternoon, in the garden.

WEDNESDAY, 18th APRIL.—In the morning at the farm among my natives. In the afternoon we were thrown into a little alarm by a party of natives coming down upon our farmers, and taking away their hoes and other farming implements, and the iron pot which they cook their victuals in. One of them ran home immediately to relate what had happened. Our sawyers and other domestics armed themselves instantly with spears and pattus, and ran to their assistance, in order to rescue the property from the insurgents. I ran after them as fast as I could, and Mr. F. Hall and my son followed me. They met about a mile from the settlement, and a general scuffle ensued, and several hard blows were exchanged, and one man among the marauders received a wound in the face near the eye. By this time we arrived at the place of action, and I immediately recognised the whole of them. The scuffle seemed partly over, but several of them on each side were vociferating in a most violent manner. I begged them to be silent for a little time while I enquired into the cause of the outrage. They ceased directly (at which I wondered), and sat on the ground. I began by asking the reason of such procedure. They replied that the sawyers and farmers belonging to the white people had violated the person of a young woman who was a friend of theirs, and who was set apart for a chief, and they came to strip them and take away the tools as a recompense. I answered: "If these men have committed a trespass against you, I cannot be answerable for their misconduct, and you must be certainly wrong in taking away my property on their account." I further asked if they had given themselves time to enquire into the matter, to know the truth of the report, and I found they had not. I then began to enquire of the men against whom the accusation was made, and I found it to be false. I then turned to the other party and said: "You have been too hasty in the business; you ought to have been assured of the fact before you proceeded to take vengeance." After a great deal of desultory discourse, the parties settled the affair and had a grand dance, and we got



MR. JAMES SHEPHERD.



MR. WM. THOS. FAIRBURN.

most of our things back again. We only lost one spade, three hoes, and one rake with iron teeth.

THURSDAY, 19th APRIL, 1821.—In the morning preparing the foundations of an outhouse. Afternoon, reading. We have been visited to-day by a chief named Shomackee; he has a settlement about seven miles down the river toward the mouth of the harbour. He has lately returned from a long war expedition toward the South Cape of New Zealand. The name of the place where he has been is Eenhamattechou. He has brought from thence forty slaves. He had several in his canoe when he called to see us. They were all fine men and women, but their countenances seemed much cast down.

GOOD FRIDAY, APRIL 20th, 1821.—Divine Service, morning and evening. Administered the Holy Sacrament.

SATURDAY, APRIL 21st.—Reading.

SUNDAY, APRIL 22nd.—Easter Day. Divine Service, morning and evening; administered the Holy Sacrament.

MONDAY, APRIL 23rd, 1821.—Writing the whole day. The natives at work at the farm.

TUESDAY.—Sent away Mr. Samuel Butler, Lee and Puekey, with a crew of natives to the “Coromandel,” with despatches for England.

Copied up to this present date.

WEDNESDAY, 24th APRIL, 1821.—At work in the field among my natives; sowed half an acre of wheat.

THURSDAY.—Burning fern root from off the land.

FRIDAY.—Among my natives in the field. Sowed an acre and half of wheat. On Wednesday, Samuel and Mr. Puekey returned; they could not proceed on account of the badness of the weather.

I have at this time twelve cultivators, eight sawyers, three hewers of wood and drawers of water, etc., etc. Altho' I have a great deal to put up with from their innumerable queries and their excessive talkativeness, yet I have reason to be abundantly satisfied with them as poor heathens. I endeavour to bear with them, and talk to, and answer them, until very often I am quite hoarse. My general name among them is father, and Mrs. Butler, mother. I have often, yea daily do pray, that I may become so in a spiritual sense indeed and in truth.

SATURDAY.—Employed in reading and writing.

SUNDAY, 29th APRIL.—Divine Service, morning and evening; many natives attended.

MONDAY, 30th APRIL.—Very wet, writing the whole day.

TUESDAY, MAY 1st.—In the field with my natives; sowed an acre of wheat.

THURSDAY.—Made a present of a gallon of wheat to Moodiweye, chief of Shukiangah (Hokianga); he expressed a desire to sow wheat at his place. On Monday last Mr. Francis Hall charged me for seven pounds of soap, 9/4. This is the first soap that I have drawn since I left England, and I think it a great shame to be charged or stinted to a bit of soap for my use, when I am working in field and bush to the utmost of my strength, and often beyond it. The sugar and tea sent out with us was taken from us by Mr. Marsden on our arrival at New Zealand, and rationed out at two ounces of tea and one pound of sugar per week each person; the soap I would not part from, and it lasted up to this date. While I write these lines, I am quite unwell from over-exertion and heat. On Tuesday morning last, my son, Samuel Butler, and two other Europeans set off for the Kowah Kowah with a crew of natives to fetch timber for my house; the weather was very boisterous and wet, nevertheless, they succeeded in getting a good raft by Saturday.

FRIDAY.—In the field with my natives preparing land for wheat. I have now seven native applicants for seed wheat, and I have promised to supply them all.

My natives go on exceeding well, and I hope and trust, through the tender mercy of our God, the day is not far off when they shall improve in spiritual knowledge, and enquire after spiritual things. May the Lord hasten the wished-for period.

SATURDAY, MAY 5th, 1821.—Reading the whole day.

SUNDAY, MAY 6th.—Preached at Rangehoo, and administered the Holy Sacrament. Miss Susannah Kendall attended the holy ordinance for the first time. I had a good deal of previous conversation with her on the subject. I put several questions to her, and felt satisfied with the answers given; therefore, at her earnest request, I thought it my duty to admit

her. As the Lord hath given her the will, I pray that He may give her the power to devote herself wholly to His blessed service.

MONDAY.—Towing a raft of timber from the Mutoo Roa to Kiddee Kiddee; reached home at six o'clock p.m., got some refreshment, and held a committee on general business.

TUESDAY, the 8th, 1821.—Received the portion of trade allotted to me to procure from the natives—pork and potatoes for my family for twelve weeks. This day the carpenters presented a paper of which the following is a copy:

CHURCH MISSIONARY SETTLEMENT,
KIDDEE KIDDEE,

May 8th, 1821.

To the Committee,
Gentlemen,

We, the undersigned, finding ourselves aggrieved under various circumstances with respect to our situation as artificers in this settlement, have been called upon to fill offices in no way connected with our agreement with the agent of this Mission.

Finding that extra expenses attend the extra exertions we are called upon to attend, by reason of which our salaries are rendered insufficient for the support of our families without a due remuneration from the Society.

(Signed).

As the Society is in possession of their agreement with the Rev. S. Marsden, I need not make any comment on that head. With respect to the other statements contained in it, they are false and groundless. True it is that several times (as you will observe from my journal) they have been called upon to go into the woods to fell timber and to tow timber to the settlement; and once or twice they have been called upon to assist in landing stores, but then it has always happened that they have had things of their own to bring on shore. When they were felling timber at Kikatuah Roah, they never set off in a morning until after breakfast, and were always at home by five o'clock or before; and at such times they were allowed a double ration of tea and sugar, and the same when called upon to tow timber. I gave each of them four yards of coarse grey cloth belonging to the Society to make them trousers to put on, when called upon to go into the bush. In short, they have had nearly a double ration of every sort since their arrival in New Zealand. The whole of their conduct has been

bad, for instead of applying their talents and abilities to the utmost of their power in the Society's service, they have been idle, negligent, and saucy, and Mr. Wm. Hall, whose place it is to look after them, is very seldom here. One of them is (when he can get liquor) as great a sot as ever lived, and Mr. Marsden knew this when he agreed with him. I was with Mr. Marsden when he went to talk with him about coming down, and he thus addressed him: "Mr. X, I am come to take you with me to New Zealand, for if you stop at Parramatta you will be in prison again ere another month." I thought this wonderful!! Nevertheless I considered it my duty to be silent at that time. Of course we did not listen to them for one moment; moreover, I pointed out to them the evils of their conduct, and informed them that without an alteration for the better on their parts they would be sent back to Port Jackson by the first ship.

The Society would do well, and forward the interests of the Mission here, by sending good carpenters from England forthwith. In the afternoon, my son and John Lee, with a boat's crew of natives set off for Mongonewee to seek after shingle wood to cover my house, but the foundation is not yet laid.

WEDNESDAY AND THURSDAY. — Myself and Mr. Kemp, with another crew of natives, went into the bush to their assistance. Shingle wood is difficult to be obtained at New Zealand. Shingles might be sent from Port Jackson (for the present at least) for less than half the expense they cost in New Zealand, and the charge would be nothing when the "Active" is coming down.

FRIDAY, 11th.—At work at the farm with my natives.

SATURDAY MORNING.—At the farm. Afternoon, study.

SUNDAY, 13th.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY, TUESDAY AND WEDNESDAY.—Sowing and chipping in wheat.

TUESDAY.—Mrs. Bean was brought to bed. God has blessed her with a fine girl. Mrs. Butler attended her, and the mother and infant are likely to do well.

THURSDAY AND FRIDAY.—Burning fern at the farm.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY, MAY 21st, 1821.—Working at the farm with my natives.

TUESDAY.—Mr. Samuel Butler, Mr. Bean, and myself, and a boat's crew of natives went to the woods, about seven miles down the river, to seek after shingle wood; we found five trees, felled them, and cut certain lengths of each, but only two would do for shingles. The day came on rainy, and we got very wet, as the woods were almost like being in a brook; we caught slight colds, but God is all-sufficient.

WEDNESDAY, 23rd MAY, 1821.—Sowing oats and barley.

THURSDAY.—Assisting my natives to chip in wheat I had sown the day before.

FRIDAY, the 25th.—Sowing and chipping in wheat. Our great chief, Tarrier, came to our settlement yesterday from the Wye Mattee; he dined at my place yesterday, and breakfasted with us this morning. He was very importunate for an adze, some fish-hooks, a file, a knife, and a blanket. I made him a present of a file, an adze, and some fish-hooks, and informed him I had neither a knife or blanket to spare at present. He was quite pleased and said he would not fight the white people any more. Tarrier was once accounted the greatest savage in New Zealand. He is still a savage, but nothing like what he was when I first came to New Zealand. It is reported that Tarrier killed three slaves and ate them at Wye Mattee last week; I am inclined to think it is true, from the information I received. This is a dreadful custom prevalent among all tribes in New Zealand, when cookies commit theft, and I understand that they had been stealing his sweet potatoes, which I supposed was the cause of his killing them.

SATURDAY, 26th MAY, 1821.—Much rain fell in the course of the night, and it continued to rain hard until mid-day. I went, as soon as daylight appeared, with my farmers to open the trenches to let off the water from the wheat lands. This was an important business for the preservation of the wheat, but we got a good soaking in performing it. This morning, Charles Shunghu, son of Shunghu Heeka, head chief of Kiddee Kiddee, was brought hither on a litter, having a few days ago been dreadfully burnt by the explosion of gun-powder. I heard of the accident some days before, and sent him some refreshments, and things to dress him. Messrs. F. Hall, J. Kemp, Samuel Butler and self went to see him, and

dressed his wounds; his leg, thigh, and arm were burnt very badly, but I have no doubt but that he will do well. I gave him some bread and rice to boil for food, and Mr. Kemp sent him some tea. Thus we act, and by kindness and attention to their bodily wants endeavour to convince them that we really love their souls.

Afternoon, reading, etc., etc.

During the last fortnight I have employed and victualled seventeen men and boys in cultivating land. The labour of burning off, breaking up, and cleaning the land is very great. However, I have six acres of wheat, one of oats, and one of barley in the ground, which by the blessing of God I hope will bring a plentiful crop. The natives around us, and especially those we employ, are become very sensible of the comforts of civil life, and are daily crying out for European clothes, and are beginning to enquire after, and to cry out for all the blessings of civil life. And shall they cry in vain because they are poor and wretched and have nothing? God forbid! While there is a servant of Christ in our land who has the power, I am sure he will help them. The sawyers and farmers employed by me are now clothed in European garments, which they have earned by their industry; and the desire which they manifest to be clean on the Sabbath Day pleases me much. I have hitherto supplied them weekly with soap out of our own little stock, to wash their clothes, but now it is expended, and this day the sawyers appeared dissatisfied because I had none to give them; they said they did not like to be seen on the Sabbath Day with a dirty shirt.

I this day spoke to Mr. F. Hall about soap to wash their clothes from the store; I told him that I was persuaded the Society would gladly furnish one pound of soap per week between eight sawyers. It cannot be supposed that in their present state of poverty and distress they can pay for every bit of soap, or every fish-hook they receive, especially when we require each pair of sawyers to saw four logs of timber for an axe each, four for a blanket, four for a shirt, etc., etc. If they were to work in them, they would wear out one article before they earned another, but they work principally in their native attire, as I cannot get European garments for them.

Mr. Hall said he had no authority from Mr. Marsden to furnish the sawyers with soap, and that he had strict orders from him to charge every individual's private account with every article of every sort and kind, little or much, drawn by them over and above their ration.

There are many obstructions and stumbling blocks of this sort continually thrown in my way, in endeavouring to do good to the poor heathen of New Zealand. Rather than have my path thus marred at every step, and hedged up at every turning, I would sooner be out of the Mission altogether.

Whenever the natives are aggrieved about anything, they immediately run to me to tell of their trouble; I sympathise with them, and relieve all their wants as far as possible; with respect to my native farmers, the case will be far otherwise very soon. The return of the crops, by the blessing of the Almighty, will more than pay every expense, and the value of the surplus it is my intention shall be laid out for the good of those natives, who by the sweat of their brow have earned it. My farmers and household natives appear particularly attached to me; this I account for my being continually with them, and furnishing them, as far as I am able, with every sort of information which I think will be useful to them. May the Lord Jesus bless every humble endeavour to glorify His holy Name, and to administer comfort to the destitute.

SUNDAY, MAY 27th, 1821.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY.—Sowing and chipping in barley.

TUESDAY MORNING.—Visited Charles Shunghu, in company with Mr. F. Hall; we found him much better, dressed his wounds, gave him some necessaries, and returned. The remaining part of the day in the field with my natives, burning fern root, etc., etc.

WEDNESDAY AND THURSDAY.—Sowing and chipping in oats. I have now six acres of wheat, two of oats, and two of barley, well put in, and I hope it will produce a good crop. Blessed be God! He reserveth to us the appointed weeks of harvest. Two chiefs from Shukeangah are at our settlement at this time, with a quantity of hogs; but all their cry is powder, powder, muskets, muskets! This being the case, I suppose we shall get but few of them. Another season I hope to be enabled to find my own.

Thursday night it rained very hard the whole of the night, so that on Friday morning the river was much swollen. I arose at daylight and proposed to the carpenters that all hands should be summoned to go to Kekatooah Roah to put the fallen timber into the water. The consent was general, and after breakfast all the Europeans (except Mr. Shepherd) and a

large party of natives were on the move to the wood. The rain continued to fall very fast, and we had to wade up to our knees, and in some places up to our middles, to get to the wood. When we arrived the natives were very active in launching the logs; and in about an hour the whole, forty in number, were in the water. But now we had the most difficult part of the business to perform, viz., going down by the river side to keep them from stopping by the way. There is such an amazing quantity of brushwood and overhanging trees by the river side which renders it very difficult to get timber along. The fern thro' which we had to pass, in order to follow the course of the river, was very high, and above our heads in places, and that together with the rain falling, made it resemble being in a river the whole day. The natives, with very manly courage, threw off every article of clothing, and rushed into the rapid current and released the logs from their lodgments; indeed one part or other of them was in the river from morning until night. We succeeded in getting thirty-two over a large waterfall, ninety-three feet high, about two miles from the wood; here many of them remained at the bottom in a little bay which is formed by the fall: and the eddy was so strong that it was with the utmost difficulty we got them from under the fall. Mr. F. Hall was once in the water over head, and narrowly escaped the loss of his life. However, we got all the logs out, except two. Night came on and we were obliged to go home. We took some spirits and water twice in the day, which was all the refreshment we had, and I need not say that all of us never more stood in need of refreshment and comfort than when we arrived at our habitation. Two logs reached Kiddee Kiddee in the course of the day.

SATURDAY MORNING.—The weather became very fine and waters abated. I arose early, and sent one of my natives up the river to look after the logs; he returned saying there were thirty within a short distance. After breakfast I sent away the carpenters, John Lee, my son, and a party of natives to endeavour to get them home, but they did not succeed as the waters were gone down. They must therefore remain until the next fresh that cometh into the river. I think it will take £200 to bear the expense of clearing all obstacles, and then the settlement at Kidee Kidee would never more be at a loss for timber for every purpose.

At ten o'clock I set off in my boat for Ranghee Hoo, and arrived at one p.m. I dined with Mr. Wm. Hall, after which I went to Mrs. Kendall's, and sowed in her garden three beds

of onions, one of peas, one of beans, and set out one hundred and fifty cabbage plants which I had brought down with me out of my garden; Master Kendall followed me, and covered the rows; and afterwards I drank tea with Mrs. Kendall and family, performed family worship, and retired to Mr. Hall's to sleep.

SUNDAY MORNING, JUNE 3rd.—I awoke before daylight, found my throat very sore, and a great stiffness in my limbs. I began to be fearful I should not be able to perform Divine Service, but the Lord was better to me than my fears, for after I had been up several hours, my stiffness, which arose from cold, began to wear off a little, and the soreness of my throat abated. Performed Divine Service twice, and administered the Holy Sacrament in the morning. Several natives attended and behaved very well. I remained with our friends at their place until Tuesday morning, when I left them all in good health and returned to Kidee Kidee.

The remaining part of the week I have been employed in the garden and field with my natives.

SUNDAY, JUNE 10th, 1821.—Whitsunday. I preached from 68th Psalm: "Thou has ascended up on high," etc., etc. After sermon I administered the Holy Sacrament, and I trust the Holy Ghost was with us, indeed, as every heart seemed to rejoice in His holy comfort. This certainly has been the most comfortable Sabbath, and I have enjoyed more of the Lord's presence in it than in any other since I have been in New Zealand. Many natives attended and behaved exceeding well.

Bean and Fairburn began my house, Monday, June 11th.

MONDAY, JUNE 11th, 1821.—Very wet; reading and writing the whole day. In the evening the river was so much swollen by the rain that we got down eight logs of timber by ten o'clock.

TUESDAY MORNING.—John Lee, myself, and a party of natives went again up the river, and succeeded in getting down nine more logs by noon. In the afternoon held a committee on general business.

WEDNESDAY.—At work in my garden.

THURSDAY, FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—Began a new store-house for my potatoes, corn, etc., etc.

SUNDAY, 17th JUNE, 1821.—Divine Service, morning and evening. My natives all attended dressed in a new suit of clothes, as well as many others, and they all behaved exceeding well. In the afternoon our great chief, Tarrear, came to our place, and a party with him; they had come thus far on their journey to Shukeangah on a war expedition; or to settle some grievances that existed between them. I am sorry to say that on his departure in the evening, he reinforced his numbers by taking away six of the sawyers who were cutting timber for my house, the foundation of which is not yet laid.

MONDAY, 18th JUNE.—At work at my store-house.

TUESDAY.—Clearing land for oats, etc., etc.

WEDNESDAY AND THURSDAY.—At work at my store-house; buying of timber; getting it on shore, etc., etc.

FRIDAY.—Very wet; writing the whole day.

SATURDAY.—In the morning among my natives in the field; afternoon, reading.

SUNDAY, JUNE 24th, 1821.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY AND TUESDAY.—At work in the field with my natives. The sawyers are returned without fighting, and the dispute settled between Tarrear and the chief Shukeangah.

WEDNESDAY.—Morning, in the field; afternoon, study.

THURSDAY.—Morning, in the field with my natives; afternoon, study.

FRIDAY.—Morning, in the garden; afternoon, study.

SATURDAY.—Morning in the field; at noon we set out for Ranghu Hoo, in order to preach and administer the Holy Sacrament on the Sabbath Day, and at two I dined with Mr. Hall; visited all the friends, natives, etc., etc.

My native farmers and sawyers go on exceeding well, and I am in hope of getting a house in about eight months' time.

Tarrear and his family have been at the settlement this week; he breakfasted and dined with me two days, and part of his family. He behaved himself very well, and professes great friendship. I made him a present of some flannel for his children to wear, and several combs and two knives, and a few fish-hooks. He went away rejoicing.

Yesterday, Towhee, a chief of Ranghu Hoo, his wife, and brother, came to pay me a visit, and brought me two hogs, for which I gave him two axes and a spade. He has a farm at Shukeangah, and has been living at that place for some time past, and was thus far on his return to Ranghu Hoo. He stated that all was quiet when he left. There have been some disputes, but they had been settled without appealing to arms. We have enjoyed peace and tranquillity at the settlement for a long time, and we lay ourselves down to rest at night in the midst of savages with as much composure as if we were in a civilized country and surrounded with guards. Wonderful!! God is all-sufficient. He will shew us greater things than these.

SUNDAY, JULY 1st, 1821.—Divine Service, morning and evening; administered the Holy Sacrament. The friends at Ranghu Hoo are all in good health, and I spent a very pleasant Sabbath among them. The Lord is pleased to remember us in our low estate; and as the rain cometh down from Heaven and watereth the barren desert, making rocks bring forth and desolation smile, even so the Holy Spirit (sometimes of His infinite mercy), cometh down into our souls, like the dew upon the herbs; then our exhausted strength is renewed; then our dying graces revive as with new life; then hope's pale lamp which before seemed just going out, is rekindled by the love which is shed abroad in our hearts, and burns brighter than before; so that we are enabled to rejoice as well as hope in His mercy; the Lord is my hope, my joy, my strength, and my great salvation.

MONDAY, JULY 2nd.—Returned to Kiddee Kiddee, and held a committee in the evening on general business.

TUESDAY AND WEDNESDAY.—In the field with my natives preparing land for oats.

THURSDAY AND FRIDAY.—Sowing oats.

Yesterday our chief Reewah and his brother came to see me; Reewah has a very bad cold; they both supped and breakfasted with us. I then made Reewah a present of a pair of blankets to keep him warm, and also of some tea and sugar as other little comforts.

SATURDAY, JULY 7th, 1821.—In the field in the morning; in the afternoon, study.

SUNDAY, JULY 8th, 1821.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY, TUESDAY, WEDNESDAY.—Gardening, etc., etc.

THURSDAY, JULY 12th.—This morning we heard of Mr. Kendall's arrival at Ranghu Hoo in the ship "Westmorland;" also of Shunghee, Wyekattoo, all in good health. Mr. F. Hall, myself and Samuel Butler, and Mr. Kemp, set off immediately to see Mr. K., and to welcome his return. It must fill his heart with joy and gratitude to that gracious God who has watched over and protected his family during his absence, and Who has permitted them all to meet together again in health and comfort, and also to see his brethren enjoying the same inestimable blessing in a barbarous and savage land. We spent the evening together in conversation, prayer and praise. The next day we were all busily employed among the stores. Early in the morning my son and Mr. Kendall set off for Kiddee Kiddee to bring down the punt to take our stores to Kiddee Kiddee; we were all at work till twelve at night in loading our stores, etc. etc. We sent away the punt with a crew of natives and two Europeans, to take care of the property. We then retired to rest for a few hours, and after being refreshed, we arose and made all speed for Kiddee Kiddee, and arrived about two p.m., and got them all safely housed in the afternoon.

SUNDAY, JULY 15th, 1821.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY AND TUESDAY.—Busy unpacking stores, etc., etc.

This morning, between eight and nine, —— (the convict sent down by Mr. Marsden, who has been at my place since his arrival, because no one else would take charge of him), fell into a most violent rage, cursing and swearing, and would have if he had not been prevented, cruelly beaten a native lad, a servant of mine. Mrs. Butler sprang between them in order to save the lad from such wanton cruelty, and believe she would have been knocked down had it not been for James Boyle, the saltman, who had just arrived with some salt for the settlement. He had been out drinking rum with some sailors belonging to the "Sarah," who were at the settlement at this time.

At this time I was reaching down some hymn books and the Bible for evening worship; the circumstance struck me with horror; I went to speak to him, and he caught hold of my jacket, and I thought he would have struck me. I there-

fore made off to ask Mr. Kemp and Mr. F. Hall to come in, and if possible to quiet him. When I got into Mr. Kemp's house, I was so much overcome that I sat down and cried. Mr. Hall and Mr. Kemp went in, and, with the assistance of my son, restored peace, and the wretch decamped to my barn to sleep. We retired to rest, but I scarce had any sleep. In the morning, as soon as daylight appeared, Mrs. B. arose, and —— came into the yard, vociferating and swearing as in over night. I ordered him to quit my place instantly; this command he reluctantly complied with, after giving me a little more of his foul mouth. The whole of this uproar arose from my lad telling him he was houranghee (drunk), which, alas! was too true!! The day before he had two gallons of rum served him from the store, out of some spirits sent down by Mr. Marsden to be divided among the settlers.

To be coupled with such men on missionary labours, how shocking!!! Thieves, drunkards, swearers, blasphemers, fornicators, etc., are, and have been employed in the Society's service ever since there has been a settlement in New Zealand!! If such characters are to be allowed to remain or are at all employed in this Mission, I hope to have an order to return with my family to England by the first ship.

WEDNESDAY.—Gardening in the morning; in the afternoon, writing.

THURSDAY AND FRIDAY.—Gardening. In the afternoon of Friday I sowed two acres of land with the grass seed sent out by the Society with Mr. Kendall. They had all been opened at Port Jackson and part of each taken out; this I do not like.

SATURDAY MORNING.—Making a raspberry bed. Afternoon, study.

SUNDAY, the 22nd.—A very stormy day. Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY, 23rd.—I planted some trees, various; sowed some ash seeds, acorns, hawthorn berries, hazelnuts, walnuts, trefoil, taru, beans, various cherry stones, plum stones, etc., etc.

In the evening Mr. Kendall visited us, and supped and slept at our place.

TUESDAY MORNING.—After breakfast and prayers, took a walk round the farm; returned and had some conver-

sation with the brethren about forwarding the objects of the Mission, and by what means, etc., etc. After dinner Mr. Kendall and Mr. Wm. Hall returned to Ranghoo.

WEDNESDAY, the 25th.—Garden in the morning; afternoon, writing.

THURSDAY.—Gardening in the morning; afternoon, writing.

FRIDAY.—Planting potatoes in the morning; afternoon, writing. This afternoon my native foreman, named Twywan-geh, was most grossly insulted, and wantonly speared through the elbow, and also thro' the thigh. He was at work in my garden, and I had just left him to get my dinner. It took place within the enclosure where my house is now building. I had not left the place many minutes, and was then getting my dinner. As soon as the news was brought to me, I repaired to the spot; when I arrived the fray was just over, and I saw my man ready to faint for loss of blood. The man who had committed this rash act marched off, but he had not gone far ere he met a lad belonging to me with a basket of potatoes on his back; he seized the potatoes instantly, and walked off. On seeing this, my son and two natives ran after him and took it from him. Mr. F. Hall, myself, Samuel Butler, and some of my other natives then ascended the hill behind the settlement, and found two other baskets which he and his friends had taken from my people as they were bringing them home. We succeeded in getting away one basket, but not without some resistance; we were then obliged to go on the road to prevent others from sharing the same fate. I do not like contending with them, even to save my own property, but we are obliged to be very firm, for if these natives find that you are in any measure afraid of them, or will suffer your property to be taken away with impunity, they will take everything from you, and will actually tread you under foot. It requires great wisdom to know how to act or deal with them. I endeavour to join fortiter in modo with suaviter in re. Little men and cowards they greatly dislike, and such a one, while they continue in their present state, can possess but very little influence, and his usefulness also must necessarily be much hindered thereby; very little men and cripples also are held in the greatest contempt by these natives. After we had secured as many of

the potatoes as possible, we went to the river side at a short distance and found some natives washing the blood from the wounded man.

At this moment I turned my head and saw two native women endeavouring to get away part of the potatoes out of the passage from Mrs. Butler, who was standing sentinel over them. Mrs. Butler did what she could to save them. I saw one of them strike Mrs. Butler twice; I ran as fast as possible to her assistance, and pushed them away, and enquired why they did thus. One woman replied, "Sir, I did not touch the potatoes, nor Mrs. Butler, and I begged this woman to let them alone. I am one who is employed by the native you sent to purchase potatoes, to bring them to your house; but there is one basket which we brought for food by the way, and I wished them to remain until you had brought in poor Tywongah, and then you would pay me, and I should take away the basket at the same time." I then asked her where was the remainder of my potatoes, and she answered: "They were stolen from us by the way." I then asked what the other woman had to do with them. She replied, "Nothing at all; she is not engaged to bring potatoes, and she is a very bad woman for striking mother, or even touching the potatoes, but she wished to be doing something." ("Mother" is Mrs. Butler's general name among the natives of our district.) I spoke to the other woman, who all the time was making a terrible noise, and found she would be too much for me to cope with; I therefore made off into the house. These are trying scenes. No one can tell what it is to dwell among unrestrained savages but those who live with them.

We then proceeded to dress the wounded man, and offered him every comfort in our power. On examining his wounds, I began to fear they would prove mortal, as they were made with a bayonet fastened to the end of a spear.

After this business was completed, I began to enquire of him the cause of so desperate an act. He said "Somebody who owes me a grudge has spread a false report of me, saying that I defiled the man's wife, which thing is most untrue." I have since found the above statement to be correct. As far as I can trace the subject, it came to pass under the following circumstances:—About a week ago I pressed upon my foreman to get forward with all speed with potato ground which was preparing for seed, and in my absence Tywongah had called this man a lazy fellow, for not going on with his work as he

ought, and this he considered as a great hardship. I said to him: "What Tywongah has said of you is true; you have not wrought the last fortnight to please me." On hearing this, nothing would serve him but that he must be paid immediately. I told him I did not wish to part with him; but, seeing him determined to go, I paid him, and he started.

Not being able to be revenged on Tywongah in any other way, he spread a false report of him, and brought this man down upon Tywongah; and he certainly would have killed him if Tywongah had not been a man of superior activity. I have since seen the woman and spoken to her upon the subject; she declared the report to be false. (I would remark it is common in New Zealand for women to confess, and even relate such things, altho' done by mutual consent.)

This man, named Tywongah, is now, and has been ever since our arrival in New Zealand, the most active and zealous among all the New Zealanders in assisting and working for the Europeans. He has stood by us back and edge, by night and day. If any New Zealander ever deserved a present from the Society, he is certainly the man. I engaged him soon after our arrival, and he has never left us, but has been continually with us; and he has faithfully laboured and endeavoured to forward our objects to the best of his power. He is much respected by all the Europeans on account of his good temper and general attachment. He is a man of quick discernment, and learns everything very fast. Agriculture, such as breaking up land, burning off, laying it out, trenching, etc., etc., he is particularly fond of, and possesses great knowledge for the time he has been in practice of farming in general. He can reap, mow, and thresh, etc. I began to learn him to sow, dibble, and drill grain this seed time, and ere these lines reach you, D.V., I have no doubt but that he will be a complete farmer. He possesses also a tolerable knowledge of gardening, such as forming beds, sowing small seeds, setting out plants, drilling peas, beans, planting potatoes, dressing strawberry beds, etc., etc. Indeed, he has been my right hand man both in the field and in the garden; he has not only wrought himself, but has been the means of bringing his friends and acquaintances into the field to labour.

All the Europeans that have visited the settlement have expressed their surprise at seeing so much farming, gardening, and fencing, which have been done in so short a time and under such peculiar circumstances; but this man has acted like a fly-wheel in the machine, which puts every other cog in motion.

Likewise in the falling of timber, or in towing the same to the settlement for the building department, he stands the very first.

I pay him an axe a month for his labour, besides which I furnish him with European garments, but he has no hat; many of our natives wish to have hats, as well as every other sort of European clothing. Happy day, when all the natives shall be clothed in European garments, and act towards each other upon the principles of the Gospel.

SATURDAY, 28th JULY.—Gardening in the morning; afternoon, study. I am very thankful to state that Tywongah's wounds this morning look remarkably healthy; he has very little fever upon him, and I hope and trust he will do well.

SUNDAY, 29th, 1821. — Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY AND TUESDAY.—Gardening, planting potatoes.

WEDNESDAY.—Dressing a bed of hops. I have fourteen hills which look exceedingly fine, as the plants are very strong. I brought a single root from Port Jackson, and planted the whole fourteen hills from it last spring; and I gathered a small sprinkling of fine hops from them in the season. I hope this year they will produce a good full crop.

THURSDAY.—Writing, etc., etc.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—Reading and writing.

SUNDAY, AUGUST 8th, 1821.—Divine Service, morning and evening, and administered the Holy Sacrament.

MONDAY.—Held a committee on general business.

TUESDAY. — Gardening in the morning; afternoon, writing.

WEDNESDAY AND THURSDAY. — Gardening and writing.

On Wednesday morning, my son, Samuel Butler, and Mr. Shepherd set off for Wyekaddee to purchase timber for the purposes of carrying on the building of my house, outhouses, etc. Wyekaddee is about twenty-five miles from Kiddee Kiddee. They arrived in the evening, and purchased nine logs of a chief named Tahee Tabbā, for which they paid two axes, one

adze, one hatchet, two hoes, three plane irons. After this business was completed, they proceeded to another place a little further on, taking the chief with them, to look at some more timber.

At this place they purchased four logs for two hatchets, one axe, and one plane iron. It was now about seven o'clock in the evening. They got them into the water, and fastened them together by moonlight, and proceeded to a small village belonging to the chief, and reached there about eleven o'clock, and intended to stop until the return of the tide. They got some refreshment and lay down to rest; but they had not lain down more than half an hour ere two women came in a canoe to fetch away the chief, saying Mr. Hall had arrived at his other place and was taking away the timber belonging to Mr. Butler and Mr. Shepherd. Tahee Tabba on hearing this, set off with the natives in the canoe. Mr. Butler and Mr. Shepherd remained some time longer in order to get a little rest.

About two in the morning they arose, and proceeded with the four logs to the other place, in order to raft the timber together and to start with the tide. When they came they found all the timber in the water and nearly rafted by the natives belonging to Mr. Hall.

On seeing Mr. Hall they informed him that the logs which he had taken belonged to them. (This he well knew, as he used every base and unfair means of inducing the chief to sell it over again.) Mr. Shepherd said, "Sir, you are doing very wrong." Mr. Samuel Butler said, "Sir, I think it a great and scandalous shame that you should take away the timber which we have paid for, knowing it to be ours." He answered, "I have bought it also, and shall take it."

They then asked him if he would be answerable for the trade which they had paid. Mr. Samuel Butler said, "Sir, I have paid for that timber, and shall expect to have it." Mr. Wm. Hall answered, "I will give all the axes out of the Society's store, rather than you shall have it." Mr. Shepherd and Mr. Butler then said, "Sir, we could not have supposed that you would have been guilty of so base an act as this, in taking away the timber which we had paid for, for the ship 'Westmorland,' unless we had this proof, and at a time when the settlement is distressed for timber!!!"

The natives said to Mr. Shepherd and Mr. Butler, in the presence of Mr. Hall, that Mr. Hall, on his arrival, asked to see the trade which they had received for payment, and on

being shown the articles, he threw them about the beach and said they were no good, and further, that he would give them much better and more in number for the timber than Mr. Butler and Mr. Shepherd had done. However, the chief, an ignorant heathen, was sensible enough to know the injustice and iniquity of the thing, and declared that Mr. W. Hall should not take the timber away at last, only that Mr. Hall had a musket of his at his house to repair; on that account he could say nothing about it. Mr. Hall took the timber away to Ranghee Hoo accordingly; and Mr. Butler and Mr. Shepherd were obliged to return with four logs instead of thirteen. Wonderful pretty, indeed!!! The above is a copy from the mouths of Mr. Butler and Mr. Shepherd—verbatim.

Is this the Mr. Hall, the carpenter appointed by the Society to carry on the Society's work in the building department, and who is required not only to give his advice, but to labour with his own hand in order to forward the buildings wanted?

Yes! this is the man and the Christian.

Mr. Shepherd and Mr. Butler said that Mr. Hall endeavoured to justify his conduct by saying he had spoken for it some time ago, and that he had marked it. Both these assertions proved to be false, as no mark was to be found on the timber, and the people denied it to his face. I would grant very gladly, if possible, that Mr. Hall was incapable of uttering such falsehoods, and that he had spoken for the timber. But for whom did he bespeak it? I should think for the Society certainly, for the purpose of carrying on the building. Was it for the "Westmorland?" She had not arrived. Here I would observe that Mr. Hall says he has an order from Mr. Marsden to purchase timber for the "Westmorland," the ship which brought down Mr. Kendall, and which is chartered by Mr. Marsden to go to Tahiti for pork, etc., etc., and which ship is to call for the timber at the Bay of Islands on her return. But I am persuaded that Mr. Marsden does not mean that Mr. Hall should purchase timber for the "Westmorland," to be sent to Port Jackson market, to the detriment of an infant settlement, and the distress of any of the Society's servants while being out of doors.

It certainly was Mr. Hall's duty, and an imperative one, as carpenter and builder, to have forwarded their objects by assisting them in the purchase of timber; as they might well be said to be doing that work and service which should more especially devolve upon him. If he had exerted himself to

supply the settlement with timber, according to the means he possessed, it would have precluded the necessity of their going after it, which in the clearest manner proves his guilt. Mr. Hall has never exerted himself to procure timber for the settlement, but has left me with all that work and service. He scarcely ever comes to Kiddee Kiddee except on committee days. He has never laid a line upon a single log of timber, or taken the least trouble about the sawyers, or exerted himself in any other way. Such work and labour is entered under his name at our committees for the sake of order, and not for the sake of his having performed any part of the work. Here I quit this disagreeable subject, and hope it will be buried in oblivion, because the Lord liveth, and blessed be my strong helper, and glory be to God of my salvation.

Mr. Shepherd arrived about eight p.m. on Thursday evening, bringing the news of their success, and that my son was then about two miles down the river, and could get no further on account of wind and tide being against them. I immediately manned two canoes and went down to his assistance, and we reached home about twelve or rather later, with the four logs from Wyecaddee, and two others which they picked up by the way in the harbour, which had floated down from the wood in the flood, and belonging to Kiddee Kiddee.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—Reading and writing, etc., etc. The natives are very quiet and friendly to us, upon the whole, and I believe our footing among them is firm and sure, as any little disturbance that takes place with a single native or so is not to be carried beyond the thing itself. Our crops, our cattle, our gardens look exceedingly well, and are in a thriving state. This desert begins to bud, and ere long we have reason to hope it will “rejoice and blossom as the rose.”

My native farmers are still going on exceeding well.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY, AUGUST 13th, 1821.—This morning I set off for the timber ground, accompanied by Mr. F. Hall, my son, Mr. S. Butler, John Lee, and four natives. We arrived at Tohee Tabba's place about two o'clock, but he was not at home. Here we stopped and got our dinner, but in a little time Tohee Tabba's son, a fine lad, and a friend of his came to us and asked if we wanted timber; we told them we did. My son went with them across the small bay we were in, and purchased three logs. They then returned and informed me they had more timber at another place about six miles off; we

immediately set off, and purchased twelve more. While the natives were rafting these, there came to us a chief, saying he had some timber to dispose of at his place a little distance off. We therefore agreed with the natives to take the timber we had now bought to Tohee Tabba's place, as we intended to collect all we could, and start from thence with our general raft for home, it being the nearest and best place for that purpose. We then set off with the chief who came to us, and when we reached his place it was about eight o'clock in the evening. The moon shone bright, and we saw the timber lying on the bank, and examined it as far as we could. We told the chief we were hungry, and wanted to cook some supper; and in the morning we would purchase the timber.

We then made a hut, and fire, and boiled water for tea. After supper and prayer, we lay down by the fire side to rest. We rose up at four in the morning, and prepared our breakfast, after which, and prayer, daylight came on, and we proceeded to the purchase of timber. We bought twelve logs at this place, and got them into the water as fast as possible, in order to go down with the tide; one of our logs sank, and we were obliged to leave it behind. We started about seven, and got down to Tohee Tabba's place about eleven; we found our other timber which we had purchased on the preceding evening, and brought down by the natives all safe. We fastened our timber, and satisfied the natives for bringing down the other raft, and then set off for the upper part of Wyecaddee.

We now had a fair wind, and in order to save time, we got some refreshment as we sailed along.

We visited several settlements, at one of which we saw Tehiterro in his native garb. When we arrived, he was working some potato ground on the hill behind the village. We did not see him at work on account of a small wood being situate between the village and his cultivation. We shook hands with him, had some little conversation with him, gave him some fish-hooks, and departed.

We then went to a village about two miles farther on, and here we purchased eight logs, and by the time we got them all rafted it was night. We then set off across the country into a wood, to cook our supper, etc., etc. This we did in order to be as much by ourselves as possible, for one or other are seen to be teasing you all night.

We struck a light with a fowling piece, made our hut as usual with the boat sail, dressed our food, etc., etc., and

although the ground was very wet, on account of the rain that fell in heavy showers during the day, yet we made out pretty well, as we kept a good fire all night. In the morning we arose, got breakfast very early, and set off to the village, and took away our timber. As we passed down the river we called on Tieteerree, and saw his wife and child. Tieteerree looks in a most pitiable condition; I can truly say I felt for him from my heart, both in a temporal and spiritual sense.

We left them, and passed on down the river about four miles to another settlement. Here we wanted to go on shore after some more timber, and as the tide was running down, we thought it best to let go the raft which we had, and go on with the tide. We went on shore and bought seven logs, but as the tide had been going down some time, we had a hard job to get them into the water, and by the time we had done this business it was low water mark. While we were rafting the timber, a very heavy squall of wind and rain set in up the river, and took our other floating raft to the other side; and, as the river is two miles wide at this place, we had some difficulty in finding it. However, after rowing about more than two hours, we found it all safe on the other beach, but the towing rope was gone from the raft; we enquired after it of the natives, but one and all denied any knowledge of it. I offered several rewards but to no purpose. I at last offered a hoe for it. As soon as they heard that, one of them ran after it, and in about ten minutes returned, bringing the rope with him. I paid him the hoe, and endeavoured to express my abhorrence of their telling so many lies about the rope, and we departed.

It was now eventide, and we had to row against the tide. We got away about a mile into a little cove to get some refreshment. We soon made a good fire and dressed some pork and potatoes, and with some tea likewise, we made a hearty dinner. We rested ourselves until about nine o'clock, when John Lee and the natives went on the other side of the river and brought the small raft from thence, and we joined the two together, and set off for Tohee Tabba's to the remainder of our timber.

We arrived about one in the morning, and, after fastening our timber, we proceeded to make a fire as usual and get some refreshment and rest. In the morning we arose, got our breakfast, and prepared to raft the whole of our timber together, and, if possible, to take it all with us. We completed this business ready to start with the tide. We set out with upwards of forty logs after our own whale boat, and with

very hard pulling we made as much progress as we could expect (say about a mile an hour), but, after we had got about three miles along the bay, we had to pass the mouth of the river Wyetanghee; here the tide set out against us, and with the utmost difficulty we passed it. We were upwards of four hours getting about a mile and a half, and it was not until after midnight that we reached a place of shelter.

We had only a small piece of raw bacon each on a bit of bread during the day, and a little water from the rock. About two in the morning we got into a little cove; we were all so completely tired and wet with the rain that we scarcely knew how to cook supper, but the natives behaved extremely well. I struck a light and we got a fire, and some bacon fried, and our clothes hung up to dry. My son lay down in his blanket and fell asleep, and his blue jacket fell off the stick into the fire and was burnt to ashes.

After refreshment, we lay down on the beach under a tree by the fireside to rest. We only stopped four hours on account of the tide, and when I got up I could scarcely stand for some time; my limbs seemed all to be numbed.

We made a start between five and six, but we were all like horses with sore shoulders until we got warm; we rowed until noon, when the tide turned. We then anchored our timber and went on shore to cook a few potatoes and three pigeons which we shot. This was all the food we had left. After this we lay down by the fireside until the return of the tide. We set off rather before the turn of the tide, as the wind set in in our favour for the first time with the timber. It continued to blow pretty strong with a heavy shower of rain for about an hour, when it gradually died away. We had not proceeded far ere we met a canoe with a supply of food sent by Mrs. Butler; we were all cheered at this, and after taking a little, we tugged hard for home, and reached Kiddee Kiddee about eleven o'clock on Friday night with the whole of our raft, thankful for all our mercies. We never, perhaps, stood more in need of refreshment and rest.

SATURDAY, 18th AUGUST, 1821.—In the morning took a walk round the farm to look at the wheat and other grain, and exercise my stiffened limbs. Afternoon, reading. About six o'clock in the evening, as Mr. Puckey was buying some sweet potatoes, the same infamous woman which struck Mrs. Butler, interfered with him and entered the yard, and would take them away by force and take them to Mr. Bean. I did

not see the transaction, as I was on the loft reading, but I heard the noise, and my son, who saw the whole affair, said she behaved in a most shameful manner. She was going to fall upon his wife, and he pushed her away, and she up with a billet of wood and struck him twice, and threw mud in his face. She then went away and informed Shunghee (who is her relation) and all her friends, that during Shunghee's absence about six months ago, Mr. Puckey's daughter, a little girl of eleven years of age, said to his daughter, Tyeke, that when Shunghee came back she would cut his head off and put it in the iron pot. This hussy succeeded in stirring up the natives, who are glad of any pretence in order to seize on our property. I came down about ten o'clock, and my lad, Tyheehone, said to me, "Father, the natives are coming to steal all Mr. Puckey's things." I told him to hold his tongue, for I did not believe him. He still persisted in the truth of what he said. I asked him why. He said for the bad language Mr. Puckey's daughter had used concerning Shunghee. I said, if she had said such things, she did not mean to, it was not possible; that she could not have any ill-will towards Mr. Shunghee; she was but a child, and had not seen Mr. Shunghee many times, and could not know what she was saying at the time; and Mr. Puckey, if he knew, would correct her very seriously for such things. Mr. Puckey came to me, to consult what he had best do. I told him I did not think they would do any such thing; however, he wished to put a few things up in the store loft, for fear such a thing should take place, to which I readily consented. I also enquired of him what his girl had done, and he related the case as follows: That about six months ago, his daughter and the daughter of Shunghee, who is a grown woman, and lives with Mrs. Kemp as servant, were at play on the timber about the sawpits. They sat down on the timber and began to talk about their parents, a thing very customary with children. Shunghee's daughter said that Puckey was nothing more than a slave, and Puckey's daughter said her father was as great a man as Shunghee; the other replied: "Shunghee on his return will kill your father and eat him;" and Puckey's girl said in return: "I will cut your father's head off, and cook it in the iron pot," and so on. This certainly could amount to nothing more than a child's prate, who often talks without any reasoning. However, the consequences (through the aforesaid infamous woman) became very alarming. The natives, as I have observed, are glad of any pretext to seize on our property; they came in the middle of the night and took away out of Puckey's small yard nine

store hogs, one male, one female goat, also one goat, one hog, and three fowls from Messrs. Bean and Fairburn.

On Sunday morning about five o'clock, Puckey called me, saying in a mournful tone: "The natives have broken into my kitchen." I jumped out of bed, and ran out of doors almost naked, and I saw the natives in Mr. Puckey's yard, and many in the kitchen, using dreadful language, and taking everything they could lay their hands on. The settlement was thrown in the greatest consternation, and indeed we did not know to what length they would go. Mr. Puckey, his wife and children, were crying out for their hoes. My place being next to theirs, and only a small fence between, I expected them into my place every instant. However, Reewah, who is as great a chief as Shunghee, and who has always stood our friend, came running down from his place naked, with his gun in his hand, and in he rushed like a lion and bundled them out of the place in a few minutes; but they nevertheless got away many articles, as planes, files, saws, hammers, stock and kits, axes, hoes, razors, shoes, wearing apparel, lamps, tea pots, one iron pot, two blankets, one rug.

Puckey's son sleeps in the kitchen, as they have only one small room besides. When the natives broke in, one of them caught hold of him by the hair of his head, and said he would cut off his head if he spoke a word. As soon as he was loosed, in he ran to his father, trembling in every limb. At length peace was restored, and we thought all was over; but my mind was so much hurt that it was with the utmost difficulty, when the time came, that I performed Divine Service; and not my mind alone, but also everyone in the settlement. We began service as usual at eleven o'clock, and Mr. Puckey and his son attended. We had not begun many minutes ere Puckey was called out; the natives were taking away his chickens out of his yard. He went and begged of them not to take them, but they paid no attention; they took them all away.

Divine Service being ended about one o'clock, and the friends scarcely got indoors, when down comes another party, and over the fence into Puckey's yard. I knew several of them, and begged of them with all my might to desist; but all in a moment they broke open the door and into the house they went. Puckey's dinner was just set on the table, and they took all the food, broke all the plates and dishes, took away the knives and forks, spoons, a looking-glass, two bottles, and one canister of tea, table cloth, towel, three mats, then about one

bag of flour, one of wheat; took away more tools, sundry curiosities, etc., etc.

Some of my natives went and acquainted Rewah, who came quite naked, and several others with him, as soon as possible; he was dreadfully angry, and I was afraid the natives would now fight among themselves, but they were soon cleared from Puckey's place by Rewah and his friends without blows. He said to them all that Shunghee ought to be ashamed; he had been to England and was loaded with kindness, and he had returned to fight and destroy the white people. One of the natives heard that Puckey was struck, and he ran and killed a hog of Shunghee's as a recompense; and as Keehee Keehee's (Kohi Kohi) party (Shunghee's relations) and friends were plundering Puckey's place, Rewah's brother went and took away Keehee Keehee's potatoes as an utoo (payment), My son's German flute was at Mr. Puckey's, and that went with the rest of the things. We all stood looking on, but durst not speak a word. I had hard work to keep Mrs. Butler from fainting away.

• These are trying scenes indeed; this is something of a missionary's life among cannibals.

Rewah and his friends now determined to stop and guard the place; he therefore loaded his musket, and told them they might look out if they came any more. We now got a mouthful of dinner with fear and trembling, and I brought the distressed family into my place, and gave them some with us. Afterwards I sent for Shunghee, and advised Mr. Puckey to go and beg of him to come and let us know what all this cruel outrage meant. I walked backwards and forwards along by my garden fence until I saw Shunghee go into Mr. Puckey's place, and several other chiefs, and I followed them. I sat down among them, and began to enquire of Mr. Shunghee why they acted thus. He replied: "My people heard that Mr. Puckey's girl said very bad language concerning me, and they have taken the matter up, and acted thus without my consent." I told him I was extremely sorry that they should be so cruel on account of the conversation of a child, who did not know the evil, and who did not, nor could she mean any evil to him. "Moreover," I said, "if you wanted any satisfaction on that account, had you come and made it known, we would have made you any recompense in our power; you have looked very shy at us ever since you came from England. What is the reason? If you do not like us to live at your place, we will go away."

I could scarcely get a word from him further than he did not wish them to fight us, and he would do what he could to stop any further proceedings. I then asked him if any other of his friends were then likely to come upon us. He said he could not tell, but he would do all he could to prevent them. This will show you how little power a chief has over his people in New Zealand. I further said to him that I had been called his slave many times, and that by his relations—men and women, yet I was not angry with them. He said he knew that. I then asked why he did not, on hearing the report, come to Mr. Puckey immediately, and he would have corrected his daughter severely in order to deter her from doing the like again. He answered: “I am not angry with Mr. Puckey or his child.” I then left them, in order, by the help of the blessed Jesus, to prepare myself, as much as the agitation of my mind would permit, for evening service.

Shunghee’s son, a fine youth, came to evening service, and desired to stop at my place all night. This I agreed to, and the night passed away in tranquillity; only Rewah and his friend fired off their muskets several times in the night, to let the natives know he was prepared for them. I slept pretty well, being worn down in body and mind.

MONDAY, AUGUST 20th, 1821.—Everything peaceable and quiet, but many natives at the settlement. Rewah and his friends remain on the look-out; myself, writing the whole day.

TUESDAY, AUGUST 21st, 1821. — This morning Mr. Shunghee came to my place by seven o’clock; and he and his son, who had remained with us, breakfasted with me and my family. I thought this a favourable opportunity, and begged of him to tell me a little about England. He began by relating the number of muskets and soldiers, and shops, and people belonging to King George; how he was received by him, and the present he made him. He said King George told him that he never wrote to say the New Zealanders should not have powder and muskets. He then told me about his journey to Cambridge, and his seeing the college and many other fine things; he said he saw but very little timber, or ground for cultivation, as the country was full of people. He then informed me about his seeing the Tower, and the wild beasts, but the elephant is the only beast that seems to have struck him with any degree of surprise. He then told me how kindly Mr. Mortlock and Mr. Wood treated him; “They are,” said he, “very good men.” I then asked him if Mr. Pratt was not a good man, and he said, “No, Mr. Pratt is a bad man.” I then

asked him about Mr. Bickersteth; and he replied, "He is a bad man also; and, indeed, all the people at Missionary House." I asked wherein Mr. Pratt or Bickersteth and the other gentlemen were bad. He said they all looked upon him as a poor man, and did not treat him as a great chief, and give him plenty powder and muskets; neither did they do for him as they had done for Tooï (Tui) and Teeterree (Teteri), and when they spoke to him they did not speak kindly; and moreover, they made bad talk about him behind his back. I asked him who informed him about the bad talk, and he replied, "Mr. Kendall." He said many more ridiculous things not fit to mention.

In the course of the day I again suffered severely in mind, from the natives treading upon two acres of oats, and entering into my garden without my permission, and using me very roughly into the bargain. Afterwards several of them came into my place, desiring and demanding food. Mrs. B. gave them all that was dressed, and that would not satisfy them. She was obliged to put on another iron pot to satisfy their desires. I told them they had almost killed me and Mrs. Butler and my family, in doing so many bad things without any fault of mine, or any fault of the Europeans. They said it was very good for us to give them liberty to come into our places when they pleased, and to eat; and if we did not like that, they should come in by force at all times.

WEDNESDAY, AUGUST 22nd, 1821.—This morning I set on another pair of sawyers, in order to get forward with my house as fast as possible, being quite wearied and tried in living after the wretched manner which I have since I have been in New Zealand.

This morning I have been very ill used by Mr. F. Hall and Mr. Kemp, in their engaging my servants to go on their business, without so much as asking me a question on the subject. Moreover, Mr. F. Hall used wicked and reproachful words, and was exceeding angry without any cause. "Oh, that I had wings like a dove, then would I flee away and be at rest."

Afternoon, gardening and looking after my people.

All things appear to be quiet and settled this evening. This afternoon an aged chief, and a relation of Shunghee, came to see him. Shunghee brought him to me, and I made him a present of a hoe, a knife, some fish-hooks, and a pair of scissors. I also made Pomarree, chief of Kororarekah, a present of a hoe, and Mr. Hall gave one to his son.

The natives are all preparing to go to war to the River Thames; several battles have been fought since the departure of the "Coromandel," between the people of the Bay of Islands and the people of the River Thames; and several chiefs belonging to the Bay of Islands have been killed.

Shunghee, having now returned in safety from England with a great quantity of guns and powder, they are collecting all the fern they can, and, if possible, they will cut off all the people of Mogoheeha, men, women, and children. Shunghee is very angry in his mind that we do not part with muskets and powder. He says that Mr. Kendall has promised to supply him, and to sell him plenty of muskets and powder.

Shunghee's conduct towards us at Kiddee Kiddee since his return has been very bad, and some part of it remains as a mystery to all. He told Rewah the other day in a private conversation between themselves, that I was a very bad man who stopped the disposal of muskets and powder. He also is displeased with the people at Port Jackson. He told even me that they had robbed him of his watch at Sydney, but that he got it again, and the man got a severe flogging. He also is much displeased with Mr. Marsden; he says Mr. Marsden behaved ill to him while at Sydney. He asked Mr. Marsden for several things, but he denied him, and would not give him so much as an axe.

Things at this moment appear very awkward and adverse, and I do not know what to do for the best. We must wait the Lord's pleasure; endeavour to trust when we cannot trace, and patiently wait for the salvation of God.

THURSDAY, AUGUST 23rd.—This morning Mr. Shunghee, Mr. Rewah, Mr. Tirranah, and four of their children came to my place for breakfast. Shunghee's son is now with us regularly night and day. We wish to do all we can to please them, and prove to them in every possible way that we wish to do them good.

After breakfast and prayer they all sat down, and we had some very friendly chat for about half an hour.

I took this opportunity of speaking to Shunghee and Rewah about the ill-usage we had received from their people. They both said they were sorry; but I do not believe that Shunghee is sorry at all about it. However, he promises to do all he can to keep peace and quietness in the settlement. Thus, you see, we are made as the offscouring of all things in this



HONGI HIKA.

heathen land. One day hope's fair lamp burns very bright; but perhaps before the close of the next it appears to go out in total darkness.

[When one considers the attitude of Hongi towards the Mission, and his, at times, tacit consent to their being plundered by his followers, at other times, secret active assistance in their depredations, one is constrained to ask where else the Mission could have been more favourably situated? and the answer returns, practically nowhere else. That part of New Zealand, which is now Wellington, was subject to marauding influences. Hawkes Bay was no more fortunate. The Thames, while keenly sympathetic to the missionaries, was soon subjected to the bloodthirsty Hongi. Whangaroa had the "Boyd" massacre to its credit, and later on the breaking up of the Wesleyans. No! under the conqueror's wings there was a semblance of protection, although somewhat precarious.

Hongi was too cunning not to realize the value of trade with the Europeans, as also did Te Rauparaha, who went to the Cook Strait for the same purpose. Many of the acts of intimidation seem to have been pure Maori "bluff," terrifying to the wives, children, and settlers themselves; but generally ending in gifts of utility to Hongi or Rewa for acting as peace-makers.

Meanwhile, the seeds of civilization were slowly germinating, cleaner habits, a more plentiful diet, the value of medicine, care of the sick, the very children growing up under less pugnacious influences; and above all the ravages of war and its attendant griefs and sorrows—the whole culminating in that short period of fighting in which warrior after warrior followed Hongi to that bourne where trials of war are over, and troubles are at rest. The civilizing (?) influence of powder and muskets had rendered nugatory the strength and bravery of a Toa.

Yate (page 175), sums up the position (though unconsciously) while extolling the virtues of Hongi and his constant protection of the Keri Keri Mission—"From the date of his death the members of the Keri Keri ceased to bar their gates, and bolt their doors, whenever a strange party arrived; they seemed to enjoy a peace and security to which previously they had been strangers.]

CHAPTER V.

Rev. S. Marsden to Rev. J. Pratt.

PARRAMATTA,

March 21st, 1821.

Reverend and Dear Sir,

A whaler has just arrived from the Bay of Islands. The master informs me that there were seventeen whalers on the coast. As they all barter with muskets and powder, they will buy up all the animal food from the natives, and greatly distress the settlement for provisions for a time. It may seem strange that I have never been able from the first to convince the missionary settlers of the value of cattle. A moment's reflexion ought to be sufficient to convince the most ignorant of the vast importance of cattle in a new country, for labour, milk, butter, animal food, etc. Had the missionaries only attended to the cattle that have been imported, they would not now be in want of animal food. At one time I sent over six heifers—very fine ones. They informed me that they wanted a bull (*Did he think they would give milk, butter and animal food without?*) I sent them over two very fine English bulls. They neglected to put these to the heifers, so that they never bred (*How did they keep them apart? there were no fences in those days!*) When I returned in the Dromedary, I took more cattle over with me. On my arrival, I found the Revd. Mr. Butler had shot three of my heifers and two bulls, and also one cow in calf. When I asked him his reason for doing so, he said he wanted to get them into the settlement, and finding he could not, he shot five of them, and Shunghee shot one. I was much hurt at this circumstance, as it was defeating my intention towards New Zealand. Mr. Butler had no right to kill my cattle; it was a wanton, thoughtless act. The cattle would not have been worth much less than £100 in New South Wales. Their beef was very fat. (*Naturally! they were beef cattle—not milkers!*) Had they acted properly from the first, they would have had plenty of milk and butter and a considerable quantity of beef by this time. (*These were cattle, without the fecundity of rabbits!*) and would not have been so dependent upon the natives. (*Note—There were some fifty settlers in the settlement by this time; it reads like the parable of the loaves and fishes!*) If the Society could meet with a pious farmer, or a few families were settled upon the Society's land, this would be an excellent thing. I think there is little doubt they might soon maintain themselves if they were industrious. The whalers are like to ruin the whole country by importing such quantities of fire-arms and gunpowder. How this evil can be remedied, I know not—it is a great one.

I remain,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

Rev. J. Pratt, etc., etc.

SYDNEY,

August 11th, 1821.

Rev'd. and Dear Sir,

. . . . In my two visits to New Zealand, I was put to considerable expense. The Rev'd. J. Butler also killed five head of my cattle, and served the meat to the settlement. (*Did Marsden own land in New Zealand?*) Under the above circumstances I feel I have a claim on the Society to remunerate me in some degree for my losses and expenses. It is not necessary for me to make out any regular account, but to leave the matter to the consideration of the Committee. I have, therefore, taken the liberty to draw upon you for the sum of £100 on the above account. I flatter myself the Society will not think that sum too high, as I conceive the cattle would have been worth nearly that sum in Port Jackson, independent of the expenses of sending them to New Zealand. Should the Committee not approve of the bill, I will thank you to honour it, and I will settle with you when I receive information from you on the subject.

This complaint necessitates interesting research.

In 1814, the "Active" took the first cattle to New Zealand, there being one bull and two cows, presented by Governor Macquarie of New South Wales. One cow, owned by Ruatara, had a black bull calf shortly afterwards.

In May, 1817, Marsden sent his first cattle, six horned head (page 414, Historical Records of New Zealand).

In July, 1819, he sent four horned head and some sheep.

He says he sent them over two bulls, but the heifers have never bred. There is no official trace of this shipment.

Mr. Kendall, in answer to an enquiry of Commissioner Bigge, states: Nov. 8th, 1819, "There are twenty-five horned cattle and six sheep (the natives having three head of cattle)."

A further shipment of eight heifers and one draft bull had arrived per "Active" on October 28th, 1819.

This accounts for twenty-four of the twenty-five, yet Mr. Marsden says, "Butler shot three heifers, two bulls, and a cow and calf!" (page 567, H.R.N.Z.), and claims £100 for same. That is, up to Mr. Marsden's arrival per "Dromedary," February 28th, 1820.

Now let us examine Butler's official records of all the cattle transactions up to that date.

The progeny of Macquarie's gift were unquestionably not Marsden's; although he was evidently depending upon Macquarie's bull. There were no fences in those days, and no grass land; the cattle had to feed in the bush and on river banks, and risk accident through outraging "tapu."

NOVEMBER 18th. — Butler writes, "Caught cow and calf which we brought with us from Port Jackson."

24th.—Went into the bush to see if we could catch some cattle, which had run wild for some years past.

26th.—Our bull died, after all care had been taken with him.

27th.—Wm. Hall and others killed a bull in the bush.

DECEMBER 1st.—Built a stockyard for cattle.

FEBRUARY 5th.—Cow calved, bull calf.

FEBRUARY 9th.—Lost heifer by dysentery, and valuable ram by native dogs."

Rangihoua, where the cattle were liberated, must be thirty miles overland from Kerikeri, where Butler was stationed; although only about sixteen by water. It seems unreasonable for Mr. Marsden to expect the missionaries to attend to his beef cattle, when all their time was required in erecting their buildings.

However, let us examine further.

Dr. Fairfoul, in answer to Commissioner Bigge, May, 1821, "Mr. Marsden has twenty-three head that are grazing upon the missionary grounds, besides three or four cows that have escaped, and are running wild in the woods. They are in good condition. The missionaries had killed a bull, as it got wild, but Mr. Marsden had taken another over in the 'Dromedary.'"

Question: "Then no use has been made of these cattle in agriculture by the missionaries?"

Answer: "They were chiefly heifers and cows; besides, there was no one to break them in."

The "Dromedary" brought down more cattle and twelve yoke of oxen. The cattle were punted to Kerikeri, twenty miles by water, with the remark that food was very scarce. On April 14th, a cow, bullock, and two sheep were lost over-

board, while the "Dromedary" was cruising on the west coast near Hokianga.

DECEMBER, 1820.—"In the bush, looking after cattle," is another of Butler's entries.

About August, 1821, he writes, "The 'Active' came and brought down more cattle," and the trouble of tending these leads Butler to write to the Society in England, "I should like to know whether the cattle are Mr. Marsden's or the Society's." They had evidently caused trouble among the natives, as they had been shooting at them.

SEPTEMBER 7th, 1821.—"Four having small calves."

A few months afterwards is the entry "Secured bullocks out of the bush." (The "Dromedary" seems to have left some of the team behind. (See "Historical Records.") "Caught two bullocks for working them on the farm, and castrated three young bulls, about twelve months old."

14/5/22.—"This morning got in my black cow, she has a fine calf.

14/5/22.—"Sent down to Tooi (Tommy Tooi who had been in England) one young bull and one heifer." A cow and calf were given to the Wesleyans at Whangaroa the following year, and the cattle given by Sir Thomas Brisbane were evidently sent to Paroa. Sir Thomas Brisbane also gave the Wesleyan Mission eight cows, one bull, and six sheep, out of the N.S.W. Government stock.

This was apparently the climax to any ambition Mr. Marsden may have had as to owning a herd in New Zealand. Macquarie had made gifts in 1814. To Mr. Marsden's intense annoyance, Sir Thomas Brisbane had given Mr. Butler cattle; and now this last gift; his own were scattered throughout the bush, some of them wild, and the ownership doubtful. He therefore wrote to the Church Missionary Society, 15/1/1823, stating that there must be upwards of fifty head, and presenting them as a donation to the Society.

1824.—Kemp writes, "We have about thirty head of cattle which we keep together in one herd; several have, however, left the herd, and are running wild. The natives have not hitherto molested them, but many chiefs have requested to have a male and female."

Four years later, Earle expresses keen delight at falling in with a herd of at least one hundred head of fat cattle, when approaching the village of Kiri Kiri. (Earle's Nine Months in New Zealand, 1827). He does not express the same admiration for the hospitality of the settlement.

JANUARY 4th, 1821.

John Hunter, mate of the brig "Active," to Mr. Commissioner Bigge.

Question put to John Hunter: "What is the greatest quantity of pickled pork you have delivered to Mr. Marsden at Parramatta?"

Answer: "A ton was the largest quantity we ever delivered."

(Records show three.)

Ensign McCrae of 84th Regiment, to Mr. Commissioner Bigge.

Question: "Did the missionaries ever complain to you that the preference shewn by the natives for muskets and gunpowder, sold to them by the masters and crews of the whalers, is prejudicial to the trade that they wished to carry on with them?"

Answer: "They often made this complaint, and said they could hardly obtain provisions from the natives for the goods that they were allowed to exchange."

Question: "What are those goods?"

Answer: "Axes, hoes, plane irons, fish-hooks, etc. The same difficulty was experienced by the ship's company of the 'Dromedary,' and in consequence they were never able to procure by barter a fresh meal during the whole time that we were in New Zealand."

How then, was the Mission to secure cargo for the "Active?"

Dr. Fairfoul, of the "Dromedary," to Mr. Commissioner Bigge:

"I have known Mr. Butler to go fifteen miles for the purpose of purchasing a few hogs, and at the time he said he had not a piece of pork in his house."

GLOUCESTER TOWN,

New Zealand,

March 26th, 1821.

Revd. and Dear Sir,

As I have copied my journal, and sent it within a few days of the present date, I have nothing new to communicate, any further than stating that we are at this time on the most friendly terms with the natives, and possess both their confidence and esteem.

My natives, whom I employ in farming and fencing, gardening, etc., go on exceeding well, and improve very fast.

I shall not want any more wheat from Port Jackson for my family, and I hope to be enabled to relieve the settlement very much next year, as I have ten acres of land fit for wheat this seed time.

I have eight native sawyers cutting timber for my house at this time. The farmers and sawyers under my care are all victualled at our place—eighteen in number, and as Mrs. Butler has no assistant, poor woman, she is almost worked off her legs, but we assist each other, and do the best we can.

I have now an excellent garden full of vegetables of various sorts, and also a pretty good stock of young fruit trees, but no gooseberries or currants. I need not inform you how I have spent my time in New Zealand, as my journal will furnish you with every information on this subject.

As we have no school at present, nor means of supporting one, I endeavour to instruct the natives in temporal and spiritual things in the best way I can, and to the utmost of my power. In beginning a new colony or settlement, there is an amazing deal of work and labour to be done before it is possible to set on foot any regular spiritual instruction.

I apprehend the Committee are not sufficiently acquainted with local circumstances. In this heathen land there is no market to go to, therefore everyone is obliged to kill his own pork, and if he wants any comforts for his family, he must obtain them by his own industry, or be content to go without them, as New Zealand produces nothing but potatoes and pork.

On this account I am obliged to be engaged on many more secular affairs than I otherwise should be.

If the Committee would be so kind as to allow me a steady middle-aged man and his wife (without encumbrances), as servants, they could be a real blessing—the woman to assist Mrs. Butler in the female department, and the man to act as steward for me. This would ease my mind from a great deal of anxiety, as well as ease me of a great deal of labour, such as milking my cow, killing my hogs, going with the natives constantly, etc., etc.

As it is the desire of the Committee that I should attend especially to the native language and my ministerial duties, they would therefore enable me to do what is at present out of my power, which is, to devote the whole of my time to my proper duties and calling.

My son, Samuel Butler, is now returned from Port Jackson, and will assist me in getting my house forward, and other business, as well

as improve himself as fast as possible in the native language, and assist me in instructing the natives in every possible way.

The brig "Hope" came into the harbour on Wednesday evening last, bringing stores for our settlement, and having on board Mr. Haywood, Mr. Wilson, and their wives, for Otaheite. Mr. Marsden had intended to send down a little spirit to the settlement, but there was not room to get it on board.

Captain Grime informed him he could spare a little, and he ordered him to leave it at New Zealand, and get a bill on the Society in England for the same.

I have purchased eighteen gallons off him at 10/- per gallon, for to be divided amongst us, and I have drawn on you, Sir, for nine pounds, which you will have the goodness to pay, and charge the same to my account.

In my former letter I ordered some porter for my family. Messrs. Hall and Kemp desired me in this letter to order them two barrels each, to be packed in cases to prevent plunder. Mrs. Butler, myself, and family are quite well, and we present our affectionate love to you and all our dear friends.

Dear Sir,

Yours very affectionately,

JOHN.

Butler to C.M.S. (Evidently Josiah Pratt).

1821. DAILY OCCURRENCES IN NEW ZEALAND.

AUGUST 23rd, THURSDAY.—Received a letter from Mr. Wm. Hall, acknowledging his fault at the timber ground, in the following words:—

Rev'd. and Dear Sir,

I write these few lines hoping they will meet with your compassionate consideration. I am heartily sorry for the misunderstanding that took place between Samuel and myself at the timber ground, etc.

After such an acknowledgment as this, I am heartily sorry that I have written the words of Mr. Shepherd and Mr. Butler to the Society; if I could have conveniently taken them from my journal they should not have appeared.

I have also received a letter from Captain Thompson, of the brig "Active," dated Sydney, April 14th, 1821.

Prince Street, SYDNEY,

14th April, 1821.

Revd. and Dear Sir,

I beg to inform you that the draft for £2 15s 9d, which I received from you on account of timber supplied the settlement by Mr. John King, Mr. Marsden has refused to pay. I am sorry to say that the Society's concerns go on here in a very curious way at present. To-morrow morning I expect to sail for the Derwent on a fishing voyage. I suppose the "Active" will return to you when she comes from the Derwent, but if things remain in their present state, it is not my intention to sail in her any longer. Please make my respects to Mrs. Butler and your son Samuel, to Mr. and Mrs. Kemp, to Mr. Francis Hall, and I remain,

Dear Sir,

Yours respectfully,

(Signed) JOSEPH THOMPSON.

The draft is as follows:—

Nov. 8th, 1819.

Sir,

Please to pay Capt. Thompson the sum of two pounds fifteen shillings for timber received from Mr. John King, according to the above date, for and on account of the Church Missionary Society.

Sir,

Your obedt. servant,

JOHN BUTLER.

To the Rev. Saml. Marsden,
N.S. Wales.

Endorsed—Mr. Marsden declines to sanction the payment of this draft.

(Signed) R. CAMPBELL.

10th March, 1821.

Now how to assign a reason for Mr. Marsden's thus acting I am at an entire loss. Is the bill unjust? then I ought to be punished. Is it a just demand? then Mr. Marsden ought to have paid it; and in not doing so, he has done enough to wound the feelings of every honest heart, as well as making me look extremely mean, at least. When Mr. Marsden came down to New Zealand with us in the "General Gates," he saw the timber in question, and promised payment to Mr. King in my presence. But after he and Mr. King fell out, he turned Mr. King over into my hands, saying he wished me to take charge of Mr. King and his concerns, and further he would not answer any bills drawn by Mr. King, except they had my signature affixed to them; but he also assured me that whatever bills

I drew on him for the purpose of carrying on the Society's work, he would answer and pay. I considered Mr. King's demand a just one, on account of timber, and gave him a promissory note for the payment of the same. It happened that Mr. King had need of things which Capt. Thompson had to spare when in New Zealand, and for which he wished me to give a draft on Mr. Marsden for the timber received. This I accordingly did, and for which Mr. Marsden has refused to pay. There were fifteen logs, and all of them exceeding good. I well remember that one log turned out upwards of seven hundred feet of boards. The whole was sawn, and was applied to building the store, in which my family, Messrs. Bean, Fairburn and Puckey now reside. The whole was bought with powder and half a musket, the other half of the purchase for the musket being mats; those Mr. King kept.

This being the case, it will lead me to a painful explanation of circumstances which I intended never to bring into public notice.

In this case, Mr. Marsden acts with partiality and injustice. He bought two muskets off Mr. Wm. Hall, and twenty pounds of powder, and paid him for his timber bought with the same sort of payment. These muskets were laid out for the purchase of pork, for the general good of the settlement; and powder in payment for sawing of timber, purchase of potatoes, as well as fifty-six more of powder purchased by Mr. Marsden of Mr. Wm. Hall. . . . Mr. Hall's account I have by me: these things have never appeared in the public minutes, everyone knowing that the whole world would condemn the issue thereof. Moreover, Mr. Marsden bought four casks of powder at Port Jackson at the time we arrived there of the ship "Baring," Capt. Lamb, I understand, at 2s 3d per pound, weighing, I believe, two hundredweight. This was done without any application on our part. I had no gun, and was therefore not in need of powder. These were shipped by his order, and brought down to New Zealand, and turned into the common stock or store, and part of same he delivered with his own hand to Shunghee and Rewah, when he bought the land at Kiddee Kiddee. To Shunghee he delivered a large kettle full; it was put into the kettle, and filled until it ran over. To Rewah he gave half a gallon, in a beer measure, but neither the one nor the other was inserted in the deeds. The rest was disposed of in the purchase of pork, potatoes, and in payment of timber, sawing, etc., etc.

At this time Mr. Kendall had a quantity of pork to dispose of, say twelve to a ton, which had been purchased with powder and muskets; this he purchased for himself, and took away to Port Jackson, altho' when he left there was not more than a fortnight's pork in the store.

At the very time he held a committee, saying he would not allow the sale of muskets and powder any longer. There was then about one hundredweight of powder in the store, which was bought and put there by himself. Moreover, I asked him at the committee pointedly, what I was to do as superintendent, in case the settlement was without meat, and could not obtain it without guns; he answered, "I will not buy them for you; but you must do the best you can, and I will answer your bills."

Not to say anything of the disgraceful trick of dishonouring my bill, but I think it a shame that he should pay one man and not another.

Moreover, Mr. Marsden would be thought not to encourage or even permit the sale of any war implements, when it is clear he was the first man who ever bartered with such things.

When he first came down to New Zealand, he purchased a quantity of potatoes and flax on the beach at Rangihoo for a musket; the testimony I had from Mr. Hall, and Mr. King, and Mr. Kendall; also that the "Active's" cargo was bought with a musket, or muskets and powder; and further, that Mr. Marsden afterwards sent down to New Zealand fifty-one bayonets at one time, seventeen of which Mr. King received as his portion, to barter with to the natives for potatoes.

My foreman, Tywongah, was pierced with a bayonet fastened to the end of a spear. These sort of things are most terrific weapons, and therefore the natives are excessively fond of them. And further, when Mr. Marsden was here with the "Dromedary," he informed me that a gentleman at the University of Oxford had applied to him for native head or heads, and he signified his desire for obtaining a skull or two without hair. I must confess (tho' I said nothing), it appeared a strange and unnatural thing to me. However, he employed Mr. Wm. Hall to go to the village of Rangee Hoo to see if he could purchase such a thing. I am credibly informed that before he left New Zealand he purchased two native heads.

One head he purchased of one of my native sawyers, who journeyed with him to New Zealand. I saw the head in the

native's possession before he took it on board, and when he came back I asked him what he had done with the head, and he said he had sold it to Mr. Marsden for an axe. He then showed me an axe, which he said he got in payment for the head.

I make no comment on these things; I leave them for others.

As superintendent, I sold the two guns and powder for supplies for the settlement, which were furnished by Mr. Marsden, except such as my brethren paid for work, etc., etc., but I never bought an ounce myself, or paid away any, besides what he put into the store. I have always manifested my utter detestation of such traffic, and I have not issued a single grain since the last committee held for the prohibition thereof, which is now about sixteen months ago, and I am determined to leave New Zealand rather than deal in such things.

This afternoon Mr. Kendall arrived at Kiddee Kiddee with Mr. Kemp; we were glad to see Mr. Kendall that we might enquire into the extraordinary conduct of Shunghee. Mr. Kendall went and brought Shunghee down, and when we were all together, an explanation, or rather a declaration, was made by Shunghee, as follows: — First he charged me with doing what I could to hinder him from going to England. I told him this was true, and that we all wished him not to go. But the reason of our doing so, I said, was because we loved him and his family, and people, and we were afraid the cold weather in England would kill him. He said that my words were all nonsense, and that we wished to hinder him getting muskets and powder.

He then charged me with writing a bad letter to the Missionary House. I told him this was false; I did not write at all. He then said Mr. Marsden wrote a bad letter to England about Mr. Kendall and him.

He also stated that after they had got to sea, Mr. Kendall showed a letter which was no good; it was an order for axes and such things, but no powder or muskets, and he snatched it out of his hand, and tore it up, and threw it overboard. I told him I knew nothing about it.

He then went on and told a long story concerning the bad language he met with in England, (what he meant by bad language is that your Society spake against their having powder and muskets). Wykato, being here, I asked him what

he had to say about it, and he replied that the people at the Waree Karrakeeah are bad, and the Karrakeeah itself, was no good for the New Zealand man.

Mr. Shunghee then went on concerning the treatment they met with at Port Jackson on their return, and said they were very angry with Mr. Marsden because, as they consider, they did not use them well. He then said he told Mr. Marsden he would send me away from New Zealand as soon as he got down.

I told him if it was on account of the powder and muskets, I was willing to go, as I never more would sell or give away the one or the other. He said it was good for me to go away. I told him that if I went, I hoped he would let me take my property away. No answer. He now acknowledged that he told his people it would be very good to rob and plunder Mr. Puckey. We all expressed our sorrow at this, and told him we had been very kind to his family in his absence. He said that was very good, and after a good deal of desultory discourse, he set off to his place.

From these few facts you may learn something of the dreadful prejudice of Shunghee's mind. This must certainly have been instilled into his mind by Brother Kendall. To use the words of Mr. Shepherd and Mr. F. Hall, it really is a sad thing, and Mr. Kendall has done more harm in this thing and taking Shunghee to England, than he will do good in his lifetime. Having now begun to break into our dwellings in mid-day, our property or persons can no longer be secure a moment.

After Shunghee was gone, we sat down and had some conversation to see how to act in this dreadful business. Mr. Kendall pleaded for the sale of these things, and said he would sell a musket as soon as he would a dollar, without any reference to what they might do with it. Now this quite upsets everything, for if one of the Society's servants sells these forbidden things, and the rest do not, it would be a moral impossibility for them to stop, because he who gratifies the natural desires of the savage hearts, he and he only is the man for them. Such a one will be called the great Rangaterah, while all the rest will be insulted and robbed, and plundered without mercy.

FRIDAY, AUGUST 24th.—This morning Shunghee sent sixteen hogs to Mr. Kendall, and some mats; these are for a double-barreled gun. Set off with Mr. Kendall for Rangee Hoo, to visit Mr. Wm. Hall's little daughter, dangerously ill.

When I arrived I found her in an exceeding weak state, and reduced almost to a skeleton. The child seemed to be very glad at my friendly visit, and revived at the little attention and encouragement I endeavoured to administer.

I then visited Mr. King's family, and drank tea with them. While we were at tea, Mrs. King, who had been seriously ill, but was considerably recovered, was taken suddenly ill. She fainted, and Mr. King and I were obliged to carry her and lay her on the bed. She revived a little, and then went off into a sinking fit, sometimes struggling, and at other times almost lifeless. I remained about two hours, when she seemed a little recovered, and I left them and went to Mr. Kendall's to sleep.

SUNDAY MORNING.—After breakfast and prayer, I paid another visit to Mr. Hall's little daughter, and Mr. King's family, and was glad to find Mrs. K. better, but very low; the little girl much the same. After these things, I returned to Kiddee Kiddee. Afternoon, reading, etc.

SUNDAY, AUGUST 26th, 1821.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY, 27th AUGUST.—Writing the whole day, many natives prowling about like evening wolves, but little damage has been done to-day.

TUESDAY, 28th AUGUST, 1821.—This morning, Captain Graham, of ship "Catherine," whaler, came to Kiddee Kiddee, bringing his mate and steward, to make three affidavits in favour of a Mr. Clark, of the ship "General Gates," concerning a quarrel between him and Capt. Riggs, of the said ship.

As the boat touched the shore, the natives rushed down on the men, and took away everything they could lay their hands on, as provisions, clothes, etc., among which were a new jacket and pair of trousers, and a waistcoat front, belonging to Bean and Fairburn, carpenters, which had been sent on board the "Catherine" to be made up. At this time Shunghee was in the midst of them, but he never opened his lips. Shunghee turned into Mr. Bean's house, and I remonstrated with several of the chiefs, who laughed and said if I would pay them, they would see what they could do to get them back.

In about an hour, Messrs. Bean and Fairburn's things were brought back. The native who had the jacket went vaunting into his place with it on his greasy back, but they were obliged to give an axe and a knife before they would give them up—indeed, they wanted four axes.

In the afternoon another boat came to Kiddee Kiddee, belonging to the "Vansittart," whaler, to a place a little distant from the settlement. They purchased a lot of pigs with a musket, and after they had got them into the boat, the natives dragged them out again, and would have succeeded in getting them all away, had not Rewah stood their friend. He had a sharp scuffle with several of them in the water. He endeavoured to pull them away by the hair of their heads.

WEDNESDAY, AUGUST 29th, 1821.—This morning Mrs. Fairburn was safely delivered of a fine girl. Mrs. Butler attended her, and I am happy to say that the mother and child are likely to do well. This morning the natives behaved very bad; they got over a seven-foot fence into the place where the carpenters are at work building my house, and took from them one hand-saw, one hammer, one gimlet. They were obliged immediately to leave off work, and carry as many of the tools as they could collect indoors. They now came to me to consult me upon the propriety of detaining a ship, and of obtaining assistance and protection from the rest, as there were seven whalers in the harbour at this time; in order to get safe away with our property. I told them we must endeavour to keep our ground a little longer, and that work had better be dropped until the natives were gone away to fight.

About noon two boats came to the settlement to deal for pork, having Thos. Hansen, the man who was formerly employed by Mr. Marsden, for an interpreter. They bought two lots for two muskets, and returned.

I conferred with Mr. F. Hall and Mr. Kemp about enquiring of the present captain of the "Sarah," named Hunter, who took the command at Port Jackson, as Capt. Munro died there, about Kendall's conduct during the voyage. Captain Hunter was mate of the "New Zealander," on her voyage to England with Shunghee and Wykato, and Mr. Kendall.

I went down to Pirroah, in a boat belonging to the "Indian," which put me on board the "Sarah." I had some conversation with Capt. Hunter and Mr. Munro (son of the deceased), chief mate of the "Sarah," concerning Shunghee and Wykato's behaviour on board.

They both testified that their behaviour was exceeding bad, and that Mr. Kendall encouraged them in it. Wykato, they declared, would have killed the cook, had not Capt. Hunter run to his assistance in a moment. They further stated

that Mr. Kendall (they were sure and certain), did all in his power to prejudice their minds against me, and against Mr. Marsden, as men who stopped the sale of muskets and powder, and in every other possible way.

When the "Sarah" first came into the Bay of Islands, Capt. Munro sent for me to go and see him, as he was then very ill. I went to see him, and Mr. F. Hall accompanied me. I also gave him a milk goat, in order to afford him a little comfort. We found him very ill, and I was afraid I should not have another opportunity, our conversation being on religious subjects, and the vast importance of the salvation of the soul, and eternity. The poor old gentleman was much pleased with me, and my brother Hall, and thanked us heartily for the instruction and comfort we attempted to administer to him.

In speaking of his voyage home, he complained most bitterly of Mr. Kendall's conduct, for he not only personally insulted him himself, but encouraged the natives to do it also. He went on in that sort of strain, until both of us were ashamed.

It being now evening, Capt. Graham sent for me to go and take supper with him, which request I complied with. I did not let anyone know my errand, neither did I think it prudent to enquire how much powder or how many guns Mr. Kendall had furnished him with since his return from England, inasmuch as I well knew he had furnished him with both. However, I saw on the ship's deck an empty powder cask, and asked one of the men where they got it when full. He readily answered, "From Mr. Kendall's."

THURSDAY, AUGUST 30th.—This morning, Mr. Clark, formerly of the ship "General Gates," came to fetch me on board the "Cumberland" in order to have two affidavits made in his favour by Capt. Brend and Capt. Wyer. I went with him, and intended to proceed to Kiddee Kiddee as soon as the business was over; but a gale of wind came on and detained me prisoner until Saturday morning, when Capt. Wyer kindly brought me home.

SATURDAY AFTERNOON.—Reading, etc.

SUNDAY, SEPTEMBER 2nd.—Divine Service, morning and evening. Administered the Holy Sacrament.

MONDAY, SEPTEMBER 3rd.—Writing the whole day. Shunghee and two of his sons dined with me this day; his

fury and malice seem to be a little abated. He was in a very good humour, and said all was peace now; but I do not think he will ever be right until he has a magazine of muskets and powder at all times to go to. He seems very averse to anything that is good; he says it is not good for his children to learn to read and write.

The natives are peaceable and quiet to-day; but how long it will last it is hard to say. The carpenters and sawyers have resumed their work, and going on with my house. Our trials are great and numberless; we have great need of being strong in faith, in order to stand fast and give glory to God. Blessed be His holy Name, he sitteth between the Cherubims, be earth never so unquiet. He is our strength and weakness. He is our refuge in the needful time of trouble. He is our health in sickness, and life in death.

TUESDAY.—Writing the whole day. The natives have been very troublesome; they have been exercising their war canoes the most part of the day.

WEDNESDAY, SEPTEMBER 5th.—This morning, Shunghee, Rewah, and several other chiefs came and breakfasted with me, and several others got over my fence and stole an axe, and my sawyers' food from them, as they were eating at the door. I endeavoured to reason with them, but that was no use.

It may be seen that Shunghee has become so intolerably insolent since his return from England, that he not only comes into our place without leave himself, but on his account the very "cookeys" are saucy to the last degree. What the end will be, I do not know, time will shew. This day, about noon, Shunghee, Rewah, and all their chiefs set off on a war expedition to the River Thames—indeed, the whole country for a hundred miles or more, are already on their way, and Shunghee and Rewah, and Wykato, and their men, are the last, in order to bring up the rear.

The general place of assemblage is Wangahree, about one hundred miles from the place of action.

There has never been anything like such an arrangement in New Zealand before. Tooi, Teterce, and all their friends are in the general onset. Shunghee and Wykato have returned from England with a great quantity of guns, swords, powder, balls, daggers, etc., etc., etc., and thus they are fully armed to murder, kill and destroy, without reserve, which is the highest pitch of glory to a savage of New Zealand!!!

I have the names of persons, savages, to whom Mr. Kendall has disposed of twenty-one guns and two pistols, besides others whose names I know not.

GUNS PARTED WITH BY MR. KENDALL SINCE HIS
RETURN FROM ENGLAND.

To Raku and his wife	3
„ Wharrie Pork (Whare Poaka)	1
„ Maku	1
„ Dudungah	1 and 1 pistol
„ Kiddee pido	1 „ 1 „
„ Kidar Waiheeno (Kira)	1
„ Jackey Terrah	2
„ Whahienu warro	1
„ Mowhunnah	1
„ Tadenanah and brother	2
„ Tohedeedee	1
„ Shunghie	1 for his watch.
„ O'Gunnah (Horiokuna)	1
„ Wharemokiki	1
„ A Towah	1
„ Torrah	1
„ Teteree	1

This is heartbreaking work, especially when it is considered they are going to destroy a harmless and defenceless people, to cut off every living creation, the husband with the mother and child sucking at the breast, and to feast on them with a sanguinary and savage delight too dreadful to think on. We are all persuaded that there are a little less than a thousand stand of arms amongst them on this occasion, with plenty of ammunition.

I asked Rewah this morning if they intended to save any of the people alive. He said there would be very few saved, if any, and they would be women and boys.

He said a warrior would save a woman for a wife, but every woman that was saved must be of particular beauty. Little boys would in some measure be spared, as they could bring them up as slaves, and as they grew they would have neither knowledge of their father or mother, or any enmity against them.

I then asked him if there were any chiefs they wished in particular to kill, and he named to me eight, viz.:—Henac-

kee, To Tohee, Kowoï and his brother, Hiwahkar, Moodeepang, Matohee, Potehorah, and all the people.

Mr. Marsden and myself, in our journey to Mogoia, Manakau, and Kiperro, were through the several districts belonging to the above people, and as I have before observed, we were treated with the greatest kindness at every place.

THURSDAY, 6th.—This morning took a walk round my farm, and am happy to say the growing crops look very well. Afternoon, writing. James Boyle, saltmaker, came to Kiddee Kiddee in a boat belonging to the “Indian.” His house has been burnt down, and his property most of it destroyed, or stolen by a party of natives going to this fight at the River Thames. It appears he was not on shore when the business took place, but on board the ship “Catherine.” He had gone thither to inform Capt. Graham that a man by the name of Johnson had run away from his ship, and come to his place, but he had left a man named Ferguson, a sailor, to keep the saltworks going until his return. He states that when he arrived, he found the house burnt to the ground, and a ton or more of salt destroyed, and most of his trade and other property gone. He brought up the man to my place, whom he had left in charge in his absence, who made the following statement on oath:

I, James Ferguson, do hereby make oath in the presence of Almighty God, that on Saturday morning, September 1st, 1821, between two and three o’clock, a fire broke out in a slave’s house adjoining to the house of James Boyle, saltmaker, but do not know how it came on fire. I could have quenched the flames, only, in attempting to do this, the natives pushed me away with the water in my hand, and immediately they rushed into the dwelling of James Boyle, and stole everything they could get hold on, and when the flames became so strong as to prevent them stopping in the house any longer, they set to knock down the fowls out of the trees, and wasted them in the fire, and took some away. I have been at work for James Boyle for some time, and believe there was 30 cwt. of salt in the house at the time it took fire, most of which was destroyed. The natives that committed the deed were strangers going on a war expedition.

JAMES FERGUSON (X) His mark.

Sworn before me this fifth day of September in the year of our Lord 1821.

JOHN BUTLER, J.P.

James Boyle, of course, expects the Society to make good his loss.

FRIDAY, SEPTEMBER 7th. — This morning we were again thrown into alarm by a report brought that the natives down the river were shooting our cattle. Mr. F. Hall, myself, my son and the carpenters and our native sawyers, set off immediately to see if the news was correct. On our arrival we found that the cattle had been shot at, but the man of whom we enquired, said it was only by blank cartridge. He further said that it was on purpose to drive them away. We told them that, as the cattle were not trespassing on their farms or near their dwellings, and that it was impossible that they should do them any injury on account of a deep river between them, therefore we did not like they should do this even out of sport. We then left them and returned home to dinner. Afternoon, writing. Sent away my son, Samuel Butler, James Boyle, and a crew of natives to the saltworks, to fetch away such part of the salt as was saved from the general conflagration.

In the evening, the natives, whom we sent after the cattle, returned, bringing the herd, four of which had calved within a few days. If the natives would leave us alone, we should very soon be independent of them for any supplies, and have plenty to dispose of besides.

SATURDAY, SEPTEMBER 8th.—In the morning in the garden; afternoon, reading and writing.

SUNDAY, SEPTEMBER 9th.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY, SEPTEMBER 10th.—This morning my son and myself, and a party of natives, set off down the river to cut wood for to burn lime, to build chimney to the house now erecting for my family. Cut six canoe loads. Mr. Kendall came up in the afternoon and remained all night for the benefit of his health, being very poorly. In the evening I was taken very ill with a pain in the stomach; took a strong dose of calomel and rhubarb, and the next morning found myself much relieved.

TUESDAY MORNING.—Spent with Mr. Kendall in conversation about missionary business; afternoon, took a walk, being very poorly. The remaining part of the week I have been attending to burning of lime, gardening, etc.

SUNDAY, SEPTEMBER 16th.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

SATURDAY EVENING, SEPTEMBER 22nd.—This week I have been with my son and Mr. Puckey very busy employed in lining a kitchen to my house now building, and erecting a chimney. In the course of another week I hope it will be tenable, and then I shall be a little more comfortable, and my family.

SUNDAY, SEPTEMBER 23rd.—Divine Service, morning and evening. Church'd Mrs. Fairburn.

SATURDAY, SEPTEMBER 29th.—This week we have been going on with the kitchen and some outhouses. I have moved my family into the kitchen, altho' it is not finished, there being no window or upper floor at present. However, this is much more comfortable than the wretched place I lived in before.

My native sawyers and servants during the last fortnight wrought very hard, and rendered me every assistance in their power. I have now three native girls and ten young men employed.

The settlement has been very quiet ever since Shunghee and his mob went away to fight at the River Thames. The growing crops look remarkably well at this time, as well as my garden.

SEPTEMBER 30th.—Divine Service, morning and evening. Christened Mrs. Fairburn's child—Elizabeth Fairburn.

MONDAY, 1st, 2nd, 3rd, and 4th.—Held the first quarterly committee, and transacted the general business of the Mission.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—Writing.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

Administered the Holy Sacrament.

And now, Dear Sir, permit me to conclude these remarks. I have written them in order to shew you how I have been obliged to spend my time, rather than for anything interesting that I may suppose contained therein.

Dr. Sir, I remain your ever affectionate and faithful servant,

JOHN BUTLER.

To the Rev. Josiah Pratt,
C.M.S., London.

Copied and sent by the "Cumberland," Capt. Brend,
Nov., 1821.

KIDDEE KIDDEE,

October 10th, 1821.

Rev'd. and Dear Sir,

I have to acknowledge receipt of your kind and affectionate letter dated London, Nov. 27th, 1820, also of a general letter to the missionaries and settlers, and the instructions of the Committee relative to the future proceedings of the missionaries, schoolmasters, and settlers, etc., etc. But your letter of the 20th July, I have not received. The instructions, as you will observe, were read, and thankfully accepted at the quarterly meeting, and from my heart I hope they may be acted upon faithfully and truly, by every servant of the Society.

However, I can speak for one, that is myself, that it shall, and not only will be my duty, but my study and desire to fulfil and adhere to all instructions given by the Society.

There is one thing in the instructions which I think deserves particular notice, that is, the request of a report in writing from each missionary, schoolmaster, etc., etc., to be signed and delivered at quarterly meetings; and also the indents of articles wanted, stating specifically the objects for which they are designed; this will preclude the necessity of their being opened at Port Jackson, which is considered by all missionaries as a great evil. It will also encourage everyone to go on with his particular department, while it calls upon him to give an answer of his work.

For my own part, I should wish all indents to pass through Mr. Marsden's hands, or any other gentleman the Society may think fit to appoint. But I do not think any individual at Port Jackson can be a competent judge of all and every article that may be wanted in New Zealand. All things that are wanted from Port Jackson, Mr. Marsden will be able to judge of the expediency, according to the indent, and objects for which they are designed. But not so for articles wanted from England. In this land of uncertainty and difficulty, the missionary who is on the spot is the only man who is able to give any tolerable idea of what may be wanted, in order to carry on the great work which he has undertaken. If he be a faithful man, he will not put the Society to a farthing expense beyond what is absolutely necessary.

If he be an unfaithful servant, the sooner he is got rid of the better, and as every man likes to feel his station, so everyone wishes to be entrusted with such things as may enable him to carry on his particular branch of doing good to the poor benighted heathen. On this account I think the Society have at length hit upon a plan which will meet the wishes of every one of the servants, while it will lay the strongest obligation on everyone to do his duty.

The New Zealand Mission is peculiar from any other of the Society's missions. In short, New Zealand is covered over with fern, and weeds, and brush, and woods, and the natives are covered with lice and filth to the last degree, and they are a proud, savage, and obstinate, and cruel race of cannibals withal. Every missionary has a great deal of heavy labour to perform, and many provocations to undergo, before he does anything according to the religious world.

Mr. Marsden sent down a letter to New Zealand, (which is enclosed); proposing to pay everyone a specific sum annually for his services. This I consider as another good thing, someone or other has at all

times felt himself more or less injured by the issuing of rations; but on the present plan everyone will have to procure for himself; and this will cause some to look out a little sharper than they have heretofore. Everyone, as you will see, gave in his statement at the quarterly meeting what he considered a sufficient annual salary.

I have drawn a bill on you, Sir, for £200, for one year's salary, being the same as Mr. Kendall receives, and payable to Mr. Broughton, which you will have the goodness to honour and pay when it becomes due.

I handed the public letter to all the brethren, and read it at the quarterly meeting.

All regulations that have been sent by the Society have been calculated to promote harmony, peace, and goodwill if they had been strictly adhered to, but we know nothing of humility, everyone is jealous lest another should obtain a fish-hook more than himself, or that another should have a leaf in the wreath that adorns his brow, more than themselves, however hard he may have laboured to obtain it. With respect to muskets and powder, I must be plain in saying that I do not think they will cease being issued, altho' it may not be done by choice, yet I am persuaded that it will be done; and further, I do consider that the repairing of old muskets is equal to the selling of new ones, inasmuch as a musket which is out of repair is of no use. I have never heard of any ships touching on this coast bartering or introducing spirituous liquors among the natives. I believe, generally speaking, they have none to spare, and are often very short.

I am very happy to see that the Society have given agriculture a consideration, inasmuch as I am persuaded that at some future day it will be the grand means of carrying on great and blessed work in which we are engaged. In a land like this that produces nothing of itself, there must, of necessity, be everything to do, in order to provide the comforts and necessities of life, and these cannot be obtained in any other way.

The horses are doing well, and the cattle are doing well at this time. I should like to know whether the horses and cattle are Mr. Marsden's or the Society's; however I have done all in my power to preserve them. I have had a lad continually minding them for many months. You mention a supply of all kinds of stores as being forwarded, and desire the utmost economy, care, and prudence in the expenditure thereof. All that I can say on this part of the business, that Mr. Marsden sent a quantity of stores down to N.Z. by Mr. Kendall, to his care, for the use of the settlement at R. Hoo, and also a quantity for Kiddee Kiddee, directed to Mr. F. Hall. I assisted all in my power to get the same to Kiddee Kiddee, and they are all placed at the disposal of Mr. F. Hall.

Whatever I lay our for timber, sawing, food, or in any other way whatever, yea even a fish-hook, I cannot obtain without giving a written order for it. You may think this astonishing, but I will show you as much as I know of the cause of this edict ere I close this letter.

When I arrived in New Zealand, I was placed in the most difficult position by Mr. Marsden. He framed rules and regulations at Port Jackson, which we brought with us, and which were read and adopted at the first committee. But there was not a single person who did not in a very short time manifest a determination not to follow or be led by them.

The first thing to be done was to look out for a spot to settle, and Mr. Marsden proposed Kiddee Kiddee, which we readily agreed to. On this spot the fern was growing seven feet high. Now, if you consider that the same must be cleared, and all the timber for building to be fetched from twenty-five to thirty miles, you must be convinced that somebody must do a great deal of work. Now it fell to my lot to look after it, according to Mr. Marsden's request. We were obliged to build a hut before we could do anything else. Mr. F. Hall being chosen secretary and storekeeper, he did not go very often out of his department. Mr. Kemp went to work at his trade in Mr. Kendall's shop, and the carpenters to preparing some stuff that was already sawn.

Mr. Marsden ordered me to request Messrs Gordon and Carlisle to go with me into the wood, to cut trees for the punt, and to burn charcoal for the blacksmith. This they refused to do, saying that they did not come to New Zealand for any such purpose, neither to work or labour themselves, but only to teach the natives, but at that time we were hard set to get natives, as I objected to pay them in powder.

Mr. King said he could not, nor would he perform such work and labour, and Mr. Kendall pleaded incapability, and pleaded to be excused.

Mr. Marsden also ordered me to have a bell rung in the morning and at dinner time, in order to call all hands to work; this gave great offence to all the missionaries, and rendered me odious in their sight, saying they were not convicts.

However, I was determined to follow Mr. Marsden's plan of forwarding the work as far as possible.

I next applied to Mr. Marsden for more strength, and he engaged Thos. Hansen and James Boyle, the saltmaker, to assist me.

The "Active" came, and brought down more cattle, and Mr. Marsden hired a third man, named Richard Russell.

The punt being finished, we took a quantity of sawn stuff for Kiddee Kiddee, for the carpenters to build a blacksmith's shop and storehouse.

I kept working the punt backwards and forwards for some months, generally making one of the crew myself, and sometimes out on the water all night.

I set on as many natives to fetch timber, clear the ground, as possible, etc., etc.

Mr. Wm. Hall at this time did what he could to forward the work, and we soon got the pair of sawyers going at Kidee.

Toward the end of the month of December, the present store was covered in, and we determined to go to our station. Mr. Hall and Mr. Kemp choosed to have the house which is intended for a blacksmith's shop, and myself and all the carpenters turned into the store, altho' it had no ground or upper floor.

The next thing was to build a dwelling house for someone. Mr. Kemp said he thought Mr. Hall's house ought to be built first, as Mr. Marsden had not brought down a single nail, which was the case, for any purpose, and Mr. F. Hall had them of his own.

I thought I had as fair a claim as anyone for a house, but I did not object, and Messrs. Hall and Kemp's house was begun.

On 27th February, H.M.S. "Dromedary" came into the harbour, having on board the Revd. Samuel Marsden.

The first thing Mr. Marsden did for me was to take away Mr. Wm. Hall to act as interpreter for them, and to assist in procuring timber, and from that day to the present moment, Mr. Wm. Hall has done but very little at Kiddee Kiddee.

Now this was not very pleasant to me to see Mr. Hall walking the "Dromedary's" deck as a gentleman, and myself left with the burden of the work, and while he was receiving many things for his services, I was working hard for the Society, and living almost out of doors.

Instead, therefore, of having nothing to do but a general superintendence, I have been actually engaged in the most slavish part of the building department up to the present day. Nor was I at all better in the victualling department, for the old servants of the Society could not bear the thought of being rationed. They immediately turned sulky, and would render me no assistance in procuring supplies. I was therefore compelled to buy the hogs, etc., potatoes for both settlements, as well as for all natives employed, and was continually meeting with insult and ill-will. Mr. F. Hall served other meat to the Europeans, but then it was always prepared ready for him.

I spoke of this to Mr. Marsden, and he said that Mr. Hall had nothing to do with procuring supplies for the stores. I had great trouble to procure pork and potatoes, and especially as muskets and powder were ordered to be stopped. My little shed also, which I had built to cook in, was more like a butcher's shop, with meat about and filth, than anything else, and, to say the least, it rendered Mrs. Butler wretched, while other women were sitting at home in comfortable houses, with little to do, and she was obliged to become slave for the whole, and moreover, I have frequently had the meat sent back, saying it was not good, but it is true and certain it was always the best I could get. At other times I have been charged with keeping the best joints for my own use; this is very false, for we have ever gone without fresh meat, in order to serve the settlement. We had a survey on meat sent back, by Mr. Marsden, who declared it to be as good as need be.

I have often thought of the words of Moses, "Why chide ye me; Lord, what have I done unto this people, they be almost ready to stone me?"

At length I told Mr. Marsden that something must be done, as it was impossible to go on after that fashion; it was too much both for Mrs. Butler and myself. It was then proposed for everyone to take as much trade as was sufficient to purchase pork and potatoes, and let each provide for himself. This plan eased the burden from my shoulders, and gave general satisfaction.

Mrs. Butler and myself have had many a heartache on account of the victualling department.

With respect to the agriculture department, when Mr. Marsden came down in the "Dromedary," he wrote me a letter pressing upon me the necessity of forwarding this branch with all my might. This I was already doing, for I had at that time twelve natives clearing and breaking up land for wheat. But the wheat which Mr. Marsden brought down to New Zealand was not good; however, I reaped about forty bushels of oats and twelve bushels of barley.

Things passed on in this way until October 22nd, 1820.

When Mr. Marsden came from Wangahroah, with Mr. Fairfoul, surgeon of the "Dromedary," I made complaint to him that the carpenters had been saucy to me, and Mr. Wm. Hall being continually at the "Dromedary" and myself left alone to carry on all the work, I was completely set fast. Mr. Marsden did not do as I expected he would—enter into my feelings, and devise some means of redress—but said, you must do this, and order that man to do so and so, and another to do so and so. I said, "Sir, I am quite tired of having everything thrown on my hands, and the permanent servants of the Society will not be commanded by me; yea, and others are very insolent, (this is certainly true), for the emancipated convicts even told Mrs. Butler to her face she ought to wash their clothes; and often they would come into the place and throw the victuals about, if it did not exactly please them." I told Mr. Marsden I did not bring Mrs. Butler into New Zealand to cook and do for such blackguards.

Mr. Marsden appeared vexed at this, and went out and wrote me a letter, desiring that I should state to him what authority I wished to retain in the Mission. I was so much grieved that Mr. Marsden should put such a question to me, after labouring night and day, while others were standing idle, I wrote him an answer immediately, that I desired no authority at all, because I conceived that a Christian Minister has all he wants in his appointment to the sacred office, but I have never had any time to attend to my proper duties. For, instead of having only a few secular engagements, I have had nothing else, neither have I up to the present date, and all I wanted was Mr. Marsden to arrange things so as to enable me to act a little more in character.

Mr. Marsden then, without consulting me any further, sent for Mr. Wm. Hall, and called a committee, and appointed Mr. F. Hall superintendent over something, I know not what; and Mr. Wm. Hall superintendent over the carpenters. This he was already, and therefore, a useless distinction. What I complained of, his not attending to that department as he ought to do.

It is somewhat remarkable that, notwithstanding all this, I have had their natives to look after ever since, and most of the timber to get, and the shingles also, with the assistance of my son. I might have been without a house two years more in New Zealand. I have learned it is one thing to propose and appoint, and another to perform.

Mr. Marsden next put all the stores under the care of Mr. F. Hall. I never gave up, nor intended to give up looking after every part of the Society property; but Mr. Marsden thought proper to wrest them out of my hands, not for any improper use made of them, for I have got more done than any other man with the same quantity of trade, and the reason is this—I have endeavoured at all times to set the natives an example by working with them myself. I do not say this to make myself better than another, but only to state the truth, which I cannot state in any other way.

Mr. Marsden at this committee gave orders for me to give documents for all things which I received out of the Society's store, and here I must observe that I am the only servant of the Society that has ever been compelled to do this; this I consider a hardship, but I have at all times complied with the request. I wish to come to the point at once. Have I been unfaithful? then let me return home with the shame

that attends it. Have I been faithful? then I must be furnished with things to carry on my work, and entrusted with same, or else the Society will be pleased to pardon me if it goes undone.

I hope the Committee will receive my sincere and grateful thanks for their kind attention to my request of various article for which I made application. I hope I shall never grow insensible, or be backward to acknowledge all their kindness with unfeigned gratitude.

I received a good supply of many of the articles for the use of my family, from Mr. Hall, and very cheap indeed; altho' not charged by Mr. Marsden according to the invoice from London. I shall pay Mr. Marsden for them when I reach Port Jackson. Many things which we are in want of, Mr. Marsden did not send, as you will see per enclosed invoice, such as moulds, pins, needles, bobbins, tape, etc., etc.

I also received a church bible, prayer book, service of Communion plate, six bottles of wine for the Lord's Supper, register book, and several treatises on agriculture, also Fox's Book of Martyrs, and three annual registers, and several volumes of Christian Guardians. I received various grass seeds, but no clover seeds, and the grass seed had been opened at Port Jackson, and part of them taken out, and the seed I consider much injured thereby. I think all things wanted at N.Z. should be opened as little as possible at P.J. I have to acknowledge with thankfulness the receipt of the cupping machine; it was used the other day for the first time by Mr. F. Hall, or rather performed upon him. I am happy to find that you intend to send some implements of husbandry and seeds. They will be of the greatest utility, if the natives will permit us to remain at peace, without the sale of muskets and powder. But of this I am afraid. As to supplies for a school, I beg leave to say that I have not received anything, neither have I any organised school; at present there is no building erected for that purpose, nor any supplies for to maintain one, nor have I a house as yet to dwell in. Nevertheless, I have endeavoured to benefit the natives in every possible way. I have travelled among them as often as I could, and visited and conversed with them at every opportunity. Moreover, I have employed, victualled, and partially clothed, and instructed in farming, fencing, gardening, falling timber, towing timber, sawing, pulling boats, etc., fourteen natives on an average ever since I have been in New Zealand. At the same time I have administered to them all the mental instruction in my power, especially in the best things, even the best things of Christ. I have nine young men employed and victualled at this time, and Mrs. Butler has three young women who can wash well, do plain sewing, and almost any household work; they are also exceeding good hands in the garden. I have been (and am now) hard put to for food for them, as Mr. Marsden has not sent any rice for a long time. We grind wheat, and Mrs. B. makes dumplings for them to eat with their potatoes.

They have had no meat for a long time, I cannot get it; after harvest, I shall have plenty of wheat and barley, and then with potatoes I hope to do pretty well. I have seven acres of wheat, and six of barley and oats, growing at this time, all looking remarkably well. I sowed all the grain with my own hands, and had no assistance to work the land but my natives.

This is a greater quantity than is growing in both settlements besides. Also my garden, which contains 110 rods, is full of a variety of vegetables and young fruit trees, and an excellent bed of hops, containing fourteen hills. I have also at this time 158 rods of seven feet

pale fencing standing around my little house, field, garden house and yard, and done almost and altogether by natives and myself and son. (Besides other general fencing and buildings). As also one potato house, thirty feet by ten. One new fowl-house, twenty-one by ten. One goat house, eight by ten. One new house for my working natives to live in, and for a small school for same, twenty-seven by ten. I should have been exceeding glad of some canvas to make hammocks for them to sleep in, and some blankets, but Mr. Marsden has kept all the canvas at Port Jackson. We are in great distress for canvas and rope, but Mr. Marsden, I understand, has not sent any to New Zealand.

I shall be exceeding happy to see a well-organised school at Kiddee Kiddee, and shall do all in my power towards accomplishing this grand object, but it will want continual support. It will be best to go on in a small scale at first. I shall be greatly distressed for European clothes before I can obtain a supply.

The Society, I observe, sent a great quantity of Welsh flannel, but only one hundred and fifty-one yards came to New Zealand, and that Mr. Hall sold away among the missionaries, not one yard devoted to the poor natives.

As you say in your letter that you hope a school has been established at Kiddee Kiddee, I have given you, I may now say, as clear an account as I am able concerning this matter. I do wish it was better, but it is all that could have been done. I think I have had as good a school as ever in N.Z.

I feel very anxious about a plan for public worship, but how or when a church will be built, it is hard to say. However, I shall not rest until the top stone, as well as the foundation, is laid for this purpose.

As soon as my dwelling house is finished, I hope to have more time to learn the native language, and I humbly hope that the Lord will enable me to learn it, and to preach the glorious Gospel therein. I should be exceeding thankful for a small chest of medicines with salves and ointments by the first conveyance, and a good watch if you will be pleased to purchase one for me. I lost an excellent horizontal watch on the wharf at Sydney, the day I was shipping the goods for N.Z. We are in great want of threads, common tape, buttons, and moulds for natives.

As I often go round the neighbouring district, meeting the natives, and am almost compelled to distribute little things among them, on account of their extreme poverty and importunities, I should be very thankful if the Society would be pleased to pack up a few smaller things separately, for the purpose of distribution among them on such occasions—such as plane irons, knives, fish-hooks, combs and scissors, etc., and direct the same to me at New Zealand, and not to be opened at Port Jackson. The piece of red cloth sent for presents, Mr. Marsden cut up at P. Jackson, and he sent me only one yard and ten nails, which I have given to Rewah.

Whatever the Committee have to say to Mr. Kendall about parting with so many muskets, I hope and trust the Committee will be kind enough to let me know, and solemnly charge him not to let the natives up on me, by saying that I wrote about them, for all my property would be immediately stolen, and perhaps my life would scarcely atone for it.

They look upon me already as the only man who stops their free circulation. I should be very glad of the following articles: Two sets of copper-plate copy books, scales and weights, one gallon, one quart measure, and one set of corn measures. And now, my dear Sir, what more can I say? only this that it is my earnest prayer that God and Father of our Lord Jesus would of His boundless mercy remove every difficulty and bless our work of faith and labour of love until the glorious Gospel shines throughout these benighted islands.

Mrs. B. has sent to Mrs. Pratt one mat which she begs her acceptance of. Mrs. B. has sent Mrs. Bickersteth one mat, which she begs her to accept. I have sent one mayree (a war instrument which I beg you to accept), and one to Mr. Bickersteth, which I hope he will be kind enough to receive. Curiosities are scarce with me, as I do not deal in muskets and powder. I have also sent one mat and one box to the Bishop of Gloucester, which you will be careful to forward immediately, as also one mat to Mr. Broughton, and one to Mr. Thos. Adams, Harrow Road, Paddington.

My heart is still full of matter, but for this time I must conclude lest I trouble you to read what is painful to write: wars and rumours of wars among the natives. God help you. Amen.

Accept of our love to yourself and family, Mr. Bickersteth and family, and all friends.

J. BUTLER.

Sent by the "Cumberland," Capt. Brind, Nov., 1821.

OCCURRENCES.

1821, OCTOBER 13th.—The whole of this week I have been fencing and gardening.

OCTOBER 14th.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

15th and 16th.—Gardening and writing.

OCTOBER 17th.—At the earnest request of Rewah's wife, I set off with my son and two carpenters for Wyemattie, to see her son, a little boy who is called after my name, and who is dangerously ill. When we arrived in the evening, many of her friends and neighbours collected together, and the little boy who was with a friend at a short distance from Rewah's place was brought to his mother. The poor little fellow was greatly emaciated, and wasted to a skeleton. The child knew me, and shook hands with me, but I could not get him to speak. His mother and friends sat down and cried and lamented for an hour without ceasing.

While they were crying, my native servants made the fire and boiled some water, and I made him some tea, and sopped some bread therein, and he appeared very fond of the tea

and bread. Rewah, his father, is at the River Thames with Shunghee. This poor little boy is his only son, and should he die during his absence, he will be greatly affected, as he is exceeding fond of him. The New Zealanders are very affectionate towards their children, and especially boys.

We next prepared for our supper, after which we had prayers and a long conversation with the natives, who were mostly women and children.

They all seemed very thankful for my visit, and wished to know whether the boy would recover; I answered: "I cannot tell, but I am afraid he will not, for he is in a deep decline, brought upon him by a severe cold." They immediately began crying again, and kept on for several hours. We were obliged to lay down for the night, being tired; and either the little boy or his friends were crying and mourning all night.

We rose up very early and got our breakfast, and again made the little boy some tea and sopped bread in it, and he was very fond of it.

We now prepared to return, and I left some tea and sugar and bread with his mother for him, and directed her to send to me for some more when that is expended.

We arrived at Kiddee Kiddee in the evening and found all well.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—Gardening and writing.

SUNDAY, OCTOBER 21st.—Divine Service, morning and evening. Mrs. Kemp's little boy taken very ill. In the evening we heard that the "Active" had arrived at Rangee Hoo.

OCTOBER 22nd, 1821.—Writing the whole day; very wet.

TUESDAY.—Writing and gardening.

WEDNESDAY, THURSDAY AND FRIDAY.—At work with the trowel, building a chimney. John Lee and Boyle got drunk and beat the sawyers.

SATURDAY, 27th.—Reading and writing.

SUNDAY, 28th OCTOBER, 1821.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

SATURDAY, NOVEMBER 3rd.—This week I have been employed in building a chimney and doing jobs in the garden. My natives have been employed in levelling the yard, cutting wood, etc.

SUNDAY, 4th. — Divine Service, morning and evening. Administered the Holy Sacrament.

SATURDAY, NOVEMBER 10th.—This week I have been employed with my natives in levelling yard, making a grass plot, and thatching a pig house.

SUNDAY, 11th.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

NOVEMBER 12th.—Writing.

I am happy to say that Rewah's little boy, who has been dangerously ill, is in a fair way of recovery.

The remaining part of the week I have been employed in the garden and fencing.

Captains Brind, Kent and Brown, and Mr. Wm. and F. Hall dined with me on Friday, and Capt. Brind has taken from me one box of letters into his charge for Mr. Pratt, two for Mr. Broughton, one parcel for Mr. Hooper, Chatham, and one letter.

SUNDAY, NOVEMBER 18th.—Divine Service, morning and evening. This afternoon the ship "Westmorland" came into the harbour.

MONDAY, 19th. — Writing the whole day. Afternoon, received a letter from Mr. Kendall respecting the "Westmorland."

TUESDAY, NOVEMBER 20th.—Set off for Rangee Hoo at six in the morning. Held a special committee and agreed for passages for Mrs. Bean and three children, Mrs. Fairburn and two children. James Boyle, Thos. Foster, John Lee, myself, and Tyoree, on board the "Westmorland," Capt. J. Potton, for New South Wales.

WEDNESDAY AND THURSDAY.—Packing up for Port Jackson.

FRIDAY, NOVEMBER 23rd. — Captain Potton, of ship "Westmorland," came to Kiddee Kiddee, and dined with us.

Went on board the "Westmorland" on Friday, November 23rd, with Mrs. Bean, Fairburn, and five children, also John Lee, Thos. Foster and James Boyle; got all our things safe on board. Supped on board the "Cumberland" with Captain Brind, and returned to the "Westmorland" to sleep.

SATURDAY MORNING, NOVEMBER 24th.—Went to Rangee Hoo with Mr. Hall, and dined with Mr. King, came back in the evening, and parted with all our friends, and left them in good health.

SUNDAY, NOVEMBER 25th.—Got under weigh at ten a.m.; morning remarkably fine.

MONDAY, NOVEMBER 26th.—At anchor at Tipponah. Miss Kendall came on board. Capt. Sawry and Capt. Gardner, of the "Mary Ann," came on board, and Capt. Gardner brought me a parcel from the Society, and a letter from Mr. Pratt.

TUESDAY, NOVEMBER 27th.—Got under weigh; fine day and fair wind.

NOVEMBER 28th AND 29th.—Fine days, fair wind.

30th.—Fine day, almost a calm.

SATURDAY, DECEMBER 1st.—Fine day, variable winds.

SUNDAY, DECEMBER 2nd.—Fine day; fair wind.

Preached on board in cabin from Matthew 16, 20; all the crew attended. Mr. Williams (Tahitian missionary) preached in the afternoon.

DECEMBER 3rd.—Fine day, fair wind.

TUESDAY.—Fine day, fair wind.

WEDNESDAY.—Fine day, strong breeze, head.

THURSDAY.—Fine day, fair wind.

FRIDAY.—Fair day, foul wind.

SATURDAY.—Strong breeze, foul wind.

SUNDAY, DECEMBER 9th.—Divine Service on deck; fine day and a calm.

MONDAY.—Fine day, fair wind.

TUESDAY.—Came to anchor in Sydney Cove at eight a.m. Saw Captain Piper, who inquired kindly of my son. Afternoon, paid my respects to Governor Macquarie, and was received by him in the kindest manner, and invited to dine with him on Wednesday.

WEDNESDAY, DECEMBER 12th. — Visited Mr. Lee (Leigh), and breakfasted with him; visited Mr. Cowell, and had some conversation about New Zealand. In afternoon, dined with Governor Macquarie.

THURSDAY, DECEMBER 13th.—Paid my respects to Sir Thos. Brisbane, and was received with every mark of respect, and also received an appointment to wait on him on the Thursday following.

14th.—Busy looking after some necessaries for myself.

SATURDAY, 15th.—Set off this morning for Parramatta, accompanied by Mr. and Mrs. Williams, in Capt. Potton's boat; dined by the way at John Blaxland, Esquire's, and proceeded to Mrs. Hassell's, and found all well.

Slept at Mr. Marsden's.

SUNDAY, 16th.—In the morning visited the school in the church, and from there to Mr. Hassell's, and returned to church. Sir Thos. Brisbane and family were present. Mr. Marsden preached from 25 Matthew, Mr. Middleton in afternoon from 3rd of Matthew's.

MONDAY, DECEMBER 17th.—Went to Mr. Hassell's in morning; afternoon, writing.

TUESDAY, DECEMBER 18th.—Returned to Sydney in Capt. Thompson's whale boat, and gave orders about shoes and other business.

DECEMBER 19th.—Bought Hld. Porter some spirit and other things.

DECEMBER 20th.—Went to Parramatta, accompanied by Mr. Cowell; saw Sir Thos. Brisbane, who promised to give me some cattle for the missionaries; afternoon, set off for Capt. Irvine's; reached Liverpool in the evening, after losing myself by the way. Slept at Rev. W. Cartwright's.

FRIDAY, 21st.—Proceeded on my way to Capt. Irvine's, and reached his place about four in the afternoon. I was kindly received by him, and slept at his house.

SATURDAY, 22nd DECEMBER.—Mr. Hassell sent his chaise for me, and I proceeded to his place on my arrival. I found him and his family in good health. Afternoon, took a ride round his farm, and saw the reapers. Mr. H. is gathering in a fine harvest.

SUNDAY, DECEMBER 23rd.—Preached at Mr. Hassell's under the verandah, from Luke 2nd. Many people from the neighbouring farms came for Divine Service, and were very attentive.

Churched a woman, and christened a child after the service; spent the evening singing hymns, reading the scriptures and prayer. This Sabbath was to my soul like a shower of rain to a thirsty land.

MONDAY, DECEMBER 24th.—This morning I bade adieu to this pious family, with my earnest prayers for the divine blessing on them and theirs. Arrived at Mr. Cartwright's at Liverpool about noon. Here I received some refreshment, and proceeded on my way to Parramatta, and arrived there about four in the afternoon. Slept at Mr. Fairburn's.

WEDNESDAY, DECEMBER 26th.—Went with Mr. Marsden to his farm at South Creek, and remained all night.

27th.—Went to Dr. Harrison's for breakfast, after which we proceeded to Parramatta, and arrived at dinner time. Afternoon, set the tailor to work with my clothes.

FRIDAY, DECEMBER 28th.—This day being the anniversary of the Native Institution, many of the native tribes assembled themselves together to partake of the bounty provided for them by the kind English friends.

Their Excellencies, Governor Sir Thos. Brisbane and Macquarie, and the ladies attended, and most of the respectable inhabitants. The children of the native school were catechised by their Excellencies, who appeared pretty satisfied with their improvement.

Dined at Mr. Marsden's, and slept at Mr. Shelley's.

SATURDAY, DECEMBER 29th.—This morning I got my things down to the waterside, and returned by boat to Sydney, and put my things on the "Westmorland," and then went to spend my evening at Capt. Thompson's.

SUNDAY, 30th.—Went on board the "Westmorland," and remained all day, and wrote a letter to Mrs. Butler, and sent it on board the "Active."

DECEMBER 31st.—This morning the "Active" sailed for New Zealand, myself occupied in arranging my accounts.

TUESDAY, JANUARY 1st, 1822.—Attended Divine Service this morning. Rev. Samuel Marsden preached the annual sermon to the male orphan children. Their Excellencies, Sir Thos. Brisbane and Macquarie attended, and heard the children examined after service. In the afternoon, visited Mr. Cowell and Mr. Marsden.

WEDNESDAY.—Went into the town, and bought some things.

THURSDAY.—Went to see the lighthouse, and Piper House, in company with Messrs. Blaxland, sen., Mr. Blaxland, the younger, two Mr. Walkers, and Capt. Potton. We spent the day very comfortably.

FRIDAY, JANUARY 4th.—Waited on Mr. Wemys (?) in the morning, dined and spent the evening with Mr. Cowell.

SATURDAY, JANUARY 5th, 1822.—Writing the whole day.

SUNDAY, 6th. — Attended Divine Service, morning and evening. Mr. Hill preached.

MONDAY, 7th.—Writing the whole day.

TUESDAY, 8th.—Mr. Middleton came on board, and dined with me. Wrote a letter to Rev. S. Marsden.

WEDNESDAY, 9th.—Writing the whole day.

10th.—Writing in the morning, then went into town and purchased some things.

FRIDAY, 11th.—Spent the day on board correcting my journal. Wrote a letter to Mr. S. Marsden and other business.

SATURDAY, JANUARY 12th. — Writing in morning, afterwards visited Mr. Cowell.

SUNDAY, 13th.—Attended Divine Service, morning and evening with Mr. Cowell, and drank tea and spent the evening with him.

MONDAY.—Went to Mr. Cowell's in morning, and then into town on business.

TUESDAY, 15th.—Met Mr. Marsden by appointment to settle my account. Mr. Marsden has used me exceedingly ill, by putting me off from time to time, and on this occasion also, he was very violent in temper, and endeavoured to keep me out of part of my money, by only settling with me up to 31st December, 1820. I was obliged to threaten him with immediate law in order to obtain it.

WEDNESDAY, 16th.—Settled my account with Mr. Marsden. Asked him to kindly read the letter which I wrote to Sir Thos. Brisbane.

He refused to read it, and treated me with contempt, nor would he let me read it to him. He refused Mr. Cowell money for his subsistence, and treated him in a shameful way.

He was very violent indeed, with Mr. Cowell, as far as I could judge, without any cause. Dined with Mr. Cowell, and then went into town on business. Mr. How refused to advertise Mr. Cowell for his departure to New Zealand, on account of his not having any money to pay him.

THURSDAY, 17th.—Went to Parramatta to Governor Brisbane. He spake very kindly to me, and promised to attend to my wants, and invited me to dine with him on Wednesday, January 23rd.

FRIDAY.—Remained on board all day.

Also Saturday.

SUNDAY, 20th.—Preached on board the “Westmorland” from 107th Psalm, “They that go down to the sea in ships,” etc., etc. We had a pretty large congregation of sailors, who were very attentive.

MONDAY, 21st.—Writing the whole day. To-day I have heard of an accident which happened to a poor sailor belonging to the “John Bale” ship, in the harbour. After Divine Service yesterday, I went on shore in company with Mr. Cowell to dine with him, and as we were passing along we saw a drunken man who was very troublesome to his companion, who was sober, and he wanted to wrestle with the sober man who evaded every attempt. When we drew near I said to him, “My friend, get on board your ship, or I will send you to the watch-house.” At this time a woman took hold of him and wished to get him away, informing him that I was a magistrate. This seemed to exasperate him much, and he began to use the most dreadful oaths, calling me a —— magistrate, etc. We thought proper to pass on, as I did not like the thought of sending him to prison. I understand that a short time after he was taken on board, and after landing on the deck, he fell overboard and was drowned. “How dreadful are Thy judgments, O Lord!”

I thought this a very singular thing, as we had but just left the “Westmorland,” where I had been preaching to sailors only.

JANUARY 21st and 22nd.—Writing principally; went to see Governor Macquarie on particular business, and received an invitation to dine with him on Saturday next.

WEDNESDAY, JANUARY 23rd.—Went to Parramatta, and dined with Sir Thos. Brisbane; Mr. Marsden, Miss Marsden, Mr. Blaxland and family, and Mr. Williams were also at table.

JANUARY 24th.—Employed in getting my things on board the “Westmorland.”

FRIDAY.—Same.

SATURDAY, 26th.—Shipping goods for New Zealand. Murray, the pilot, with three other men, was drowned.

SUNDAY.—On board the “Westmorland.” Employed in reading.

MONDAY, 29th.—Writing all day.

TUESDAY.—Paid my bills and sundry other jobs, and dined with Governor Macquarie.

WEDNESDAY.—On board all day; rather poorly with bowel complaint.

THURSDAY, 31st.—Mr. Marsden sent for me on shore, and we had a long conversation about the stores. He refused to put them under my trust, and made many quibbles, saying some of the missionaries were not to be trusted. I told him we could be trusted with the immortal souls of men, but with the paltry things of this life we could not be trusted.

I further told him that I would sooner sweep the crossways of London streets, and beg my bread from door to door, and from passers-by, than be under him as an agent.

(COPY IN THE POSSESSION OF THE “HOCKEN” COLLECTION,
DUNEDIN.)

SYDNEY,

Jany. 24th, 1822.

This is to certify unto all men that Charles Gordon, a servant of the Honorable Church Missionary Society for two years and eleven months in New Zealand, did, of his own free will, give up his situation in New Zealand, as servant of the Honorable Church Missionary Society.

In testimony whereof, I have hereunto signed my name,

JOHN BUTLER, J.P.

CHAPTER VI.

To Rev. Samuel Marsden.

SHIP "WESTMORLAND,"
SYDNEY COVE,
Jany. 8th, 1822.

Rev. and Dear Sir,

I have hitherto endeavoured to consider you as a father and a friend, but the mysterious way in which you act, and your conduct toward me of late, leads me to draw conclusions of a very different nature.

I have learned that when you returned from New Zealand, you immediately began to speak evil of me and mine.

As a minister of the Church of God, and a Magistrate of the British Realm, to be charged with unfaithfulness or neglect of duty, either the one or the other (the very thought of which) appals my heart, and makes my blood run cold.

I have, however, one consolation, and that no man taketh from me, that with all diligence and sincerity I and mine have laboured to forward the objects of the Honourable Church Mission Society, and to promote the temporal and eternal happiness of the heathen among whom we dwell, and I am now ready and prepared to meet every charge, and to give unto all men, publicly, a full and satisfactory account of every day's work and slavery, both of myself and my wife, ever since we have been engaged in the service of the Society. The Society will, I trust, ere long be in full possession of these facts, and there are living witnesses who have seen with their eyes, and will come forward and bear testimony to these truths.

But since you have taken upon you to traduce my character without any just cause, you must therefore stand prepared to justify your own. Some things have taken place lately which I think not altogether right. There are many things which I could mention, but I shall confine myself to a few. You know, Sir, that some time ago I made application to the Society for goods as a favour, in order to get them as cheap as possible, and I have a letter from Mr. Pratt saying they were sent. These things have arrived, and the most of them you have sold at Port Jackson, and those you sent to New Zealand you did not consign to me, but to another, and charged a higher price for them than was originally done by the Society. Do the Society indeed wish you, after granting a favour, to put a tax upon it? Is it worthy of their name and character, or that of the Christian world to do this? Have you not endeavoured to defraud me of my legal rights (for I cannot call it less) by wishing to charge me with £55 of travelling expenses? altho' I was not receiving any salary at the time, and for which I signed my name two and a half years ago, and what moneys, I have no doubt, have been paid by the Society long since.

Did not other moneys stand against me which ought not? Have you not acted quite as bad by refusing to honour a just bill which I paid for timber on account of the Society? Did you refuse to pay it on account of the timber being bought with powder? I think not. Did you not pay Mr. Kendall for this timber bought with powder in kind? Did you not pay Mr. William Hall for his timber purchased in the same way? Further, did you not yourself buy four large casks of powder, and put them into the common stock or store? Did you not pay away a large teakettle full of powder to Shunghee (Hongi), and half a gallon to Rewah for land? Did you not endeavour to conceal this act, by not entering it in the deeds?

Did you not purchase of Mr. Wm. Hall, two muskets and twenty-six pounds of powder, and pay him also for fifty-six pounds of powder, most of which Mr. Hall paid for sawing done for the Society? Did you not purchase of Wyeduah (Wairua) a lot of potatoes and flax on the beach at Ranghee Hoo with a musket? Did you not afterwards send down fifty-one bayonets at one time, seventeen of which Mr. King received as a ration?

Has not the "Active's" cargo been bought with these forbidden things? and have you not received it, knowing it to be bought with muskets and powder, and have you not replaced them? Did you not at one time employ Mr. Smith to purchase six muskets, to put on board the "Active," to trade with the natives?

Did you not say to me in New Zealand with your own mouth, that a gentleman of one of the universities had applied to you for a native head? Did you not signify to me your intention to procure a skull without hair?

Did you not employ Mr. Wm. Hall to go to the village at Ranghee Hoo to see if he could obtain such a thing?

(Did he not also purchase one from Pomare, for an axe in 1814? Bretts' N.Z.)

Did you not receive a native head from Jacky, and give him an axe? I am sure I saw him with one, and he afterwards assured me that he had given it to you, and that you had given him an axe, which he showed me. I believe these things can very easily be proved.

Have you not charged my son for £19/16/0 for victuals, after agreeing with me for forty pounds per annum and his food?

Have you not sold the supplies which were sent out to clothe the wretched New Zealanders? You say for want of an invoice you have done this; granted, but do the Society, or the Christian world expect to be repaid by the wretched and distressed heathen? Have you not sold to the crew of the "Active" the slops intended to clothe the native servants? yea, have you not even sent the Society's slops to Van Dieman's Land, to be bartered away for provisions for the "Active's" crew, instead of sending them to New Zealand in order to minister comfort to the distressed?

My very heart aches while I put these important questions; may your conscience return an answer as in the sight of a heart searching God. When these things are fairly represent to the Christian world will the world altogether justify you fully?

I have eight men and three women at work for the Society, and who will expect a new suit of clothes each on my return, according to

my promise. Am I to purchase them out of my own little pittance, or must I forfeit my word, and be annoyed by the natives calling me a deceiver?

When I engaged with the Society, did I say to the Society, "Put me into one of the priest's offices that I may eat a piece of bread?"

Now, Sir, I do feel it an imperative duty as the clergyman and head of the settlement, to request that you will furnish me with everything necessary for establishing a school at Kidee Kidee (Keri Keri), as far as the Society have granted you the means.

I have already informed you that three families of chiefs have applied to me to be taken in.

I must also request some trade for the purpose of carrying on agriculture for the benefit of the Mission, and of administrative comfort to the natives in general.

If you deny my request, I shall merely call at New Zealand, and take my family on board the "Westmorland," and proceed to England. But should you be inclined to favour it, I shall be happy to meet you and consult with you, and point out as far as I am able what those necessities are. At the same time, I am willing to be guided by those circumstances, and to act upon those principles, as may be most likely to forward the great and blessed work in which we are engaged.

With my earnest prayer that the calumny you have endeavoured to cast upon me may be returned in the richest blessings of heaven upon you and yours,

I remain in the hands of the Gospel,

Your affectionate brother,

JOHN BUTLER.

PARRAMATTA,
1822.

Rev. J. Butler,

Dear Sir,

Had you not arrived in the "Westmorland," it was my intention to have sent Mr. Cowell in the "Active" to New Zealand. As you are fully acquainted with the state of the Mission, and can give Mr. Cowell every information he may require, I will thank you to consult with him what is best for him to do, and communicate to me the result of your determination.

As you are better able to advise Mr. Cowell than I can possibly be, I shall be guided by the determination which he and you may come to on the subject of his accompanying you to New Zealand. Mr. Cowell's remaining so long in this colony at a very heavy expense, has given me very great uneasiness, and something must now be done to relieve the Society of this expense, as it cannot continue. Your early attention to this business will oblige.

Dear Sir,

Yours sincerely,

(Signed) SAMUEL MARSDEN.

(THIS REPLY IS IN THE "HOCKEN" LIBRARY.)

To the Rev. Samuel Marsden.

SHIP "WESTMORLAND,"

Jan. 11th, 1822.

My Dear Sir,

I received your letter concerning Mr. Cowell, but I must beg leave to decline taking any part in Mr. Cowell's concerns while my own remain unsettled. And I am still more astonished that you should attribute his being left behind to me. The "Active" was here a fortnight after my arrival, and you never consulted me what was to be done during that period. I beg leave to press upon you the necessity of answering my letter forthwith, and of settling my accounts, as I am in great want of the money, to lay it out for necessaries for my family.

I am living on board of the "Westmorland," for want of a better lodging. And as a friend said to me yesterday, "It is to the eternal disgrace of ye clergy of this colony, to suffer a minister to return from a heathen land, and not with all their philanthropy offer to take him into their home."

With my sincere respect to Mrs. Marsden and family,

I remain, yours truly,

JOHN BUTLER.

The following is in the "Hocken" Collection, which also holds a copy (possibly the original of Butler's letter of 8th). The appearances suggest that Butler sent this, and the comments thereon, to the C.M.S. Although he may have attached his comments when he returned to England in 1825.

The C.M.S. have minuted it: Reed. July 31/22. Com. Aug. 6th/22. Ack. to Mr. Marsden, Aug. 31/22.

Marsden to Butler.

PARRAMATTA,

Jany. 22nd, 1822.

Rev'd. Sir,

On Wednesday, 16th, I wrote you a second letter on the subject of yours to me of the 8th, and just as I was putting the wafer in, you came into Mr. Campbell's office, accompanied by Mr. Cowell, when I immediately handed you my letter, which you then read, and told me you would give me no answer to it. (Butler comments: "I told Mr. Marsden I would stand by what I had written. The letter accompanies these papers.—B.") As this rested with yourself, I had no more to say at that time upon the subject. As you have, after making your charges, declined to support them, I feel (Mr. Butler's comment: "I offered to come forward at P.J., and prove them. This I did in presence of Mr. Cowell.) called upon to make a few observations upon them by way of reply. In the first place you charge me with defamation. You observe, "When you returned from New Zealand, you immediately began to speak evil of me and mine." In answer to this charge, I

beg to say that when I returned to New South Wales, many of our friends (Mr. Butler comments: "There are many friends to the Mission, but many of them have said to me that Mr. Marsden hinders them coming forward, by the way in which he acts."), were anxious to learn the state of the Mission, and also how every individual felt in their new station. I satisfied their enquiries as far as I could in general conversation, without the most distant intention of injuring anyone in the Mission. (*Very unusual for Mr. Marsden.*) My most ardent wish was that all might be happy, and prosper in their work—with respect to yourself, I thought you were too violent with the natives, and I feared this would be productive of evil, and not good. (Rev. Butler comments: "Shamefully wrong, the whole of the natives will testify of my kindness to them.") I was sorry Mrs. Butler was not more reconciled to her situation. (*Salt-junk—no house—general cook.*) (Rev. Butler's comment: "For a very good reason Mrs. B. was dissatisfied. Mr. Marsden made her wretched, see my journal.") She had come out against her will, and therefore she was to be pitied, as that would always make her unhappy. No person should be forced into such work; if they are, they cannot be happy. Mrs. Butler repeatedly told me she never wished to come, and on that ground she has cause to complain, and demands commiseration; her difficulties would be much lighter if her mind were at ease. (Rev. Butler comments: "Wonderful! He allows Mrs. Butler to work very hard. But he cares not for it.") I never charged Mrs. Butler with neglect of duty; I know she is a woman who cannot be idle, and has slaved very hard. (Rev. Butler's comment: "Very pretty! Well he may say I do not understand.") If this is speaking evil of you and yours, I have done so. I have never accused you of neglect of labour, for I have always said you have laboured hard. As for charging you with neglect of duty, I do not understand exactly what you mean. The term duty is used in too general a way. If you had mentioned to what part of your conduct you applied the term, I should have known what reply to have made. As a Magistrate of the British Realm (*The boot pinches here—Marsden had been removed from the "Bench."*) here I think you mistake the extent of your authority, as you could not act even in New South Wales in that capacity. Your Magisterial authority was merely local. (Rev. Butler's comment: "By his wish I became a magistrate. Is this right?") You observe, "Since you have taken upon you to traduce my character without any just cause, you must hereafter stand prepared to justify your own." I do not see the force of this argument. One man may accuse another, and yet the accuser may have done no wrong. You accuse me of selling the things which you say you wrote for. The articles which you allude to were not your property, but the Society's. They were not consigned to you, but to me as the Society's Agent. (Rev. Butler's comment: "But I expected to have a portion for my family's use, as I wrote for them.") If you mean to insinuate that I derived any advantage from the sale of these goods, you are mistaken. You know better, and you know why I diverted them to be sold—because there were no invoices of the prices of the different articles, but only the sum total. Without I had known the price of each separate article, I would never venture to send them to New Zealand, for if I had made a mistake and overcharged a single penny on any other article, and it had been discovered, I should have been accused of fraud and speculation. (Rev. Butler's comments: "The goods which I applied for were, I apprehend, the only goods for sale, and there was an invoice of them (2). The goods were not for sale, I believe, but for the natives. These goods were 'Manchester' for the schools, which were sent out in

the 'Elizabeth,' that I complain of.") Knowing the persons I had to do with (Rev. Butler's comment: "Are we all liars, and Mr. Marsden the only true man?") I was not going to subject myself to groundless suspicions, to endless explanations and continued complaints. All you can say, my agent sold them, and I have told you the reason. (Mr. Butler's comment: "No!") But you cannot say my agent or I put a farthing in our pockets. I admit I sent under the care of the Rev. T. Kendall, such goods as he chose to take, whose prices were known. I conceived he was the proper person to take charge of them during the voyage, and to hand over the public stores on his arrival, to Mr. Francis Hall, the storekeeper. (Rev. Butler's comment: "Wrong.") I admit also that the shipping expenses and the insurance, amounting to about six per cent., were added to the different articles, which were for sale to the workmen and settlers, in order to keep the sum total of what the goods cost, correct. Mr. Kendall put the insurance and shipping charges upon the different articles with his own hand, under my directions. I conceived this just. The sum is not worth mentioning. (Rev. Butler's comment: "There are two distinct invoices, the goods of one committed to Mr. Kendall at Rangahoo, the other of Hall, Kedde Kedde.") *(Readers, please note that, before ordination, Butler had been for many years foreman-clerk to a large carrying company, and would instantly perceive the trickery.)*

Should the Committee in London think this an unjust "tax," they will remit it. You told me you thought it was just that all the labourers should pay the small additional sum, but unjust that you should pay it. You receive £200 per annum, (Rev. Butler's comment: "Only £160; my son £40.") while the carpenters receive but £60. I think it no disgrace either to me or to the Society to charge the actual amount of the original cost paid in London, nor do I think I should be a faithful agent if I omitted this charge. (Rev. Butler's comment: "This is grossly false and wrong, for Mr. Marsden kept teasing me about them, in order to draw words from me. I told him it might be just or unjust with us, just to them (carpenters), I only wished to speak for myself.") You ask, "Have you not endeavoured to defraud me?" I answer, "No, never." (Rev. Butler's comment: "It was, and I have Mr. Marsden's letter who saith the £55.") The £55 was never charged to you in any of your accounts, and you know well that it never was or intended, and you cannot show it was. (Rev. Butler's comment: "I can.") And therefore I do not hesitate to say that your insinuation is false and unfounded. I admit a small bill drawn by Mr. King was charged to you by Mr. Campbell, but not by me. The mistake was rectified the moment it was pointed out. You suffered no loss, and you know Mr. Campbell was a man of such honor and integrity that he would immediately correct the error. You ask, "Have you not acted quite as badly refusing to honour a just bill which I paid for timber on account of the Society?" I never refused to pay a just bill. (Rev. Butler's comment: "Wrong, the bill is just, and so proved by all the committee at New Zealand.") I contend the bill was not just. I am not a little astonished that you should mention such a disgraceful business. Shortly after your arrival in New Zealand, it was determined you, Messrs. Hall and Kemp should settle at Kedde Kedde. (Rev. Butler's comment: "Among the most warlike tribes, where we should want £25 worth powder to shoot them.") You wanted timber to build your house, with a considerable quantity of logs were lying upon the beach at Rangee Hoo. On my enquiring to whom they belonged, Messrs. Kendall, Hall and King claimed them as their property. I proposed to give them whatever they had given for them (Rev. Butler's comment: "This is all Mr. King

claims.'') in order to forward your building at Keddee Keddee. Messrs Hall and Kendall agreed to my proposal (Rev. Butler's comment: "Mr. Kendall was paid in powder by Mr. Marsden, Mr. Hall in money, and I have the account.") Mr. King presented a bill, and demanded to be paid in money. I told him I could not purchase the timber, and pay for it in money. (Rev. B. comments: "What! in powder and muskets, for it was bought with these articles.") It would appear very strange to purchase timber from the settlers in money (Rev. Butler's comment: "And how very strange to refuse Mr. King, after paying Mr. Hall.") for building their own houses with, and I would not set such a precedent, (Rev. Butler's comment: "Alas! then why pay Mr. Hall in money?") but that Mr. King might have payment in any articles he wanted. You ask me if I have not charged your son £19 for victuals? I answer, "I have, and justly, too. ("Unjustly!"—B.) I had many reasons for wishing your son to return with me to New South Wales soon after our arrival in New Zealand, some of which I shall mention. It gave me much concern to see such personal difference between you and your son. I had never seen a father provoke a son to wrath so much as you did him, nor a son so disobedient to a father as he was to you. I was apprehensive that some very serious evils would arise from these differences, independent of the bad effects produced upon the minds of the heathen by your mutual quarrels. (Rev. B.'s comment: "Exceedingly exaggerated. Mr. M., like a drowning man, he will catch at a straw.")

[Compiler's comment: A better simile would have been to liken Mr. M. to the patiki, which escapes detection by stirring up the muddy bottom of the estuary. Mr. M. must avoid, and he does, the references to his purchase of tattooed heads, purchase of the land by payment with gunpowder, and his shipment of the fifty-one bayonets. Probably Mr. M. only intended the natives to use these for trading purposes, as patiki or flatfish spears.]

Lo, the poor Maori, whose untutored mind
Puts the taotahi on his gun
And stabs his foe behind.

(Pope's "Essay on Man," up-to-date.)

Your son then talked of destroying himself (Rev. B.'s comment: "A complete lie.") or of making his escape, as Mrs. Butler can testify, (Rev. B.'s comment: "He never!") and she was very unhappy on his account. I felt much for her distress. This was one reason why I wished your son to be removed for a time. You may remember that, shortly after we landed at Range Hoo, a very serious quarrel happened between you and the chief Motoee, about a pit-saw. You suffered yourself to be overcome by the most violent passion, and for a mere trifle; I was present. I expected Motoee would have given you a mortal blow every moment with his marree, from your threatening language toward him. (Rev. Butler's comment: "Exaggerated and false. See my journal for the truth") [*probably Oct. 14th, also Oct. 6th, 7th, 1819.*] (Marsden returned from Hokianga to Rangihoo Oct. 12th) At length I got you into Mr. Hall's house, when I retired into the bedroom. In a few moments I heard Mrs. Butler scream aloud that the natives were killing you. I hastened to the spot, where I found you had renewed your quarrel with Motoee, and Motoee was brandishing his marree over your head. (Rev. Butler's comment: "He never did. Mr. Marsden was not with me, but Tutiree.") After separating you a second time, I returned to Mr. Hall's.

where I found your son in the act of loading a musket to shoot Moteoe. I did not doubt but that moment he intended to do so. I was alarmed at the idea of a thoughtless youth presuming to shoot a New Zealand chief, by which the life or every European in the settlement might have been sacrificed. This very act made a deep impression on my mind, (Rev. Butler's comment: "It would have been well if many others of more importance had done the like.") particularly when I contrasted your conduct and his together. I did not think it was prudent for him to remain until you were more settled, and better acquainted with the character of the natives. As I was pressed by the chiefs to take their sons with me to Parramatta, I thought he might be usefully employed in teaching them under my eye and roof. I should treat him as one of my family, and he would meet no improper company at my table. It was arranged between you and me that he was to have a salary of £40 per annum, and a ration equal to what was issued to people at New Zealand, but his wine, spirits, and other extras were to be paid out of his salary. (Rev. Butler's comment: "This is false, for I told Mr. M. I would not pay any part of his food.") I charged for his board and lodgings 12/- per week, half to himself, and half to the Society. (*Good milch-cow, that Society.*) He was treated in every respect as I should treat my own son, and enjoyed all the comforts of my table, and the best society in the colony. He must have been a considerable expense to me, more than what I charged, when the price of living in the colony is considered. I believe he would not have got such a lodging and table for less than £2 per week. As you have refused to pay me the £19—it's for 15 months' lodging, etc.—I have no doubt the Society will. I was also anxious that your son should form friendships with the chiefs' sons who would be under his care. I had some other reasons for wishing your son from New Zealand (Rev. Butler's comment: "I should like to know what these are. As soon as I can see Mr. Marsden I shall enquire.") which I need not mention. I have now replied to the principal part of your letter of the 8th inst. You observe "My heart aches while I put these important questions." I hope I have relieved you of the heart-ache, and you are now quite well. (Rev. Butler's comment: "I am not, but worse than ever because I know him guilty.") I shall now make a few remarks upon your letter of the 11th, in which you state you wish to attach "eternal disgrace" to me and all my colleagues—for not receiving you into their houses. Some of my colleagues are extremely poor, but I believe they are willing to use hospitality according to their ability. I think you have not put it into their power to show their willingness to receive you into their houses. On your arrival, you never reported yourself to me, which you ought to have done. (Rev. B.'s comment: "I saw and shook hands with Mr. Marsden the very first morning of my arrival.") I at first thought this was an unintentional omission, and therefore, on my arrival at Sydney, I requested the Rev. R. Hill to accommodate you with a room in his house, and a seat at his table when you remained in Sydney, and to show you every attention as a minister of the Established Church. If you had been my son, I could not have done more for you. When I saw you for the first time in Sydney, you appeared as if you wished to avoid me. (Rev. B.'s comment: "How can this be? Mr. M. avoided me, and left me to go to Parramatta as I could, and then without an invitation.") I also requested Mr. Campbell to supply you with what money you might want, and he told you in my presence he would. You did not apply to me for lodgings. If you had, they would have been provided for you. You united yourself with persons* whose society you approved of more than

*Rev. Leigh and Rev. Cartwright.

the society of the established clergy. No doubt you had your reasons for doing so, and you pleased yourself. Of all the crimes that have been laid to my charge, no one to my knowledge ever accused me before of the want of hospitality. You complain you were in great want of money. This could not be; you had only to ask and to have. State things fairly and honestly. You pressed upon me to answer these letters. I have done so. Perhaps you will be satisfied. I only regret the loss of time, as I might employ it much better—and have none to throw away in such differences.

I think the day will come, and much sooner than you think of, when you will see and feel the impropriety of writing these two letters, as there is nothing in them of that meekness and lowliness of heart which our blessed Saviour hath taught us; and at the same time He hath also said, "It must needs be that offences come, but woe to that man by whom that offence cometh." If I have given offence, I must bear the judgment, and if you have, you must bear it.

I am, Rev. Sir,

Your most obedient, humble servant,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

Rev. J. Butler.

John Butler to Governor Brisbane.

To His Excellency, Sir Thos. Brisbane, Governor of New South Wales
and its Dependencies.

SYDNEY,

Jan. 7th, 1822.

May it please your Excellency to take into consideration the following circumstances.

Whereas on Tuesday morning, February 27th, 1821, Captain Wyer of the ship "Rambler," a whaler, from the port of London, came to Kiddee Kiddee, in Bay of Islands, New Zealand, having in his boat four convicts, whom he represented as having stowed themselves away on board the ship, while lying at Vandieman's Land.

These men he wished to land, and to leave them in my charge as Resident Magistrate; but this I could by no means consent to, as I had no means of restraining their persons, or of correcting their vices.

As His M. store ship, the "Coromandel," was then lying in the River Thames, two hundred miles from Kiddee Kiddee, I requested Captn. Wyer to deliver them to Capt. Downie, of H.M. Ship. Captn. Wyer endeavoured to excuse himself by saying he did not know the place, and he did not like to risk his ship for the sake of four convicts.

However, rather than they should be put on shore and left to the mercy of the savages, which he appeared determined to do, I offered my services to go and pilot the ship into Coromandel Harbour. This offer was accepted, and we proceeded on board. Next morning the ship put to sea with a light breeze, and on Friday morning we were at the entrance of the Thames.

At this time the wind came on to blow hard, and immediately in our teeth, and it continued so until Saturday afternoon. Capt. Wyer grew impatient, and altho' the wind became fair about five in the afternoon, he ordered the ship about, and stood for the Bay of Islands, where we arrived about ten on Sunday morning, at which time, contrary to my advice, and of that of his officers, he determined to land the prisoners, and leave them to their fate. A boat was then manned, and Mr. Rivers, the first officer, was sent with them, and he landed and left them on the beach near Cape Bret.

As soon as the boat returned, I requested to be landed at the missionary settlement called Rangee Hoo, which was on the other side of the harbour, at sixteen miles distant. My request was complied with immediately, and, having landed me, the boat returned to the ship and she stood out to sea.

On Wednesday, March 7th, I had occasion to visit our salt works, which are situated about fourteen miles from the spot where the convicts were landed. When I arrived, I found two of the aforementioned prisoners in the hands of a savage, who considered them as his property, and who was then in the very act of holding a consultation about killing them. I immediately interfered, and begged that they would hear what I had to say. They replied, "These men are King George's cookees (slaves), and are very bad men." I said, "Truly they are so; but then you must not kill them by any means, for if you do King George will be very angry with you." After a good deal of polemical discourse, their passions abated, and they assured me that they would not kill them; but the chief said they should remain in his place four months, and work for him, and if they wrought well he promised to give them plenty of food, and then at the end of four months he would permit them to go on board of any ship that would take them. I told him I should be glad to find his words true. I then made him a present of a tokce and some large fish-hooks, which pleased him much.

The prisoners stood by, begging for their lives, and for me to intercede myself for them. This I did, as my heart ached for them. I also counselled and advised them to the best of my power to go with the chief, and endeavour to please him in everything, until an opportunity offered to send them away. They then got in a canoe, and the chief took them away, and thus they lived and dragged out a miserable existence for some months, when the "Rambler" returned into the Bay of Islands to refresh, having lost several hands at sea, and to my utter astonishment, when she went out of the harbour Capt. Wyer took two of these very men he some months before so cruelly and wantonly put on shore among the savages of this island. The other two are gone away in whale ships.

I consider such things as amounting nearly to the highest pitch of wickedness, and have thought it my duty to inform your Excellency of the whole of this affair, in order that your Excellency may be enabled to take suitable steps for the punishment of such offenders.

I have, etc.,

JOHN BUTLER, J.P.

SHIP "WESTMORLAND,"
SYDNEY COVE,

22nd January, 1822.

To Revd. Josiah Pratt,
Church Missionary House,
Salisbury Square, London.

My Dear Sir,

I have to acknowledge receipt of your letter dated 13th March, 1821, by a whaler, Captain Gardner, the morning we sailed from New Zealand to Port Jackson. I suppose you will expect an abstract of my voyage, and the reason of my visiting Port Jackson.

First of all I would say that Captain Potton, of the "Westmorland," has behaved to me in a very gentlemanly manner, and paid particular attention to all my requests.

We sailed from New Zealand on the 27th November, 1821, and arrived at Sydney Cove, New South Wales, December 11th, 1821. We had a very pleasant voyage; public prayers in the morning and evening, and Divine Service twice on Sundays. I preached in the morning, and the Revd. Williams, a Tahitian missionary, in the afternoon.

I apprehend (as it is not fully stated by the committee) you feel anxious to know the reason of my visit to this place. Now the reason is this: I was in great need of wearing apparel of all sorts for myself and family, as well as many other little comforts which I could not obtain in any other way. When I first agreed with Mr. Marsden, he wished to be my agent at Port Jackson, and promised if I committed my concerns to his trust, he would pay particular attention to my wants, and send me all the little things which I might write for from time to time, for the comfort and use of my family, and pay me interest for all moneys left in his hands. This spontaneous offer I gladly accepted, and relied on Mr. Marsden in full confidence.

Well Sir, to be very short, I wrote to Mr. Marsden time after time for things, but I never could get him to pay any attention to my orders, and while my brethren who employed other agents obtained everything they sent for, I was left completely without, and no market to run to in a heathen land. I even wrote to my son, Samuel Butler, and he put the order into Mr. Marsden's hands, and besought him to get the goods, and send them down in the "Active;" but, like the man who had two sons, he said, "I go, sir," and went not. I never received them, and further, as I conceived that those accounts which are settled oftentimes, are generally the most correct, I wrote to him to draw a balance between us, and forward the account to me, but here also I failed, as you will see by the minutes of the committee, held Oct. 1st, 1821. However, I received a letter dated Sydney, March 10th, 1821, in which it appears he intended to send my account that time. He begins his letter by saying, "Dear Sir, you will look over your account, and see that it is correct. I may have forgot something or other. The £55 you received in cash, when you were here, which is the first sum." This £55 is the travelling expenses which I complain of, as having been charged to me by Mr. Marsden, in his settlement at the time, when I am led to believe, by comparing the date that I signed my name for the above sum, and the date of his letters, the money had been repaid

to him by the Society, there being one year and nine months between the dates. We had a very long passage out from England, it is well known, and I was in debt to Mr. F. Hall for some moneys furnished by him for general use, and the remainder was laid out in Sydney for the use of goods for our whole party.

When I arrived here I saw Mr. Marsden on my landing, at Mr. Campbell's. I paid my respects to him, and asked after his family. He appeared to be busy with Mr. Cowell, and I left them, and went into the town to deliver some letters—I returned to the wharf, and Mr. Marsden was gone. I then asked Mr. Campbell to favour me with a sight of the accounts, which I had signed when at Port Jackson. He replied, "They were sent to London at that time." I said, "Sir, you must have a copy of them, I should think, and I would like to see it." "I do not know, however," said he, "I cannot find it now." I then told him I must see it before I went out of the counting-house. He then opened a drawer, and produced a copy of the accounts immediately, and I saw the £55 in question, which was all I wanted. I then paid my respects to the late Governor Macquarie, Esquire; this I conceived my duty, as he appointed me a magistrate at New Zealand, and I had some communications of a magisterial nature to make to him. He very kindly invited me to dine with him, and wanted to introduce me to Governor Brisbane. Both these favours I gladly accepted. When I was introduced to Governor Brisbane, he treated me with every mark of respect, and appointed a day to see me at Parramatta.

I waited on his Excellency, according to appointment, and had a good deal of conversation with him about New Zealand. His Excellency was pleased to manifest his goodwill towards the Mission, and said he would render us every assistance in his power, and asked me if the gift of some cattle and sheep would be of any service. To which I replied, "Your Excellency, they will be of great utility." He then said, "Sir, be so good as to drop me a line respecting them." I then answered, "Your Excellency, I will." This I did, and have sent you a copy of the letter. He also wished me to hold my magisterial authority—which I promised to do. He then invited me to dine with him on Christmas Day. This favour, also, I gladly accepted.

Wednesday, December 12th, I breakfasted with Mr. Leigh, who was then about to leave the colony in the brig "Active" for New Zealand. Mr. Marsden called, in his chaise, having the Revd. Mr. Cartwright with him. They were on their way going to Parramatta. They came indoors, and Mr. Marsden said to me, "Mr. Butler, where are you going to lodge?" I answered, "I do not know, for I am a complete stranger." He said, "I think you can get lodgings at Mr. Hill's." I answered, "Very well, sir." After Mr. Marsden was gone, I called on the Revd. Mr. Hill, but was not asked indoors.

In the course of the day, I called on the Rev. Mr. Cooper, who invited me in, and we sat down, and had some conversation about New Zealand. Mr. Cooper said to me, "Sir, where are you going to lodge?" I answered, "I am not certain, but I think at Mr. Hill's." I called again at Mr. Hill's, and was answered at the door, and not receiving any invitation from Mr. Hill, I was led to conclude I was not wanted. I then went to see Capt. Thompson, of the brig "Active," who received me into his house, and furnished me with a good bed, and gave me the best his house could afford, and I shall for ever stand indebted to him and his wife for their great kindness and hospitality.

On Saturday I went to Parramatta to the Rev. Mr. Marsden, and remained until Tuesday morning at Mr. Marsden's, when I returned to Sydney, and immediately collected my thoughts for business, and those things for which I came more especially to the colony.

In the evening Mr. Marsden sent for me and Mr. Cowell to visit him on business. We attended according to Mr. Marsden's request, and I found that Mr. Marsden's objects were to enquire of me about Mr. Cowell's concerns. I gave him all the information in my power. I certainly thought Mr. Marsden or Mr. Hill would say something about my lodgings, but not a word passed, and I returned to my host, Capt. Thompson.

Next morning I went to Mr. Campbell's, saw Mr. Marsden and asked him to settle my accounts. He said, "Mr. Butler, I must settle your accounts at Parramatta, but you can have any money you want from Mr. Campbell on account." "I thank you, sir," said I, "but I would be glad to have my accounts adjusted as soon as possible, in order to know how much I have coming to me." Mr. Marsden then left me, and the next day I took my book to Parramatta, and I asked Mr. Marsden several times to look over my papers. He gave me several evasive answers, and at length told me he must settle with me at Mr. Campbell's office, Sydney. I said, "Very well." I then set off up the country for a few days to see Captain Irvine, who was a member of the committee here, and Mr. Hassell. I was treated very kindly by both of them.

I preached at Mr. Hassell's on Sunday, December 23rd, 1821, under his verandah, there being no church within twenty miles of this place, and they had only three sermons preached at this place for two years past. Mr. Hassell sent notices round to the neighbouring farmers and when the time came for Divine Service, I found a considerable number of persons coming to hear the Word of God. After service, I churched a woman, and christened a child.

Monday morning, December 24th, 1821, I bid adieu to this truly pious family, with my earnest prayer for the divine blessing on them and theirs. I called at the Rev. Cartwright's, Liverpool, by the way, and arrived at Parramatta in the afternoon. I went to Mr. Marsden's, and remained until Friday morning. From the coldness with which I was received and treated, I concluded I was not wanted there, so I returned to Sydney, and put my things on board the "Westmorland," where I now remain, going on shore daily to do my business, and returning on board to sleep. I saw Mr. Marsden at Sydney, and asked him to settle my accounts; he said, "Go to Mr. Campbell's, and he will settle them." I then went to Mr. Campbell's, and he said, "Sir, I can do nothing with your accounts until Mr. Marsden comes, and I expect him here by and by."

In a little time Mr. Marsden came, and I said to him, "Sir, I would really be very glad if you will look over my accounts." (Mr. Cowell was with me at the time.) He then said, "I am too busy," and I said, "Sir! will you let Mr. Campbell and I look over them?" He said, "Why do you ask such a question? I trust him with all my affairs, and it would be singular if I could not trust him to settle with you!"

After Mr. Marsden was gone, I asked Mr. Campbell for my accounts, and as soon as I got it, I said, "Sir, I perceive here are moneys standing against me which ought not." He said to point them

out. I did so, and proved his account to be wrong. Moreover, I said to him, "Sir, you have not given me credit either for a bill of £26/18/11 drawn in favour of me at New Zealand." Said he, "Since you have your books on board the 'Westmorland,' you had better take this paper and make them out according to your books." I then took the papers with me on board, and made out the accounts, which on examination were found to be correct. Mr. Campbell then said, "Sir, leave me this account, and I will get you this money."

In a day or two after, I saw Mr. Marsden at the office, and said, "Sir, the accounts are made out and ready; they only want your approval. It will not detain you many minutes to look over them," when he again put me off. "I am going away with Mr. John Palmer, and cannot settle to-day now."

It was not till after all these suffering tricks, together with a good deal of harsh and unkind treatment which will hereafter be substantiated on oath if necessary, by those who have had ocular proof, that I wrote my letter to Mr. Marsden in which so many strong interrogations appear, and notwithstanding all he can say or urge against them, or however he may endeavour to explain them away, I fear, alas! on examination they will be found too true, if it is done impartially; and of this I am sure and certain, that the committee will examine without reference to any man's situation.

Mr. Marsden received my letter on the Friday, and he came down on the Monday following to settle with me.

Mr. Cowell was present at the meeting. At this meeting, Mr. Marsden, I conceive, acted very wrong, for he endeavoured to keep back nine months' salary, that is to say, from January 1st to October 1st, 1821; and it was not until I threatened him with immediate law, that he paid me my very hard earned wages.

With respect to the letter which I have written to Sir Thos. Brisbane, I beg leave to observe that, even before I wrote to him, I acquainted the Revd. Mr. Samuel Marsden with all the particulars which passed between us, and I begged Mr. Marsden to go with me to his Excellency about the cattle, which he promised to do. After finishing the letter, I took it to Mr. Marsden at Mr. Campbell's office, for his inspection and approval. He refused to look at it, in the most indignant manner; he would neither read it, nor suffer me to read it to him, altho' I besought him in the most earnest manner.

If this is proper usage for a missionary to receive from the agent of the Society here, then I think it is but fair that all the world should know it. With respect to Mr. Cowell, I must say that the poor man has been used exceedingly ill by Mr. Marsden, almost from his first arrival in the colony. I am certainly meeting of people who are sounding of these things in my ears. There is but one opinion here, generally speaking, concerning him—it is this that Mr. Cowell is a sober, steady, and well-disposed young man.

The other morning I breakfasted with him, and a person came to his house for a little money, and he had not a sixpence in his place. He sent an order down to Mr. Campbell, Mr. Marsden's agent, for £10, and the order was refused. Afterward I went down with Mr. Cowell, and was present when Mr. Cowell said to Mr. Marsden, "Sir, I would be glad if you would let me have a little money," and Mr. Marsden said,

"No! I cannot advance you another shilling." The poor man was completely upset by Mr. Marsden's treatment. Mr. Cowell asked him, saying, "Sir, do you mean to cut off my subsistence altogether? I have a person now at my house waiting for a little money, which I owe him." Mr. Marsden said, "I cannot help that. I cannot advance you any more money."

We went back to the house, and found his wife in tears, and for the honour of the Society which I love from the bottom of my heart, as well as to manifest my sympathy for a brother, I said, "Mr. Cowell, you shall not want while I have a sixpence left," and I immediately advanced him £23 for his use.

Last Sunday I performed Divine Service, assisted by Mr. Cowell on board the "Westmorland" in the harbour, and preached from the 107 Psalm: "They that go down to the sea in ships," etc., etc. We had a great congregation of sailors, considering the notice was very short. D.V., we propose having service on the "Westmorland's" deck next Sunday, when we are led to expect our congregation will be more numerous. I am going to Parramatta this day, Jan. 23rd, 1822, to dine with his Excellency, Sir Thomas Brisbane, and I have an invitation to dine with his Excellency Governor Macquarie on Saturday night next, and shall feel myself highly honoured in having an opportunity of certifying my sincere respects for all the kindness his Excellency has manifested toward me, who am altogether unworthy of so much notice.

Mr. Cowell and his family will accompany me to New Zealand in the "Westmorland," and we expect to sail on or about Tuesday, 29th January, 1822.

Give my sincere love to all friends, and may God bless and preserve you and yours, is the earnest prayer of

Your very affectionate,

(Signed) JOHN BUTLER.

SHIP "WESTMORLAND,"

30th January, 1822.

REV. JOHN BUTLER, DR. ON A/C OF THE HONBLE. CHURCH
MISSIONARY SOCIETY.

For passage and goods as under, to and from New Zealand:

	£	s	d
Mr. Butler and native, to and from New Zealand	35	0	0
Mr. Bean, Fairburn and children to P.J.	20	0	0
Miss Kendall and three labourers	20	0	0
Mr. Cowell and family to New Zealand	30	0	0
Mr. Butler and natives, expenses on board	6	0	0
To Freight on goods, and landing at Kiddee Kiddee and Rangee			
Hoo	80	0	0
	£191	0	0

Reed. the contents of this bill by a set of bills, drawn on Josiah Pratt in my favour, and endorsed by Mr. Marsden.

(Signed) JOHN POTTON.

REV. JOHN BUTLER.

BOUGHT OF JOHN POTTON.

				£	s	d
7 Paint Brushes, large at 4/-	..	..	..	1	8	0
6 dozen Women's Combs	..	..	..	3	12	0
2 „ Men's „	..	..	..	1	4	0
6000 Fish-hooks	..	..	..	4	10	0
Gave an order payable on sight.						

(Signed) JOHN BUTLER.

Copy of a letter from the Revd. S. Marsden to the Missionary Settlers and Mechanics employed in the service of the Church Missionary Society, in the Bay of Islands. (“Historical Records,” McNab, page 578.)

PARRAMATTA,

March 18th, 1822.

Dear Sirs,

As —— complained very much of my injustice towards himself and others employed in the service of the Mission, in charging to you for the goods issued from the Society's store, the shipping expenses and insurance, which amounted to about 6½ per cent., and which had been charged in the account current by the Society to me, I have to request you will inform me if you feel yourself aggrieved by this charge, and whether you consider it just or unjust that you should pay the actual sum for the articles you receive, that the Society have paid in London for them. I shall be happy to forward any complaint you have to make upon this subject against me to the Society. I thought it just and I charged it—you may be of a different opinion. I derive no advantage from this. I do not make a gain of you. No part of the money ever comes to me, tho' a very deep impression has been made here upon the public mind, to my prejudice, from the statements of ——, so much so that some of my friends strongly recommend me to bring the matter before a court of justice previous to Mr. ——'s return, in order that he might prove that I had acted wrong, if he could. I beg to refer you to Mr. Williams, who knows what has been said upon this subject.

(Evidently John Williams). [*Readers please note that Mr Henry Williams landed for the first time in New Zealand on August 3rd 1823, or nearly eighteen months after this letter was dated. He came to Australia in the Lord Sidmouth, about June 1823, and left Port Jackson for New Zealand on the 23rd July in the Brampton.*]

If I had acted improperly in this matter, you had the Society to appeal to. There was no necessity to throw me into the hands of the enemy for the sake of a few pounds, and which I have not benefited by. I spend my time in looking after the concerns of the Society, in providing for your wants. I travel at my own expense; and have all the anxiety and responsibility of the Mission upon me; as far as it can be laid upon me. This is enough, without any criminal charges being made against me by any of the missionaries, as they have the Society to appeal to to redress their wrongs.

I have only to request that you will state your complaints to me, and leave the Society to judge how far I have injured you as individuals; and give me an opportunity to reply to your charges, if you have any to make, and you will oblige.

Yours, etc.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

According to Alex. Strachan, 1853:—

“ When Leigh was in England in 1820, the London Missionary Society was then holding its annual meeting in that city, and as a result of his solicitations, the contributions of the English people to the New Zealand Mission were packed in old casks, and were sent to Hatton Gardens in such quantities that Mr. Taylor had some difficulty in finding room for them in the neighbourhood.”

These goods were shipped to Sydney, and re-shipped to New Zealand as required. The Methodist Mission received theirs, as their Mission was sustained for some years upon the proceeds. The C.M.S. Mission, however, seem to have been less fortunate; and it is questionable if many of the contributions ever left Mr. Marsden's natives establishment at Parramatta.

The same historian states that two jackasses had gone on some tapu land, and had been moved to a desert island by the natives, and that two valuable horses, which Mr. Marsden had sent for agricultural purposes, had been killed for the same offence.

KIDEE KIDEE,

April 1st, 1822.

To the Committee, (*The N.Z. Committee*)

Brethren,

The Rev. Mr. Butler hereby declares in the name of his son, and his own name, that had they received the same treatment from any officer of the Hon. Church Missionary Society in England, as they did from Mr. F. Hall, on Tuesday, March 25th, 1822, neither of them would have remained in the service of the Society any longer, conceiving it to be contrary to the doctrines of the Gospel of Christ, and opposite to those principles and rules which the Society hold forth for the guidance of their missionaries.

Mr. Hall, in the first place, refused my son some trifling stores, to pay natives for work done for, and on account of the Hon. C.M.S. (say three iron pots, one adze, one pair trousers), and then charged me with being a bully, because I told him I should name the matter to the Society, and he further said I held flannel belonging to the Society the value of which I knew too well to give to the natives; I told him if he thought so he had better write to the Society to that effect. Query. Am I a thief?

He next said I endeavoured to deprive him of his situation. This is shockingly false. I then told him I wished to establish a school at Kidee Kidee as soon as possible, but it appeared to me as if he desired to thwart my plans, and I am still in the same mind, or else why should Mr. Hall wish to wrest the things out of my hands, which I applied for at Port Jackson? And notwithstanding his receiving a letter from thence to say certain goods marked “B” were intended for me, he still persisted that I had never given in a demand by list to Mr. Marsden; and that it could be proved so.

I would then ask how did the things become marked in my name? and how was it that he received a letter from Mr. Campbell to say such things as were marked "B" were intended for me. I need not say anything on this point, as the fact carries its conviction with it. Besides this, the Society must know by my letter from Port Jackson, which is an exact copy of that which I handed to Mr. Marsden for articles to enable me to establish a school on a small scale, and also for implements of agriculture.

I remain, brethren,

Your affectionately,

(Signed) JOHN BUTLER.

EXTRACT FROM THE REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE,
LONDON, TO THE ANNUAL MEETING,
April 30th, 1822.

AUSTRALIAN MISSION.

"The Seminary at Parramatta for New Zealanders, has for the present had been suspended,

(Note—thirteen had died, principally chiefs' sons. See Marsden to Pratt. 1/4/1822)
the change of habits and climate being found injurious to the health of the natives, and to require a degree of attention to them, which under the present circumstances could not be paid. Mr. Samuel Butler left in the beginning of March, and returned in the 'Hope' to New Zealand. The Committee feel, however, that such advantages have already been derived from the seminary, and are likely still to be derived when it can be placed under due management, that they wish every effort to be made to place it on a permanent footing."

Copy of a letter sent to the Rev. Thos. Kendall by Rev. Saml. Marsden, dated Sydney, June 11th, 1822.

KIDDI KIDDI,

July 17th, 1822.

Rev. Sir,

I received your letter signed by yourself and Mr. Cowell, in which you make application to me to send you two carpenters to build you a church. When I compare your letter with the minutes of the last committee at Kiddee Kiddee, I am astonished that you should venture to make such an application to me under the circumstances you were in at the time you wrote. The statements of the minutes upon the melancholy subject, are supported by the general voice of all who visit New Zealand, as well as by the natives who are at Parramatta.

I would ask you what can you want a church for? What do you intend to preach? Is not your crime a public disgrace to the said ministry to which you have set apart? and will it not bring a curse

and not a blessing upon all who do not separate from you, and fly your tent? I should expect to be consumed in your iniquity, if I did not immediately withdraw from you. How do the enemies of the Gospel in New S. Wales blaspheme and triumph? I know not what to say to you. The deed is done—you have ruined yourself in this life, and lost your honourable and sacred rank in society, which you can never regain to the day of your death. You must be sensible that I have suffered many painful hours and days and months on account of the misconduct of some in the Mission, but this is the most painful circumstance that has happened. If one man sin against another, the judge shall judge him, but if a man sin against the Lord, who shall entreat for him? This is your awful case. Be assured your sin before the Lord is very great, for men will abhor the offering of the Lord. May God be merciful to you, and put away your sin that you may not die. I shall mourn for you as Samuel did for Saul. I beg to inform you that your application for a church I am bound by every principle of religion and propriety to refuse, and at the same time I feel it my painful duty to communicate to you, as agent to the C.M.S., that all intercourse between you and me must now cease, so long as those serious charges against you stand uncontradicted, and further, that you will now consider yourself suspended from duty as a missionary belonging to the C.M.S., until the pleasure of the Society is known. I feel it also my duty to call upon you to deliver up all the property in your possession of a public nature, to the existing committee for the time being.

While I lament your fall, more than any other man, on account of your distressed family, your own precious soul and the Mission, I am compelled to withdraw all public confidence, and countermand support from you until I receive instructions from the Committee at Home.

I remain, with much concern,

Yours,

(Signed) S. MARSDEN.

Rev. Thos. Kendall.

RANGIHOO,

Sept. 28th, 1822.

Mr. Chairman,

Revd. Sir,

I have already sent my answer to the Revd. Samuel Marsden's public letter, bearing date June 11th last, and while I desire to sit myself down in silence under the severe sentence of suspension and desertion as pronounced by him, as far as the missionary settlers here, and himself as agent of the Society are concerned, yet I must now entreat the committee of missionaries to suspend all further and future proceedings against me, except such as are not only Christian, but open and manly. I own with self-abasement and abhorrence that I am a sinner in the sight of God, and that I have been a very unworthy servant of the Society, but I may perhaps be allowed to suggest, without incurring the charge of vain boasting, that my last ten years of incessant toil in the service of the Society would, in my opinion, with feeling men, entitle me to a little consideration. I boast not when I remind you that at a time when everyone else believed it to be a desperate adventure, I was one of

the first missionaries who ventured to embark with my family for New Zealand. I was one of the first missionaries who brought over with them the word of life and salvation; I was the first missionary who slept on shore among the natives; the first missionary who attempted to fix the native language, and to introduce into print the first rudiments of the Christian religion, and also the first missionary to introduce prayer in a language which the New Zealanders could understand.

I have made the New Zealand language my study both by day and night, in order that I might acquire as much knowledge of it as would enable me to be useful, and it is fully my desire and intention, should it be the divine will to restore my mind to a state of tranquillity, to do the poor deluded New Zealanders all the good I can. It is true I have have carried my measures of conciliation and social intercourse with the natives to a criminal excess, and I have not done those things which I ought to have done, but the doing wrong is not any rule why I should be prevented in future from doing right, and I mention my conviction with reverence, that I do think Almighty God has something still for me to do at New Zealand, or why should He have been so merciful to me? Whilst I record my numerous faults with grief and shame, I will account some of His mercies at least with praise and thanksgiving. It pleased God to spare my life when I was on my passage eight years ago from Port Jackson to Van Dieman's Land—a person was shooting at a mark behind which I was seated, and I removed just at the moment he proceeded to draw the trigger of his pistol. It was not on account of any righteousness of my own that I was then spared, but it was because the Lord was merciful to me. It pleased God to spare my life when I was on my first visit to the Bay of Islands, and in imminent danger of being drowned; when I was taken up out of the water, I was at my last gasp. If I had not then been taken up at that critical moment, I should have in all probability sunk to rise no more. The Lord was a second time merciful to me. It pleased God to spare my life when I was on my return from New Zealand to Port Jackson. I was quarrelling with the captain respecting some natives. He attempted to fire off his pistol at me twice; the piece missed fire; if he had succeeded in firing it off the third time at me, I must have perished, but he was providentially prevented by the chief officer. I own I erred exceedingly on that day, and the language I made use of neither became me as a man nor as a Christian, yet it pleased the Lord to spare me, and in the midst of deserved judgment to remember me in His mercy.

It pleased God to spare my life when I was fired at by Walter Hall; his pistol was pressed hard against my body, but the contents passed by my side. It was not for any righteousness of my own that I was then spared; it was because the Lord delighted in showing mercy.

It also pleased God to again spare my life when I was a few weeks ago in danger of being drowned in the River Hokianga. I desire accordingly to bless His holy Name for His continued kindness and preservation, and I assure you, Sir, I do not feel it to be a trifling manifestation of His mercy that at the time when one of my colleagues was bearing the minutes of the committee to Port Jackson—in which my conduct was censured—minutes which were known to every missionary except myself and Mr. Cowell, and at a time when sentence of suspension and discontinuance of support for myself and large family were happily unknown to me, a perfect stranger should providentially

come into the bay and put into my pocket, for services for which I should have charged nothing, the handsome gratuity of one hundred and fifty pounds. (*Was this connected with Baron Du Thierry?*) If my song is of judgment, it is also of mercy, and I desire humbly, heartily, and truly, to render unto the Lord the praise that is due to Him.

My Christian brethren, let us deal kindly to one another. With respect to my own case, if God is angry with me, I wish Him to be my judge, for I am sure He will do what is right, but let not man, nay, let not the right to smite me unfriendly, lest in doing they should, instead of serving God, oppose His wise and unswerving counsels.

Mr. Chairman, I wish you every temporal and spiritual blessing you may stand in need of, but I must candidly tell you I feel a little hurt at the measures you have taken on my account. I hope, Sir, that you have not forgotten that we have been sent here by the same congregations, and that we have the same common friend, who I am sure would do everything in his power to encourage us when doing well, and to comfort us when in distress. He knows we are fallen men, and liable to sin, but it would grieve him to hear that we are so much divided as we are.

I devoutly pray that neither you nor your children may experience the same trials which have fallen to my lot since I resided in this country; you will then be free from any bitter heartaches which attend the person whom nature is permitted to buffet and make miserable.

I am, Reverend Sir,

Your obedient servant,

THOS. KENDALL.

To R^{ev}. John Butler,

Chairman of the Committee of Missionary Settlers
at New Zealand.

KIDDEE KIDDEE,

August 1st, 1822.

Dear Sir,

From a hint lately received, I am led to believe that ——— and ——— think they have it in their power to recover the amount of rations, during the time they were employed building your house by contract. From past experience of the conduct of these men, I believe that now they have got their wages settled to their satisfaction for the time they were on their passage from New Zealand to Port Jackson, that they will be unprincipled enough to sue for this also.

As I was not present when the contract was entered into, I shall esteem it a favour, before my departure for New South Wales, if you will furnish me with every document in your power, calculated to resist so unjust a demand, in order that the R^{ev}d. Mr. Marsden may be prepared in the event of these wicked men bringing an action against him.

I am

Dear Sir,

Yours, etc.

(Signed) F. HALL.

To the R^{ev}d. Mr. Butler.

CHAPTER VII.

FRIDAY, FEBRUARY 1st.—On board most part of the day; afternoon, on shore buying a few little things.

FEBRUARY 2nd.—In morning went on shore to settle my accounts; in afternoon, putting my cabin to rights.

SUNDAY, FEBRUARY 3rd, 1822.—This morning weighed anchor, and set sail for New Zealand; the wind rather light, and weather remarkably fine, but very hot. Pass the Heads of Sydney at eleven a.m., and once more committed ourselves to the winds and waves of the ocean, but under the protection of that Almighty Being Whom winds and waves obey.

4th, 5th, 6th.—Weather very fine, and the wind fair.

7th, 8th, 9th.—Weather very fine.

SUNDAY.—Very fine. Divine Service on deck.

MONDAY.—Fine day; fresh breeze.

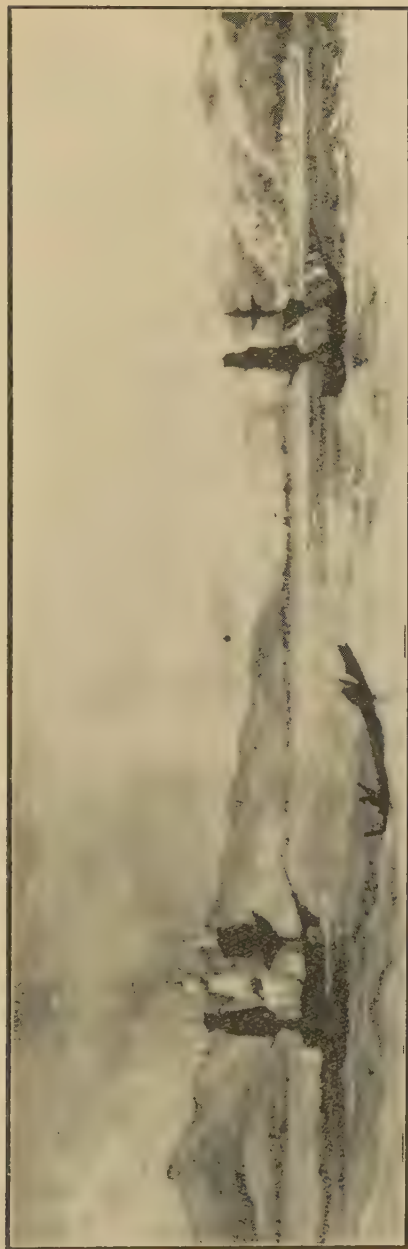
12th.—Make the land at four in the morning. Capt. Potton bought a lot of potatoes for a musket, and afterwards used some other natives very ill, that brought hogs and potatoes to sell; after permitting them on deck, he refused to pay them what he ought to have done, viz.: one musket for seventy buckets potatoes and two pigs.

WEDNESDAY, FEBRUARY 13th.—Made Cape Brett at seven in the morning; wind blowing out of the bay; at nine within the heads, ship standing for Kororaraka; at three in the afternoon came to an anchor in Tarrier's River. Mr. Kendall dined on board, and took two muskets to his house, from the ship "Westmorland." In the evening went home in a canoe belonging to Towie; gave him three axes and a spade for payment. Blessed God, I found my family all well.

THURSDAY, FEBRUARY 14th.—Went down to the ship, and brought my things on shore.

SATURDAY.—Reading the whole day.

SUNDAY, 17th.—Divine Service, morning and evening in my house; preached from 5th Chapter of Peter, and seventh verse.



TOWN OF KORORAREKA, BAY OF ISLANDS.

MONDAY, TUESDAY AND WEDNESDAY.—We had a good many natives about us who were very troublesome, and anxious to steal our property.

THURSDAY. — Mr. Kendall, Capt. Potton, Mr. Sparks, Dr. Hamilton, Mr. Hall, Mr. Bagster, Capt. Thompson, dined with us in my new house, being the first dinner eaten in that building.

FRIDAY.—Very poorly, from over-exertion and heat.

SATURDAY.—Very ill; obliged to go to bed.

SUNDAY.—Very ill; not able to perform Divine Service.

MONDAY.—A little better; enabled to do a little writing, etc. This day, a numerous body of natives set off to the River Thames and Wykato, on a war expedition. Our own natives go to-morrow. They have already destroyed almost the whole Mogoia Tribe, brought away most of the heads of the chiefs, and many slaves. Mrs. Butler gave two axes for a half-caste child, belonging (as the natives say) to the doctor of the “Coromandel,” in order to save its life; for, except some of the missionaries took it into their houses, it was their intention to kill it, as the mother was dead, and the infant unable to walk.

Rev'd. and Dear Sir,

I have to inform you that the “Westmorland” weighed her anchor in Sydney Cove on Sunday morning, Feb. 3rd, 1822, and we set sail for New Zealand, and after a fine passage of ten days, we came to anchor in the Bay of Islands. I immediately set off for Kiddee Kiddee, and when I arrived at home I found my family in good health, blessed be the Lord for His mercy. On my arrival, Shunghee, Wykato and all the other chiefs, with their people, had returned from the slaughter of the natives at the River Thames, having depopulated several very large districts, amongst whom is the interesting district of Mogoea, together with the great chief Enackee and his family; his sister is brought here alive, as a wife to one of the chiefs, and Enackee's head is in possession of another chief of the Bay of Islands. Shunghee's brother was slain in the fight, and Shunghee himself was struck twice by musket shots, but having on his coat of mail, which was given him in England, and the balls (I suppose x x by spirits) they did not perforate.

The moment they landed at Kiddee Kiddee they killed in a most brutal manner many slaves, as a satisfaction to the “manes” of their dead warriors. The slaves thus slaughtered were afterwards eaten as common food. My brethren inform me the scene was most shocking.

The natives have again united their forces, and called in the tribe from the North Cape, to assist in the general massacre, and they departed from Te Kiddee Kiddee this morning, (I should think a thousand strong), to be reinforced at every village as they pass, until the numbers will

become very formidable indeed, and with a full determination to sweep the whole of the River Thames and all the country round for some hundred miles, with the besom of destruction. These are trying seasons, indeed, especially when it is considered that before they started, they would come into our dwellings and demand what they thought proper, and we durst not refuse them, nor scarcely expostulate with them. Mrs. Butler was treated very roughly by some of the chiefs during my absence, but the Lord was her help. Mr. Marsden did not furnish me with any slops at Port Jackson, and on account of which, several chiefs who expected a suit each on my return home, have been very cross with me. Neither did he supply me with any national school books, or cards which I applied for.

I beg leave to enclose copies of two "bills" which I have drawn on the Society, for goods and passages, as stated therein, to and from New Zealand, which you will have the goodness to honour when presented.

During my absence, my son and the natives have gathered in an excellent harvest, which will be a great relief. I have at this time twelve natives at work in general business, and am happy to have a good wheaten loaf to feed them. Also I do hope and pray that the Lord will enable me to keep my ground among them, and finally, of His goodness and mercy, bless the course we have in hand, and make these habitations of cruelty the great and peaceable dwellings of harmony and love.

Mrs. Butler and family join with me in best respects and sincere wishes to yourself and family, Mr. and Mrs. Bickersteth, the Committee, and all our dear friends, and believe me to be,

Dr. Sir,

Yours very affectionately,

JOHN BUTLER.

By the "Ann," Capt. Lawrie, March 2nd, 1822.

TUESDAY, FEBRUARY 26th.—Busy among my natives, repairing my store.

FEBRUARY 27th.—Occupied in general business in the morning, writing and reading. Most of the natives being gone away to fight, the settlement is restored to peace and tranquillity, but for how long it is hard to say. The natives employed by me go on with their work very well, and better than could be expected, considering the unsettled state of things in New Zealand at this time.

FEBRUARY 28th.—Employed among the natives in the morning; afternoon, writing. Messrs. Bean and Fairburn are getting on well with my house; hope to have it finished in the course of a month. Mrs. Butler has at this time several native children patients, who are brought daily for nourishment.

MARCH 1st.—This morning have been very busy among my natives, fencing, etc.; also paid a visit to the women and children in the village, who are weeping and mourning, on account of their husbands and friends who are gone away to war. This afternoon, two women belonging to Mogoia, who were taken in war and spared on account of their health and beauty, came to my house to see me, weeping and mourning on account of their misery, to give me an account of their misfortunes, and to relate an account of the late massacre at their place. They told the narrative with much pathetic energy concerning the killed, the eaten, the wounded, the taken, as must warm the coldest feelings and soften (I should think) the hardest heart. They wept aloud when I spake to them about the conversation I had with them and their friends when at Mogoia, about the being of a God of infinite love and mercy, and His great goodness to all people of every caste and colour, of every land and clime, and when I reminded them of what I had said about (either myself or some other missionary) coming among them, they immediately replied: “We told you at the time we should all be dead before that period arrived;” and behold how true, for most of them are already now in eternity. I gave them some fish-hooks as a small present, and I can truly say that I was very sorry I could do no more to relieve their misery.

The sawyers going on exceeding well, as also the farmers.

SATURDAY, MARCH 2nd.—This morning a lad who has wrought for me for some time begged me to go into the village to see his father, who he said was very ill. I went with him, and when we arrived at the hut, the sick man wished me to tell him the nature of his complaint. I told him it was a fever, but not dangerous, and that he would be well in a few days, and that I would give him some tea, and other little things to do him good. He seemed much pleased at my information and promise, and his son came back and took him some tea and bread.

He was going to the war, and had over-exerted himself in dancing and shouting and other exercises, which always takes place before they set off. These exercises had brought on a slight fever, which caused him to be left behind. He told me that he thought the “Attua” had seized him and was going to eat his inside. I told him that the New Zealand “Attua” was all nonsense, and that from our own improper conduct by heats and cold, many diseases were brought upon the body as natural consequences of our own improper conduct, and also that our

bodies are subject to disease and death on account of our doing bad things against the commands of the great "Attua," the God of heaven and earth, the Almighty Spirit that made all men and gave them life. He answered: "What you say is good," and was happy to hear he should be better in a day or two, but he could not comprehend how one God should fill all space. After breakfast gave some directions to the natives, and spent the remainder of the day in writing and reading.

SUNDAY. — Administered Holy Communion. No one attended but my family.

MONDAY.—Putting up fencing.

TUESDAY, MARCH 5th.—Putting up fencing.

WEDNESDAY.—Laying a drain in fowl-yard.

THURSDAY.—Samuel Butler and Mr. Fairburn set off for Shukehangah, myself employed in laying a drain.

FRIDAY.—Winnowing of wheat for bread.

SATURDAY.—Reading and preparing for the Sabbath.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY, 11th.—Writing the most part of the day. Held a special committee on general business.

TUESDAY. — Dividing the rope and other stores, and attending to my natives. Mr. Wm. Hall, Mr. Cowell and Mr. King dined with me, and Mr. Kendall and Mr. Cowell slept at my house the preceding night.

WEDNESDAY, MARCH 13th.—As soon as I arose this morning, I heard that a native had been shot in the night, about half a mile from my house. I felt desirous of knowing who had done it, and the reason of it being done. On my enquiry I found that a man named Ashou had shot a young woman, (he had been one of my sawyers), a slave, for stealing some fish to eat, which was hanging on a pole by his hut.

I first found the man and enquired if he had killed a slave, and he said, "Yes." I then wished to know the cause of his so doing, and he replied, "I caught her in the act of stealing my food, and I loaded my gun and shot her." I then asked him to show me the corpse, and he immediately accompanied me to the spot, which was about half a mile distant. When we arrived, I found her lying in a creek of water, and her body stretched in a shocking position, and on examining the body, I found that a ball had passed through the body

under the ribs. I told him I was very sorry that he should kill a young woman for so trifling an act. He then asked whether it was not good to kill for stealing, and if the white people did not hang thieves. The question was so pertinent and forcible that I scarce knew what to answer him according to his query. However, I told him it was very wrong to thief, but there was something peculiar in her case which deserved much pity. She appeared to be almost starved to death, and only took a little fish to keep her from famishing, and if he had corrected her without killing her, I should not have been angry, but now I could not be reconciled to him for taking away the life of a slave for a thing which I was sure he was doing very often himself; and if he killed another for doing wrong, and did the same continually himself, he was much worse than the person whom he had killed, and he must expect some heavy judgment to come upon him. After some further conversation about the sin of theft, and the punishment of it, I left him and returned home to breakfast. The remainder of the day employed with my natives, etc.

Had several applications this day from sick people for tea and sugar; they were supplied.

THURSDAY.—Employed among my natives and drawing stores.

FRIDAY.—Employed in assisting to clear the rubbish out of my new house and yard.

SATURDAY.—Reading and preparing for the Sabbath.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service in my new house, morning and evening.

18th.—Rather poorly. Employed in reading most part of the day.

TUESDAY.—In the garden, and among my natives. At and about the buildings. This morning my son, Samuel Butler, and Mr. Fairburn returned from Shukiangah, bringing ten young pigs. They have been out twelve days in search of hogs. Meat is very scarce indeed, and the pigs that remain among the natives, they will not part from (at least but very few), without powder and guns, and these I never issue. The natives that remain at home are very trying; they frequently come into my house against my consent. They often open the door of the house and come in without speaking, and place themselves in a chair at the table where we are sitting, covered with oil and ochre and filth, enough to turn the strongest stomach;

neither will they rise or go until they please; we can only prevail by entreaty. One of them came into my place on Sunday morning, and he would not go out until between nine and ten o'clock at night. I spake to him in the best manner I was able as to the impropriety of his conduct, gave him his supper, etc., etc., but he did not pay any attention to this, but said he should go when it suited him. Pray for us—we need your prayers, and of the continual grace of Christ to keep us from fainting by the way, or of turning aside from the Holy Commandment delivered unto us.

WEDNESDAY, THURSDAY AND FRIDAY.—Employed in the general business of the Mission. This week, Messrs. Bean and Puekey have been employed in building my chimney; they have completed one, and commenced the second. Mr. Fairburn has been employed in putting up shelves in my study. Mr. Shepherd has been this week after a raft of timber to Wy-caddi. Several native children in the settlement being ill, Mrs. Butler has supplied them with tea and sugar and bread, etc.

MARCH 23rd.—Employed in my study in preparing for the Sabbath.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY.—Moving things into the new house.

TUESDAY MORNING.—Mr. Saml. Butler went to Mr. F. Hall for some trade to pay natives for work, and he refused to take an order from him, whereupon I went to him and informed him if he refused trade to my son while he was the Society's servant, I should write to the Society concerning the matter. I further said my son had as much right to the public store as he had. Mr. Hall then began to use very bad and scurrilous language to me, calling me a bully, prognosticating evil to my family, etc. He further said I had flannel belonging to the Society; and that I was too well acquainted with its value to give it to the natives. Query: What does he mean by that? He also charged me with doing all I could while at Port Jackson to deprive him of his situation. Now this is shockingly false, as must appear in a moment to every thinking mind. Is it possible that I, as a clergyman, should wish to take to myself his position as a layman? This altercation preyed so much on my mind after my return home, and brought on a bilious disorder, so that I was very ill all the week after. Mr. Hall also, on the Thursday following, wrote me a letter

which is replete with malignity. I pray God may not lay this sin to his charge, and may the Lord forgive him as freely as I do for Xt's sake.

SUNDAY.—Blessed be God, I was enabled to perform Divine Service, altho' very poorly in health.

MONDAY.—Writing the whole day, etc. My native workmen still go on exceeding well. Our settlement at this time is in peace and tranquillity.

[Rev. Mr. Butler reported that he had nine natives employed and victualled, belonging to the district of Kiddee Kiddee, and four slaves taken in war at the River Thames, the first a boy about twelve years of age, second a boy about four years, third a girl about ten years, who is nurse to the fourth, being an infant about twelve months, whom Mrs. Butler redeemed from the warriors, in order to save its life. The infant is a half-caste, said to belong to an officer on board the "Coromandel."]]

TUESDAY.—Writing, etc., etc.

WEDNESDAY.—This morning I set off for Rangee Hoo to carry some little comforts for the natives employed by the missionaries, and sick; as tea, sugar, prints, flannel and dungaree, moulds, etc. I was very happy to find them all in good health, but exceeding sorry to find that thro' Mr. ——'s conduct, greater differences existed among them.

APRIL 4th.—In my study.

GOOD FRIDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening; administered the Holy Sacrament.

SATURDAY.—Employed in my study.

SUNDAY, EASTER DAY, APRIL 7th.—By the request of the Rev. Thos. Kendall and the other brethren, I went down to Rangie Hoo to perform Divine Service and administer the Holy Sacrament; I also christened Mr. King's child (three weeks old)—Samuel Lee King; churched Mrs. King at the same time. Capt. Henry had arrived two days previous. He called at Bay of Islands to procure potatoes, etc. I received two letters by him from the Society, and six bags of bread from Port Jackson. Rev. Mr. Williams and his wife, Mrs. Henry and her brother, and Mr. Henry's brother are on board as passengers, going to Tahietee.

MONDAY.—Returned to Kiddee Kiddee, and found all well.

TUESDAY, APRIL 9th.—All the above friends dined with me at Kiddee Kiddee.

Mrs. Butler and self returned to Rangie Hoo, in the evening, and remained at Mr. Wm. Hall's until Friday, when we returned home. During my stay at Rangie Hoo I had an opportunity of going to Par Roa and putting letters on board the "Indian," Capt. Merriek, for England. She sailed out of the Bay of Islands April 12th, 1822.

I was truly grieved to find my brother missionary going on in a way which was not good; may the Lord in His mercy restore him to His holy ways, and evermore rule and direct his steps.

SATURDAY.—In my study, writing and reading.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service, M. & E.

MONDAY AND TUESDAY.—Employed with my natives about the buildings, and winnowing wheat and oats. Our natives killed all the pigs belonging to the natives of Kaipero.

APRIL 17th.—Held the quarterly committee at my house; read the public letter from Mr. Pratt, drew a bill on Mr. Marsden for half year's salary due to my son, March 31st, 1822.

Agreed with Capt. Hunter of the "Vansittart" to take Mr. Bean and Mr. Fairburn, carpenters, to Port Jackson, as also Mr. Saml. Butler, Mr. Wm. Hall. Capt. Hunt had slept at my house the preceding night, in order that he might attend the committee, and arrange about the passengers going to Port Jackson. At the time that we were consulting with Capt. Hunt, he had the dreadful news brought him by one of the sailors that one of his boats had upset in the bay on the night before, and all the crew except one, consisting of six hands, perished in the mighty waters.

The captain's feelings, and our own, on these melancholy tidings, may be better felt than expressed. My son, at the captain's request, set off immediately with him, to see if any of the bodies could be found, or if peradventure any of them might have reached the shore, as they were not far from it at the time, as appears from the story of a native girl who was in the boat at the time, and who succeeded in reaching the shore to tell the fatal news concerning the rest. Mr. Cowell and Revd. Thos. Kendall did not attend, and Mr. King could not, through sickness.

THURSDAY AND FRIDAY.—Gardening and writing. My son has returned from the ship “Vansittart,” bringing the fatal news of the death of five of the boat’s crew, and one saved, being picked up nearly dead, after clinging to the boat seven hours.

The captain having sent a message desiring me to go down, I returned with the crew, and reached the ship about eight o’clock at night. I found the captain more tranquil in mind than I expected. I spent the evening with him in serious conversation. Next morning he wished me to be a witness of the disposal of the wearing apparel belonging to the deceased. They were produced on deck, and sold among the sailors to the best bidder, and the captain made answerable for the amount to the relatives. After this business I departed for home, and arrived about five p.m. Spent the evening in reading.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY, APRIL 22nd.—Writing the whole day. I am happy to state by way of conclusion, that through the tender mercy of our God, I am at this time quite well, and my family also is enjoying the inestimable blessing of good health. You will see by the enclosed bills, I stand indebted to the Society for articles had out of the store from Mr. F. Hall. Many of these things have been given away by me among the natives. The way in which I came by the case of bonnets was as follows. When at Port Jackson I applied to Mr. Marsden for the children’s bonnets sent out by the Sp———(?) for New Zealand, and he informed me they were in Campbell’s store. I went to Mr. Campbell and made a demand of the case, and he replied, “Mr. Marsden has ordered it to the Orphan School, Parramatta.” I told him I wanted it at New Zealand, and begged permission to take it, which was granted. This case was opened at a special committee at Kiddee Kiddee, everyone expecting a share of them, but everyone was disappointed on finding that it did not contain school bonnets but —— (illegible). One did not want any, and another did not. I then said, “I will be answerable for the bonnets, according to the invoice, to the Society, and any of you that like to take any for your wives and children can take them, and be accountable to me for the same.”

And now, my dear Sir, I beseech you pray for me, and pray for poor New Zealand, for I trust that the heathen shall yet be given to Xt for His inheritance, and these utmost parts

of the world for His possession. Give our united love to all friends, and accept of the same to you and yours, and believe me to be,

Dear Sir,

Very faithfully yours,

JOHN BUTLER.

Sent to the Society per Samuel Butler, by Port Jackson.

Capt. Hunt, "Vansittart," whaler, April 27th, 1822.

WEDNESDAY, APRIL 24th.—Mr. Thos. Hansen began to assist my natives to break in the bullocks, in order to sow wheat, oats, and barley. Employed in getting things ready for my son's embarkation on board the "Vansittart" for Port Jackson.

THURSDAY.—To-day my son took Mr. Bean and his things on board the "Vansittart," and returned in the evening.

This morning I sent a number of natives into the bush to see if they could get the bullocks down to the settlement. With my assistance and Mr. Hansen, we got them all into the yard with several young cattle. Caught two bullocks for the purpose of working them on the farm, and I castrated three young bulls, about twelve months old. We had a good deal of trouble about this business, but we got over it much better than I expected. I narrowly escaped being knocked down twice, and several others also, as the young bulls, when let loose, ran at the first person that came near.

SATURDAY.—This morning I set off for the "Vansittart" with my son and Mr. Fairburn. It was a very wet day, and we did not arrive until evening, and I caught a severe cold. Remained on board on Sunday, and returned in the evening, after burying one of the men who had been drowned.

MONDAY.—Mrs. Butler and myself returned to the ship to bid Samuel Butler good-bye.

TUESDAY.—Set off for Rangie Hoo, and remained there on a visit until the 9th May, when I returned home to Kiddee Kiddee.

MAY 5th.—Preached at Rangie Hoo morning and evening, and administered the Holy Sacrament; a very pleasant Sabbath.

THE ORIGINAL IS IN THE "HOCKEN" COLLECTION, DUNEDIN.
 Samuel Leigh to Rev. J. Butler.

May 10th, 1822.

Rev. and Dear Sir,

We have received the two chairs and piece of ——(?) you have been so kind to send us, for which we thank you.

We are concerned to hear you have been unwell since you left us. We advise you to be careful of your health, and observe what it is that affects you most, that you may avoid the cause, and by the blessing of heaven, you may enjoy health.

We are pleased to find you give us a place in your prayers to God, and we beg to be continued in your daily devotions. You will excuse me for not coming to see you for the present. The whole of this week I have been unwell and continue feeble. I have had much pain in my head and back, and am now much revived, for which the Lord be praised.

Mrs. Leigh has sent Mrs. Butler two frocks for your dear child, which she hopes will please. Last Sabbath, Mr. King conducted Divine Service in our house, and this day was good to us all.

The natives have returned to us from Wangaroa, and have brought news of the death of several men who were natives of our village. One of Rangihu men directly killed a slave, and several other natives cut him up and roasted and ate him on our beach. I have reasoned with them upon the subject, and they are ashamed of it.

Please remember us to all the friends in your settlement. We shall be glad to hear from you at all times.

Wishing you every blessing in all your ways,

I am,

Rev. and Dear Sir,

Yours, etc.,

SAMUEL LEIGH.

MAY 10th.—Went to plough all day. I took physick in the morning, and thereby caught a severe cold which laid me up altogether the next day, and it was with great difficulty I performed Divine Service on Sunday, and administered the Holy Communion.

On May 4th, the brig "Endeavour," belonging to Rev. Mr. Williams, of Tahiti, came to an anchor at Rangie Hoo, and by which I received two boxes containing four hats and four bonnets from the Society.

MAY 13th.—Very poorly, and not able to go out of doors.

MAY 14th.—This morning much better; in my study till one, then dinner, and to plough between four and five.



SAMUEL LEIGH

This day we got in my black cow. She has a fine cow calf.

MAY 15th.—At plough and harrow all day. Natives go on well.

THURSDAY.—At plough.

FRIDAY.—Very wet; natives draining the wheat lands.

SATURDAY.—In my study in the morning; afternoon, attending to my men.

SUNDAY, MAY 19th.—Divine Service, morning and evening. Preached from I Hebrews, third verse; afternoon, from 68 Psalm, eighteenth verse.

MONDAY AND TUESDAY. — At plough, cattle work exceeding well.

Rain in afternoon of Tuesday; caught cold.

WEDNESDAY.—Poorly from cold. Spent the day in preparing a sermon for Whitsunday.

THURSDAY.—Very poorly. Spent the day writing sermon.

FRIDAY.—Rather better. Reading in the morning, afternoon at the farm.

SATURDAY.—Very wet. Spent the day in preparing for the Sabbath. I have now about six acres of wheat sown, but on account of the weak state of my health, I have been compelled to engage Thos. Hansen (a person long resident in New Zealand, and brother to Mrs. King) to assist me, and to go out with the natives. They, upon the whole, work very well. I have learned one native to drive a pair of bullocks, and another to hold the plough, and to harrow in grain, and to trench, etc., etc. I have several others who will become complete farmers in a little time. The natives in general have good ideas of tilling the ground and preparing it for seed, which must one day or other become, through the blessing of God, the greatest of temporal blessings.

WHITSUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening. Administered the Holy Sacrament. Poor natives very attentive and quiet.

JUNE 1st.—Through the mercy of God, I have been much better this week than I have been for several weeks past. The weather for the most part has been rainy, and out-door work



PORTRAIT OF TOOI, in his costume as a New Zealand chief; from the
Missionary Papers.

very much impeded and very uncomfortable thereby; nevertheless, we have tilled and sown about two acres of wheat. Natives go on pretty well in farming, sawing, fencing, etc. Mr. Hansen returned to Rangie Hoo this day; paid him £6/15/- for labour, and £5/8/0 for food. The settlement enjoys peace and tranquillity at this time.

SUNDAY.—Preached at Rangie Hoo, morning and evening. Administered the Holy Sacrament to Mr. Leigh, Mrs. Leigh, Mrs. Hall, Mr. and Mrs. King, and Mr. Hansen; spent the Sabbath very comfortably. Mr. and Mrs. Cowell did not attend. Mr. Kendall is still at Shukihangah with the ship "Providence," Capt. Herd, a trader, for the purpose of loading her with spars. The captain told us before he left the Bay of Islands he should purchase his cargo entirely with muskets and powder.

JUNE 3rd.—Paid a visit to the natives of Rangie Hoo, who received me very kindly, and I returned to Kiddee Kiddee in the afternoon, and found my family in health and safety. In the evening I took a walk with my native foreman round the farm.

TUESDAY.—Ploughed three-quarters of an acre of land; bullocks driven by natives.

WEDNESDAY.—In the morning I went to the farm, and set my native foreman, Tywangah, to plough by himself for the first time, with one native to drive and another to clear the stubble and weeds from the plough. I wanted wheat winnowed for seed, therefore I returned to perform this business, and completed what I had to do before dinner. In the afternoon I returned to the farm, and found that my men had ploughed half an acre, and quite to my satisfaction. I may say without boasting that I was the first man who put the agricultural plough into the land of New Zealand, and the first man who taught the natives to use it. I should be happy if I could say that of the Gospel plough, and that I was the first instrument in the hands of the Lord in breaking up the fallow ground of the hearts of some of them, and of sowing the good seed of the work of God therein.

6th.—Sowed an acre and a half of wheat, and the natives harrowed it with the bullocks, and trenched the land. As my food was all expended, I was obliged to turn the bullocks into the bush this morning. I have nine acres of wheat got in pretty well; may the Lord give the increase.

FRIDAY.—Mr. F. Hall, Mr. Shepherd and Mr. Kemp have been into the country since Monday last, and returned this evening. Mr. Kemp had a goat, and Mr. Shepherd a lamb killed this day by native dogs.

JUNE 8th.—Went to the farm before breakfast, and sowed some barley; remaining part of the day employed in preparing for the Sabbath.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

JUNE 10th.—Sowing, chipping in barley.

11th.—Sowing oats.

12th.—Preparing ground for oats.

JUNE 13th.—Sowing oats.

14th.—Repairing fence round the paddock.

JUNE 15th.—In the study preparing for the Sabbath. The natives in my employ go on exceeding well at this time, but food runs very short. I shall be obliged to turn some away for want thereof.

JUNE 16th.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY, TUESDAY, WEDNESDAY, THURSDAY.—In the field with my natives sowing barley, clover, and grass seeds.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—Very poorly with cold and rheumatism in my limbs and head; obliged to keep indoors, and prepare thereby for the Sabbath. I have now completed all that I am able to do in the sowing department this season; I have sown nine acres of wheat, and four of barley and oats; may the Lord give the increase and reserve the appointed weeks of harvest. As the natives want the constant attention of a European in this field, both to instruct them in their work and encourage them to perform the same, and to sow the grain for them, and my health being weak for some time past, it has been with the utmost difficulty that I have got so much seed in the ground, but the Lord hath been my helper, He hath been my strength and comfort in my weakness, and I trust that whenever my heart and strength should fail, God will be the strength of my heart and portion for ever.

SUNDAY, JUNE 23rd. — Divine Service, morning and evening. Wykato, the one of the natives that accompanied Mr. Kendall to England, arrived at Kide Kide this morning from Shukihangah, bringing the news that the ship “Provi-

dence," Capt. Herd, is loading in that harbour with spars, and paying for them with muskets and powder. Rev. Mr. Kendall is aboard to act as interpreter, and will remain until the ship is full!!!

FRIDAY, 28th.—This week my natives and self have been gardening and building a shed. My health, by God's blessing, is much restored, for which I desire to be truly thankful.

During the last month we have had many chiefs and their families at our house, backwards and forwards, among whom has been poor Thomas Tooi, his brother Korro Korro, Tiranghee and families, and about thirty of the people. They are exceeding anxious for somebody to go and live at their place. I think they have a fairer claim than any tribe in New Zealand, as they have always been very kind, and manifested their regard to Europeans. (I would have been glad if it had fallen to my lot to have settled among them.)

JUNE 29th.—Set off for Rangī Hoo to preach and administer the Holy Sacrament on Sunday, June 30th, 1822.

Within the last two months Mrs. Butler has made presents to several of the chiefs' wives, of blankets, flannel petticoats, gowns of Indian print, and also flannel for children. The weather at this season of the year is very humid and cold in New Zealand. The ice was a considerable thickness on standing water this morning. I need not say that blankets and flannel are very beneficial for the poor natives, of which they are very fond, because their utility is so clearly manifest.

WEDNESDAY, FEBRUARY 27th, 1822.—Messrs. Bean and Fairburn came to board and lodge at my house at 18/- per week and person.

JOHN BUTLER.

Paid up to their departure by bills drawn on Mr. Marsden, New South Wales.

Rev. S. Marsden to the Rev. J. Butler. (The original is in the "Hocken" Library.)

SYDNEY,

June 11th, 1822.

Revd. Sir,

I received your letter in which you allude to our differences. Allow me to say that you must be fully aware that it is not in my power, or yours, to settle these differences, as they are not of a private, but of a public nature, and have been referred to the final decision of our superiors in London. If the Committee of the C.M.S. believe those

charges which you have made against me to be true, they will be bound to withdraw their confidence from me; if they do not believe them, they will make an unfavourable impression towards you. Nothing can therefore be done in this matter until an answer is received to your public letter forwarded by the "Surrey." In answer to your application for different articles to be purchased by me at Port Jackson for the use of the settlement at Keddee Keddee, this I must also decline for the present, until I know what answer the Committee makes to your letter. If I have no direction or authority, I will have no responsibility. As I have no direction or authority, I must decline all interference for the present. You told me in the presence of a number of gentlemen that you would not obey my orders, nor would you act under me. (*Why should he? 3 Butler was Superintendent of the Mission.*) From that moment I had done; I had no means of enforcing obedience, and therefore it was of no use having any contention on this point, and here we parted. You have taken all the direction, and of course you will take all the responsibility. You will be answerable for all the stores and their expenditure, which you took from Mr. Campbell's store-house. You will remember the cordage and canvas were sent out for the "Active," and not for your settlement. You have also taken upon you to divide the Society's property amongst individuals, which in my opinion should have been handed over to the storekeeper, agreeably to the direction of the Committee, and served out by him as occasion might require. The Society will expect that every part of the stores are accounted for in a proper way. Everyone should not be left to take his share of the public property, and expend it as he thinks proper. This was never the intention of the Society. If the Society should be satisfied with what you have done in this respect, I shall have no cause to complain. All I mean to say is that if I have not the direction, I will not have the responsibility. You have taken the direction, and you must take the responsibility.

There is nothing now belonging to the Society in Mr. Campbell's store but a little iron, two ploughs, and four harrows. The harrows would not sell because they were not pairs. You had taken harrows with you that were not fellows. I have desired Mr. Hall to send those harrows back which were not fellows. (*We presume that these harrows were sent out by the Society for utility, and not for sale by Mr. Marsden.*)

I also observe an error in your minutes, where it is stated that I have sold the bonnets sent out by the Society. This I must request the committee to correct, for they are not sold. Upon what ground the committee made this statement I cannot say. However, it is not correct. I have mentioned them to Mr. Hall, and he, as well as Mr. Kendall, formerly, tells me they are not wanted at New Zealand. However, I shall not sell them for the present. As the missionaries have generally transferred their affairs from Sydney to London, and as several of them have drawn upon the Society for their salaries before they are due, they cannot want much from Port Jackson. If they do, they have their private agents here to supply them. Under all the circumstances of the Mission, I do not intend to purchase anything for the settlement, unless something very extraordinary occur, till I hear from the Committee. I conceive I should not be justified in doing this.

I cannot check or lessen the evils that afflict the Mission, originating wholly among yourselves, and therefore withdraw from them, (*The evils are of Mr. Marsden's creation or distortion.*) and as you as a

body will not be governed by any authority here or in London, there is no alternative but to leave you to yourselves at the present to do as you like. God will in due time bless New Zealand with His Gospel. If the present workmen will not answer, He will find other labourers who will. I am not alarmed for the final success of the Mission, tho' at present clouds and darkness rest upon it. The nine bills you have drawn upon me I have paid, tho' you did not endorse them. They were drawn in your favour, and payable to your order. This is incorrect in me. I had no authority to pay them without your indorsement.

Present our kind respects to Mrs. Butler.

I am,

Revd. Sir,

Your most obedt. servant,

(Signed) SAMUEL MARSDEN.

Rev. J. Butler.

JULY 1st.—Mr. Butler reported to the quarterly committee that during the last three months he had had fourteen natives under his charge, all of whom were fed. Mr. Butler also reported he had sown about nine acres of wheat, and four of oats and barley, but from the weak state of his health he was obliged to engage Mr. Thomas Hansen to assist him in putting in the greater part of the wheat. He has taught one native to hold the plough, and another to drive.

SUNDAY, JUNE 30th. — Preached at Rangie Hoo, and administered the H.S. in the morning. Afternoon, very poorly, and not able to preach. I was exceedingly sorry to hear from Mr. King, Mrs. Hansen, and Mr. Leigh, that Mrs. ——— either sent or permitted her son Thos. ———, on Sunday morning, June 23rd, to go down to the beach and bargain for two hogs for powder, which were already bought by Mr. Hansen, begging the natives to return the payment when received, saying they would give more. This Mrs. ——— did to her shame and disgrace, and not only bought them with powder, against the Society's positive instructions, but agreed for them on a Sunday evening, when all the other families were assembled together to worship the Lord our God!

MONDAY, JULY 1st.—Much better this morning, enabled to return home at noon, when I found my family were all well, blessed be God for His mercy.

TUESDAY.—Thomas Tooi and three of his brothers and our chief Teenana breakfasted with us. We had a good deal of talk respecting old England. Mr. Bickersteth, Mr. Pratt, Mr. Mortimer, and all the missionary friends we know in

England. I sent down by Tooi to his place one young bull and one heifer, which he promises to take a special care of. I gave his people some fish-hooks, and six young peach trees for himself, and one iron pot at his request, and promised to visit his tribe the earliest opportunity. Afterwards I went into the village at K.K., and visited my natives.

WEDNESDAY, THURSDAY, FRIDAY, SATURDAY.—Obliged to keep my bed through a violent pain in my limbs, and head, and face; this complaint has been a pretty constant companion with me for two months, brought on I believe in the first instance from being much exposed to the wet weather, and often very wet in my feet.

SUNDAY.—On account of my indisposition, Mr. Kemp read prayers for me, and I preached morning and evening.

JULY 8th.—Much better; enabled to employ my time in the study. Bought two spars of Tenana for two axes. Taken very ill in the evening, with a violent pain in my head; took a strong dose of medicine, and in the morning found myself a little better.

TUESDAY.—Held the third quarterly committee at my house. Mr. King attended from Rangī Hoo, as also Rev. Saml. Leigh, visitor. Mr. Kendall is at Shukiangah, as also is Mr. Cowell. All the remainder of the week I have been very poorly, and have been obliged to keep indoors, and take pretty good quantity of physic.

SUNDAY, JULY 14th.—On account of my weakness and indisposition, Mr. Shepherd read prayers in the morning, Mr. Kemp in the afternoon. I preached M. & E., and administered the Holy Sacrament. Mr. Wm. Hall returned from Port Jackson in the ship "St. Michael," which came into the harbour yesterday.

MONDAY.—A little better in health through mercy. The weather continues exceeding wet and uncomfortable; the rains which have fallen this winter in New Zealand have been very heavy, and continued a long time with little interruption.

TUESDAY.—Very poorly. Mrs. Butler went to Rangī Hoo to fetch down some things which were sent down from Port Jackson by my son for us. Returned in the evening very wet.

WEDNESDAY AND THURSDAY. — Through mercy I feel a little better.

FRIDAY, JULY 19th.—This morning, Rev. W. Lawrey, Wesleyan missionary, his wife and child, came to visit us. They are on their way to Tonga Tabu, in the ship “St. Michael,” which was purchased, I understand, for the purpose of establishing a mission in Tonga Tabu, and to perform all that is necessary in shipping business hereafter, toward the general success and carrying of the same. Capt. Beveridge and wife remained one night at our house, and returned to his ship. Mr. Lawrey remained until Monday, July 22nd.

On the Lord’s Day I was enabled to read prayers, and Revd. Mr. Lawrey preached morning and afternoon, on account of my indisposition.

MONDAY. — Being through merey somewhat better, I was prevailed upon to ride down upon the water with Mr. and Mrs. Lawrey (to the ship), hoping that the sea air might do me good. Mr. Kemp accompanied us, and I bless God that my journey had this desired effect, as I feel much better since my return.

As the ship was lying near the settlement at Rangie Hoo, I slept at Mr. Wm. Hall’s.

TUESDAY.—Wet; unable to return to Kiddee Kiddee. Capt. Beveridge and Mr. W.L. came on shore to invite us to partake of a family dinner on board. We consented, and Messrs. Hall, King, Kemp, Cowell, Mrs. Cowell, Miss Elizh. Kendall, Rev. Saml. Leigh, and self went on board, and spent two hours with our friends very comfortably, and then returned, and the most part of the company took tea at Mr. Hall’s. In the evening, Mr. Wm. Hall, myself, and Mr. Kemp had some conversation respecting a habitation for Mr. Cowell, as he complains (not without cause, as it is his seeking) that he is uncomfortable at Mr. Kendall’s. When he first came down with me, I offered him the half of my house, but he refused to accept of it, and altho’ he might have been very comfortable therein, yet, notwithstanding this, and his being made acquaint with what happened in the family, he chose to go and live at Mr. Kendall’s; and the brethren at Rangie Hoo say that he counselled Mr. Kendall to put the native girl out of the house by degrees.

WEDNESDAY.—Mr. Wm. Hall, Mr. King, Mr. Kemp and myself assembled to take the matter into further consideration.

When Mr. Kendall returned from England, he put Wykato, the native of Rangie Hoo who went to England with him, into the Society’s house formerly held by Mr. Carlisle.

This we considered very wrong, and were therefore desirous that Mr. Cowell should accept this house, but as the native and his friends had it in their possession, sometimes living in it and sometimes not, and as they went in at Mr. Kendall's request, we thought it right in getting them out by offering them a present. We then sent for Mr. Cowell and consulted with him upon the subject, who appeared very agreeable. We then sent to Wykato, who was in the house, and we conversed with him upon the business. Wykato spoke exceedingly well, and made no hesitation whatever to give it up. "I know," said he, "it belongs to the white people. I told Mr. Kendall some time ago Mr. Cowell should have the house, but Mr. Kendall said to me 'No! No! You remain in it.' " We informed him we should give him twenty axes, hoes, etc., etc., as a present. He replied, "Very well, I shall be glad to receive them as a present, but not as a payment, as I have no right to sell the white people's house." We told him it would not be considered as a payment, but a present for his readiness to comply with our request.

Wykato then said he would remove his things in the afternoon, and in the morrow; and the day after it would be ready for Mr. Cowell. Having attained our object, we prepared to return to Mr. Hall's and look for trade. In crossing the yard Mrs. Cowell looked out at Mr. Kendall's door, calling her husband, saying, "Mr. C., you need not accept that house, for I will not go into it." He turned aside to speak to her, and we saw Mr. Cowell no more. We proceeded to Mr. Hall's, and having collected the trade, I sent one of my natives to inform Wykato that the articles were ready for his reception, who returned for answer (being persuaded by Mrs. Kendall), that he could not go out until Mr. Kendall returned from Shukiangah, as he understood he would be very angry. Here the matter ended.

Mr. Kemp and myself dined with Mr. Hall, and then set out for Kiddee Kiddee, bidding Rev. W. Lawrey and friends in the ship "St. Michael" good-bye as we passed. Arrived about five in the afternoon, and found my family well, blessed be God.

THURSDAY.—Much better in health. The day exceeding wet; employed in the study.

26th.—In the garden most part of the day, being somewhat better.

27th.—Employed in the study.

JULY 28th.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY.—Writing the whole day.

TUESDAY.—Held a special committee. The natives of our place are returned from the war at the River Thames. They have lost many of their friends in this expedition. Two canoes were upset at sea, and thirty persons drowned. They report that they have killed two thousand people at Waikato and its vicinity, and they have brought away many prisoners of war. Rewah, Shunghee, Moka, and several of their friends have been to see us, and dined with me on this day. I had a great deal of conversation with them about the war, and it appears they returned more through the inclemency of the weather than from a desire to cease from slaughter and devastation.

JULY 31st.—Writing and gardening. Gave Shunghee at his request a rug, an adze, and flannel to make him shirts.

THURSDAY AND FRIDAY.—Gardening, etc.

SATURDAY.—Went to Rangie Hoo in order to be ready to perform Divine Service on the Sabbath.

AUGUST 4th.—Preach M. & E. at Mr. Wm. Hall's house; administered the H.S.

MONDAY.—Returned to Kiddee Kiddee.

AUGUST 6th.—Levelling the front yard of my house.

AUGUST 7th.—Employed in the same manner. Several chiefs came to visit me this day, and were very importunate for axes, adzes, etc. I gave three adzes and one axe between the four principal men.

AUGUST 8th.—Employed in assisting to put up paling.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—Writing. Mrs. Butler has issued a small quantity of flannel and several gowns among the chiefs' wives and children.

AUGUST 11th.—Employed among my natives in making an under-drain.

AUGUST 13th.—In my study endeavouring to gain a little acquaintance with the native language. I have established morning and evening prayer in my house in the native language for their benefit; may the Lord grant His blessing. During the last month I have distributed among the natives of our district about one hundred young peach trees raised in my garden. Peaches thrive exceeding well in New Zealand.

WEDNESDAY, THURSDAY, FRIDAY.—At work with my natives putting up a new fence in front of my garden.

SATURDAY.—Preparing for the Sabbath.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY.—Employed in my study. The remainder of the week in planting potatoes and sowing garden seeds.

Sent some of my natives to Wymattie with some sugar, tea, and rice for Tahairee, one of the chiefs of our district, and a near relation of Shunghie's, who is very ill. The present was received with thanks.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY.—Employed in learning native language; my natives in planting potatoes.

TUESDAY AND WEDNESDAY.—In the garden with my natives; the remaining part of the week employed in writing and study.

In the course of the week Mrs. Butler had several applications from natives who were ill, for sugar, flannel, and tea, bread and rice. They were all supplied as far as we could.

The ship "Providence" came into the harbour on Friday, laden with spars from the River Shukeanga. Rev. Mr. Kendall, who acted as interpreter for her, returned to Rangie Hoo on her. Capt. Herd, I understand, intends to dispose of the spars at Valparaiso, and reload for England from thence, if possible.

SUNDAY.—Preached at Rangie Hoo, and administered the H. Sacrament. Churchied Mrs. Hansen.

MONDAY, SEPTEMBER 2nd.—Planting potatoes with my natives.

TUESDAY.—Employed in the barn endeavouring to learn two new hands how to thresh.

WEDNESDAY.—In the barn. In the evening Shunghie drank tea with me, and informed me that Mr. Kendall wished to know if he would give my person payment for double barrelled gun.

THURSDAY AND FRIDAY. — Employed in gardening and weather-boarding a shed. Ship "Providence" went out of the harbour Thursday, September 4th, after having one of the boats broken by Wykato at Rangie Hoo.

SATURDAY.—Employed in my study.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening; administered the Holy Sacrament. Mr. F. Hall joined with us in commemorating the dying love of Jesus.

MONDAY, 9th.—Employed in my study; my natives in threshing and sawing.

10th and 11th.—Fencing and making a pig-sty.

THURSDAY.—Writing native language.

FRIDAY.—Gardening, etc.

SATURDAY.—Study; preparing for the Sabbath.

SUNDAY, 15th.—Divine Service, M. & E.

MONDAY.—Writing native language.

17th, 18th, 19th.—Gardening.

20th, 21st.—Preparing for the Sabbath. During the past week I have been daily into the village to visit the sick. One chief very ill with pain and fever in the chest. Put a blister on his stomach, and gave him some salts, which, with such nourishment as we could procure, he is in a mending state.

SUNDAY, SEPTEMBER 22nd.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY.—Winnowing in the morning, afternoon in the study.

TUESDAY AND WEDNESDAY.—Winnowing, painting. Bought five canoes firewood, visited the sick in the village, etc.

THURSDAY, FRIDAY, SATURDAY.—Employed in my study, preparing for the Sabbath and learning native language.

SUNDAY.—Went to Rangie Hoo to preach, and administered the Holy Sacrament. ——— came in after the service was begun, and stopped to receive the holy ordinance. I trembled in every limb to see him approach the table, while being in open and avowed sin, and in other respects going on in a scandalous manner. Had I been in England, I would not have administered it to him, but circumstanced as I was, I judged it best to do so, lest he should use lip against me there and then. It appeared he had some very wicked design in his heart, as he went away, and began talking with the natives,

telling him that I did not do right by giving him the Sacrament, as I knew his heart was bad towards me. He then told them that I was a bad man for coming to Rangie Hoo to preach, as he did not send for me, and I had no business there. He next went and told my natives that he would break my boat to pieces if I came there again, together with other threatening language. In short, ——— has been a desperate character, but what his end will be in this life I know not, but one thing I know, that without repentance he will perish everlastingly. Slept at Mr. Hall's in the evening, and returned home on Monday morning. Rev. Mr. Leigh accompanied me on a visit to K.K.

TUESDAY.—Gardening.

WEDNESDAY.—Rev. Mr. Leigh, Mr. Shepherd, and self went to see the forest of timber called Kai-ka-ta-oh Roah (Kahikatea Roa).

THURSDAY.—Employed in the study, and among my natives.

FRIDAY.—Accompanied Rev. Mr. Leigh to Rangie Hoo to bring Mrs. Leigh to my house for a few days. Returned in the evening; arrived about seven o'clock.

SATURDAY.—In my study the whole day preparing for the Sabbath.

SUNDAY, OCTOBER 6th. — Divine Service, M. & E. Administered the H.S.. Rev. Mr. Leigh preached in the afternoon, and I trust this Sabbath was a time of refreshing from the Lord of us all.

MONDAY, 7th.—Mr. Wm. Hall, Mr. King arrived about eleven o'clock, and we assembled together and proceeded to hold the quarterly committee at my house. The brethren dined with me.

TUESDAY.—The quarterly committee resumed their business at nine in the morning, and concluded at two. I hope we endeavoured to keep our great object in view, viz., the glory of God and the salvation of the heathen.

We all dined together at Mr. Shepherd's, and drank tea at Mr. Kemp's, and spent the evening in prayer and praise. It put me in mind of infant church in the Apostles' days: "And they continue daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart, praising God and having favour with all the people."

WEDNESDAY, 9th.—According to the determination of the committee last quarter, we all started into the bush this morning, to kill a bull which was considered dangerous. We succeeded, and brought home the beef in the evening, and divided it among the families of both settlements. All the brethren, and Mrs. Kemp, and Mrs. Shepherd, dined at our house, etc.

THURSDAY, 10th.—Mr. Wm. Hall, Mr. King, Mr. Cowell, Mr. and Mrs. Leigh returned to Rangihoo. In the afternoon I went to Rangie Tarri, a small wood about three miles distant, to seek for bonds to tie up fencing.

11th, 12th.—Employed in study.

13th.—Divine Service, M. & E.

MONDAY AND TUESDAY.—Threshing and winnowing.

WEDNESDAY AND THURSDAY.—Gardening, etc.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—Study.

SUNDAY, OCTOBER 20th.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY. — Burning fern, and making a road to the kitchen.

TUESDAY.—Studying the native language.

SATURDAY.—Preparing for the Sabbath.

SUNDAY, OCTOBER 27th.—Preached at Rangie Hoo this morning and evening, and administered the Holy Sacrament; returned to Kiddee Kiddee in the evening.

MONDAY, 28th.—This morning I set off for the timber ground with my natives, and a canoe beside, which I hired for the journey. I proceeded to Tipoonah to take with me Mr. Hansen, having engaged him to assist me in this heavy job. We made all speed from Tipoonah, and arrived at the timber ground at about eight in the evening. I saw a chief who had some timber to dispose of, and promised to purchase in the morning. We then made some tea, got our supper, and offered up our prayers and praise, moored off our boat a short distance from land and lay down in it to rest. As our beds were rather hard, we did not sleep much. At four in the morning we rose, and after some little refreshment and prayer proceeded to barter for timber. In the course of the day, I bought at different places fifty-four logs, and we got them all into the water, and rafted into two lots, one for the canoe

and one for the boat. Evening drew on and we proceeded down the river with the tide in order to reach the entrance into the bay, to be ready to start across early in the morning, but before we could reach the place we proposed to stop at, it came on to thunder and lighten and rain very much, and the wind being against us. However, we reached the spot by great exertion. It continued to rain very hard for some time, and we got our boat sail to shelter us, and sat under a tree by the water side until the storm was over. Between nine and ten in the evening, the weather cleared up, and we attempted our journey, say ten miles, to cross the bay; but we had not proceeded above two miles when it began to rain and came over very dark, and in about a quarter of an hour the rain came on exceeding heavy with lightning and thunder. We had a good anchor in the boat, made it fast to the tow-rope, and was obliged to leave it and get to the shore as fast as we could. When we landed we were in a poor plight, being drenched with rain, which continued to fall, and having no fire or shelter. We therefore put to sea with our boat, and crossed the mouth of another river about half a mile wide. When we landed we found some slaves belonging to Tikoki, and entered one of the huts and sat down with them until daylight. Being very weary I went to sleep as I sat on the ground by the fireside to dry my clothes. I awoke in about two hours, but I was so stiff I could scarce move. The sun arose very clear and the morning very favourable; we determined to try our best to get across the bay. On returning to the spot where we left the timber we were glad to find it all safe, but had dragged the anchor some distance. We laboured hard from six to nine o'clock and got about three miles, when the wind came on to blow directly in our teeth. I then hired a canoe to assist us, but as it was badly manned, they could render us no assistance. We were again forced to drop anchor.

The "Vansittart," whaler, was lying in Kororarika Harbour, about four miles from us. I determined to go to her and obtain a whaleboat if possible, to assist us. But here I was disappointed, as two boats were gone to the settlements. However, I obtained two hands, and I returned. At this time there was a great sea going. When we reached the spot where we left the timber, we found the raft broken and the greater part gone, only a few logs hanging to the anchor; we took these and fell back immediately behind an island for shelter. We had not been long here ere our canoe came to us bringing the news that they had lost their whole raft and

had been near upset, as their canoe was several times nearly filled with water. In this distress I scarcely knew what to do. The day was fine, the wind blowing strong, a great sea on, the tide going out against the wind, and our timber floating out upon the waves miles from us in several directions. Everyone being completely fatigued, it was thought best to get some refreshment before any further attempt was made to collect it. At this time I felt such a cold come upon me, and my throat felt so sore I could scarcely swallow my food. I began to think I should be obliged to make for home, and leave it altogether. Some set to work, some to make a shed with boughs and the boat sail for the night. After all this was done, the evening drawing on, the wind ceased, and it was proposed we should collect as much as we could; accordingly the boat and two canoes well-manned set off, but I was so unwell as to be obliged to wrap myself up in the best manner I could, and lay down in the hut. The natives that were left with me to cook and to fasten and take care of the timber as it was brought in, made everything as comfortable for me as our situation would admit. After a strong pot of tea, I fell asleep, and slept very soundly for several hours, and blessed be the Lord, He was better to me than my fears.

In the morning I found myself better. The boat and canoes collected upwards of thirty logs, and brought them to the island before midnight. The men rested a few hours, and set off again at daylight. One canoe returned with four logs before breakfast. After breakfast I set off with a party in the canoe, and succeeded in bringing in three logs before dinner, the boat also returned with five logs. We got our dinner and proceeded once more, and it came to pass that about nine in the evening we had got together and rafted fifty-one out of fifty-four. This evening was very fine, the wind had ceased, and the sea was down. I determined therefore to set out immediately, but the natives were not willing, saying they were tired—this I well knew; but I was fearful lest the wind should rise in the morning, which is very often the case at this time of the year in New Zealand; and therefore begged of them to cheer up their spirits and make a start. They replied, "We are not able to pull any more until we have had a rest."

As I had three Europeans, viz., two sailors from the ship and Mr. Hansen, and my own natives willing, I unmoored both rafts, took that which belonged to the canoe, and placed it at a small distance from the island in a proper direction,

and we got our things into the boat, took our own raft in tow, and started. The other natives seeing this they jumped up, ran into their canoe, and came after us immediately. We continued rowing until next morning eight o'clock, by which time there was not a man that was scarcely able to lift up his arm. We therefore let go our anchor and went on shore and got some refreshments, and laid down on the beach until the return of the tide. After five hours had elapsed, we again started, and by great exertion reached Kiddee Kiddee about seven in the evening, thankful for all mercies, but most completely fatigued.

SATURDAY.—Very poorly, heavy cold and good deal of fever. Paid the natives for their journey. They complained very much of sore hands and limbs. I told them they must rest for two or three days to refresh themselves, etc.

SUNDAY, NOVEMBER 3rd.—Performed Divine Service, morning and evening, and administered the Holy Sacrament, but with some difficulty.

MONDAY. — Through mercy, much better. Enabled to assist and superintend the landing of the timber. At the request of Rev. Mr. Kendall, the brethren of Te Kiddee Kiddee and myself set off for Rangie Hoo to hold a special committee concerning the propriety or impropriety of Mr. Kendall returning to England with his family in the "Vansittart," Capt. Hunt. The committee was held accordingly, and by some Mr. Kendall was advised to go, by some he was advised to remain until he heard from the Society. We all dined together at Mr. Hall's, drank tea with Mr. King, and spent the evening, I hope, profitably.

6th.—Held a sub-committee in the morning, and then we returned to Kiddee Kiddee.

7th.—Employed among the timber and setting the sawyers to work.

FRIDAY.—Writing and gardening.

SATURDAY.—Preparing for the Sabbath.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening. Last night my little daughter was taken very ill, and her whole frame thrown into continual motion. Sent for Mr. and Mrs. Leigh from Rangie Hoo; they came with all speed, and kindly offered to do all in their power. The case of the child became truly distressing, being agitated in every nerve, and her speech

totally gone. We were at a loss to know what medicine to administer, as none ever saw a similar case. The child had been dwindling away for some weeks, and her speech greatly defective. I looked on from day to day with anxious thoughts, administered simple things now and then, often sighing on account of my not knowing the nature of her disorder, and how to stop its progress. From the information which we gathered from books, and thinking over the case, we concluded that it arose in a great measure from worms, accompanied by high fever, but we have since thought that it came from an alarming fright occasioned by a wild cow running into the yard, when she was out of doors. We began to administer calomel and rhubarb, in five grains of the former and six of the latter, with a dose of castor oil twelve hours afterwards.

MONDAY.—Child very ill. Burnt shells for lime to make lime water. In the evening could not get her to take rhubarb. Administered calomel and castor oil as before.

TUESDAY.—The child somewhat better, but not able to speak, and in continual motion; gave her a wineglass full of lime water. Medicines as usual, as these were the only vermifuges we possessed.

WEDNESDAY.—Child a little better. Diet, barley water, gruel, chicken broth, arrowroot, etc.

THURSDAY, FRIDAY, SATURDAY. — Medicine effective; able to speak so as to be understood.

During this week I have been greatly hurt owing to a false report Capt. Hunt was endeavouring to instil into the mind of a stranger, a captain of the brig "Mercury," belonging to Jones and Riley, Port Jackson. Mr. Wm. Hall having gone to see if there were any letters on board for the Mission, he heard the whole, and was eye-witness to what passed. I took Rev. Mr. Leigh to Rangie Hoo, leaving Mrs. Leigh at our house until the child gets better; when we arrived, Mr. Wm. Hall informed me of what passed, and further that he had seen the native, who positively denied saying any such thing. I begged of him, Mr. Leigh, and Mr. King to go and see Capt. Hunt. On our arrival we found him drunk, but staggering about. We informed him of our business, having also with us the captain to whom he told the story. He said the native told him. I said, "Sir, that is false I know." He said, "It was on a former visit." Mr. Wm. Hall said he understood from him it was now. He said, "No! it was not

this time, but a former." Mr. King and Rev. Mr. Leigh said, "We believe no such thing was ever said, and you ought to be punished for propagating such falsehoods."

I was happy to find the native then in the fore part of the ship. I therefore requested the captain to send him into the cabin, but ineffectively. I then went on deck to the chief officer and spoke to him, who went immediately and ordered the native on deck, who when questioned by me, and then by Mr. Hall and King, as to the truth of what the captain said, utterly denied in the presence of all, ever saying anything about me. Hunt appeared confounded, and wanted to drop the subject concerning me, when Rev. Mr. Leigh said, "Hunt! you are a bad man. Because you and Kendall are friends, you wish to make all the rest appear like him." I assured all present that if I were where redress could be obtained, I would have him in custody in a short time. Here the matter ended, and we returned.

SATURDAY, 16th.—Took Mrs. Leigh to Rangie Hoo, and brought us Mrs. King, who is very poorly on account of a fright received from the natives. They threatened to burn the house to the ground if Mr. and Mrs. King did not make peace or own Mr. ——— as a friend, while living in sin and dealing in muskets and powder. Mrs. King will remain at our house for change of air, etc, as a means of tranquillizing her mind.

NOVEMBER 17th.—Divine Service, morning and evening. After morning service we heard of a ship coming into the harbour, and Mr. F. Hall and I set off with all speed in hope of finding a medical man on board. When we arrived, we found her to be the "St. Michael," from Tongataboo, Capt. Beveridge, no doctor. This ship took Rev. Mr. Lawrey and family, and two artificers to Tongataboo. The ship left Rev. W. Lawrey and family well. The natives are said to be very friendly and well disposed towards the white people, and very eager for missionaries. Received an encouraging letter from Rev. Lawrey concerning his hopes of success at Tonga. Returned home; arrived at eleven o'clock.

MONDAY.—Gardening and general work about home. Mr. King returned home to Rangi Hoo this day.

TUESDAY.—Went to the farm to look at the wheat. My little daughter passed a very restless night. Mrs. B. and self poorly, partly from anxiety and want of regular rest.

Mr. F. Hall brought Dr. Cribben from the "Mary Hannah," a whaler, to see my little daughter. We blessed God for the arrival of the little ship, as we have now obtained medical aid.

WEDNESDAY, THURSDAY.—Attending to necessary things about the home. I have three pair of native sawyers cutting timber for a barn, who go on remarkably well, as also my other domestic servants.

FRIDAY.—Employed in the study in the morning.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY, NOVEMBER 25th, 1822.—Employed at the farm.

TUESDAY.—Preparing a foundation for a barn in the morning; afternoon, took the doctor who attended my child, to his ship at Kororareka; arrived at the ship at the going down of the sun. The captain who had been at Tipponah, and just then arrived at the ship, brought intelligence of Mrs. King being very ill. The doctor consented to go immediately to see her; we accordingly set off, and arrived between ten and eleven o'clock. The doctor saw Mrs. King, and made a favourable report. Slept Mr. Wm. Hall's. We were happy to find Mrs. King somewhat better. Breakfasted at Mr. Hall's, and returned to K.K. Found Capt. Gardner, of the "Mary Hannah," and Mrs. Beveridge, wife of C.B., of ship "St. Michael," at my house on a visit to the settlement. They dined and drank tea, and returned in the evening.

I am informed by the natives of the death of another of Shunghie's relations, a chief named Watarou. He had been ill five months, during which time he was constantly fed twice a day from our house with bread and tea. I blistered him for a pain in the chest of which he complained; I also gave him aperient medicines, which seemed for a while to do him good. He was at the fight at the Thames, and there, I have no doubt, he glutted himself with human flesh and human gore, and then laid down perhaps, as is their custom at such times, on the wet ground, in the open air, whereby he caught severe cold. This brought on other things which at length terminated in death.

Two of his wives have been killed on this event; both of them were very fine women; and his head wife has since hung herself.

A child belonging to a chief named Maka (Moka?) died a few days since, but I cannot learn that any "cookies" were killed on that account.

THURSDAY.—Employed in writing native language, and looking after my sawyers. My little daughter is something better, blessed be God for it.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—In the study.

SUNDAY, DECEMBER 1st. — Divine Service, morning and evening. Administered the Holy Sacrament.

MONDAY.—Writing the whole day.

TUESDAY.—Mr. F. Hall having agreed with Capt. Beveridge, of the ship "St. Michael," for a passage to Port Jackson. We breakfasted with Mr. F. Hall, Mr. and Mrs. Kemp, and had public prayers for a blessing on the Mission, and on our departing friend, Mr. F. Hall. Afterwards we proceeded to load a canoe and the boat with goods belonging to Mr. F. Hall, and he bid adieu to Kiddee Kiddee.

The natives behaved extremely well on this occasion, and rendered every assistance. We arrived at the ship about three o'clock in the afternoon. After putting things on board, we went to the ship "Mary," Capt. Rennex, a whaler, just arrived from England. No letters, but Capt. R. informed us we might hourly expect Capt. Brind, who (he said) had letters and other things for the Mission. Mr. Shepherd and myself slept on board the "Maryanna," and Mr. F. Hall and Mr. Kemp on board the "Mary."

WEDNESDAY MORNING.—We all set off to Tippoonah for English letters, and to give our friend an opportunity of seeing the brethren and bidding them farewell. Dined at Mr. Wm. Hall's, and then we returned to the ship, offered up our evening sacrifice, recommended each other to the care and protection of our heavenly Father, and towards midnight we retired to rest.

We rose at four on Thursday, December 5th, and the command was given to weigh the anchor and be gone. We remained on board until the ship had proceeded some miles towards the heads, and then we took leave of each other and returned to the settlement. We arrived at Kiddee Kiddee between three and four o'clock in the afternoon.

FRIDAY.—At work with my natives laying the foundation of a barn, forty feet by seventeen.

SATURDAY.—Morning, at work at the barn; afternoon, in the study.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY AND TUESDAY.—Working at the barn. Have had many neighbouring chiefs to visit us during the last four or five days. Made them some small presents.

WEDNESDAY, THURSDAY, FRIDAY.—Working at the barn.

SATURDAY.—Study. My native workmen go on very well in their several employments. I have fourteen natives fed and instructed as far as I can in religion and agriculture, sowing, fencing.

DECEMBER 15th.—Divine Service, morning and evening. Remainder of week at work at the barn.

DECEMBER 19th. — We heard that Capt. Brind had arrived and anchored at Kororareka.

SATURDAY, DECEMBER 21st.—Mr. Kemp and myself started early this morning for the ship “Asp,” Capt. Brind. We arrived about noon, but were much disappointed on not receiving any letters from the Society. Mr. Brind informed me that he was at the Society house a few days before he sailed, to enquire after letters or anything else the Society might think proper to send to New Zealand. We were very sorry to find that not so much as a line had been sent by him.

MONDAY AND TUESDAY.—Working at the barn. By dint of very great exertion in exciting my natives, and working with them almost beyond my strength in the heat of the sun, and by the continual assistance of the Lord, I shall be enabled to complete it in time for the grain.

XMAS DAY.—Divine Service. Administered the Holy Sacrament. Capt. Brind and Capt. Kent came to visit the settlement, and dined at my house, and returned in the evening.

THURSDAY, DECEMBER 26th.—Began reaping of barley; natives reap pretty well, but some of them cut themselves badly in learning to use the sickle; but it is wonderful how soon their flesh heals, even when the wounds are very deep.

FRIDAY.—In the field with the reapers, cutting barley.

SATURDAY.—Chiefly in the study.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service, morning and evening.

MONDAY.—Digging potatoes and mowing oats.

WEDNESDAY, JANUARY 1st, 1823.—Mowing oats; my natives in cutting barley.

THURSDAY AND FRIDAY.—Employed in getting the oats and barley home to the barn.

SATURDAY.—In study; my natives in bringing home grain.

SUNDAY.—Set off early for Ranghie Hoo, to preach and administer the Holy Sacrament. Divine worship, morning and evening, at Mr. Hall's. Mr. and Mrs. Hall, Mr. and Mrs. King, Rev. Mr. Leigh and Mrs. Leigh, Mr. and Mrs. Hansen attended the Holy Sacrament. Slept at Mr. Hall's.

MONDAY, JANUARY 6th.—We arose early, and after breakfast and prayers for the divine blessing, Messrs. Hall, King and Cowell prepared themselves to go with me to Kiddee Kiddee to hold the quarterly committee. Rev. Mr. and Mrs. Leigh accompanied me on a visit to my house to see my little daughter, who is (bless God) now recovering very fast from her late dangerous illness; her speech is restored in a measure, and we hope it will soon be perfectly so. We arrived at Kiddee Kiddee at noon, spent the afternoon in prayer, praise, and making arrangements for committee business.

TUESDAY AND WEDNESDAY. — Held the quarterly committee, and other business.

THURSDAY. — Employed in purchasing potatoes for natives, and writing. There are at time a great quantity of natives at our settlement; my place is continually thronged with them. They are very importunate, some for one thing, some for another, we have as many of the chiefs to our table as we can, and we give as much food away besides, as we can possibly spare. In referring to my books and making as fair a calculation as I can (and I am persuaded much within bounds) that during the past year I have given seven hundred and thirty meals of victuals to natives, (the sick and the whole) besides feeding those that I constantly employ.

A large party of natives came to Kiddee Kiddee yesterday from the River Thames; the purpose of their coming is to beg for peace, and to beseech the Napuis (Ngapuhi) not to destroy them this year as they did last. One chief and relation of Enackee (Hinaki) who is dead, named Tee Toee, came to

my house, and with a lamentable voice told me that his son was taken from him and made a slave to a chief of Shukianga, named Kawaddu. The little fellow is a very interesting boy about seven years old, and he is called after my name, John Butler. This name he received at River Thames, when I was at his place. I told him I would do all in my power to redeem him. Poor creature, the tears of joy stood in his eyes at this news, saying, "Ka pai, E Tangata pai." (Very good, good man). How these poor heathen will succeed in their entreaty with the bloodhounds of this place, is hard to say; they are preparing for war at this time. I understand from Shunghie they intend to go further to the eastward and southward than ever they have been before.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—Employed in writing.

SUNDAY, JANUARY 12th.—Divine Service, morning and evening. Afternoon, Divine Service among the natives in native language and school.

MONDAY.—Reaping wheat. Natives go on well. Mr. Rewah to breakfast.

14th.—Reaping wheat.

15th.—Reaping wheat until dinner time. After dinner, set off on a journey by water to Tabooata ai, a settlement belonging to Tarrier (Tareha), to purchase potatoes, to feed natives, and to carry on general work for the Society. The distance being sixteen miles, and a strong wind against us, we did not arrive until late at night. I took Mr. Puckey, the carpenter, with me to assist in purchasing, and to take care of the tokis.

We prepared our supper, after which I collected the natives of the place together and my own. We had prayers both in New Zealand and English. The natives were very attentive, and repeated the sentences in N.Zd. correctly. Mr. Puckey and self then went into our canoe, and laid down in it to rest. Being much fatigued, we slept soundly. But about two in the morning heavy rain came on suddenly, and it awoke us, but not until we were very wet indeed, inasmuch as we were lying in it at the bottom of the canoe. We jumped up and took our wet things in our hands, and got on shore to seek for a native hut, (the rain continued to fall very heavy). Mr. Puckey found one small hut, and I another. When I got into it there was nothing but the bare ground to sit or lie upon, and being so wet myself, I began to feel very uncomfortable, but I endeavoured to content myself in two ways; first I thought

myself unworthy of all that mercy and goodness which the Lord manifested toward me, a poor breathing particle in dust; secondly, I knew there was no alternative, the howling wind, the heavy rain, and the darkness of the night forbid any amending. I therefore laid down in my wet clothes on the ground and went to sleep, and slept several hours. When I awoke I felt I cannot tell how, but very sadly to say the least.

The morning became fine and we got tea and broiled fish and potatoes for breakfast, after which I was much refreshed, but having no change of clothes, I was obliged to keep on the wet ones, and let them dry on my back. Tarrier and his people behaved exceeding kind to us, considering them as heathen. I purchased from him fifty buckets potatoes. He then wished me and Mr. Puckey to go to a settlement called Tako, lying by the sea side near Wangaroa, to see some of his friends. This we readily consented to, but being very poorly and very feverish, I was fearful I should not be able to go and return by night, as the journey would be about sixteen miles over a road almost impassable by any but those who are very strong. We set off accompanied by his son and his servant, and two of my men. We passed several villages on the way, and we were very kindly received at every place. We reached Tako about three in the afternoon, and had some conversation with several of the chiefs. This is a large village, and a good deal of cultivation carried on. The chiefs had a great many potatoes in baskets, but I did not purchase any, as they would not attempt to carry them to Mongonui (Tarrier's place), where my canoe was lying, and having no means to obtain them in any other way, I was obliged to leave them. The chiefs were very urgent for us to wait while they cooked some potatoes for us to eat. I thanked them for their kindness, but I told them we could not tarry, lest we should be in the night, and I expected rain, as the air thundered much at this time. We then set off on our way back, and through mercy we reached Mongonui at dusk, and almost ready to drop down with fatigue and faintness, having had no other refreshment than a little water during the journey; and the heat had been excessive through the day.

We got some tea, potatoes and pork, and my men, who had been mending our things, made up our beds in a native hut, consisting of mats and a fishing net. After we had eaten, I was obliged to lie down immediately, and through mercy I had a much better night's rest than I expected, and I arose in the morning much refreshed.

TARRIER had been a long time begging, and doing all in his power to (induce?) Europeans to live with him, and this being the subject of my morning's discourse with him, after breakfast I asked him to show me the place where he would ask them to dwell, that I might determine as far as I could, as to the eligibility of the spot, together with conveniences of wood and water. We then got into our canoes and crossed the bay to the place he intends for them, should he be fortunate enough to obtain any.

The situation is exceedingly well adapted for a small settlement; the soil good, and water good, and fish in abundance would swim, as it were, to the very doors of the houses. It has also one peculiar advantage, viz., TARRIER is the only chief in this place, and he has the people entirely under his subjection. It is far otherwise at Kiddee Kiddee, as we have a number of chiefs over whom Shunghie has no authority or control; here we are so situated that he would protect the white people and their property. After some further conversation, I made a present of two hoes to his head wives, and one to his son's wife, and then departed.

TARRIER is peculiarly attached to my son Samuel, and begs earnestly to have him for one, and with two others he says he should be satisfied. I purchased potatoes at several other villages as we came down the river, until my canoe was quite full. There are abundance of natives in every little bay and cove so that the missionaries would, as it were, be surrounded with little towns from one to six miles from their dwellings. Indeed, here is plenty of work for more hands than can possibly be found for many years to come. We arrived at Kide Kide at nine o'clock on Friday evening, thankful for all our mercies.

SATURDAY.—Writing and preparing for the Sabbath.

SUNDAY, 19th JANUARY.—Divine Service, morning and evening; administered the Holy Sacrament. Afternoon, school and prayers in the native language.

MONDAY, 20th.—This morning I have had the heartfelt pleasure of redeeming the little boy belonging to the chief of Mogoea, named Tee Toe, for two axes and a hoe. I was very urgent for his return with the chief who had taken him in the war. He talked about having a gun, but I told him I could not give any such thing, but I must have the child nevertheless, and I urged my name, which he had received, as well as a

father's feelings. I told him that I could not endure the thought of my child being a slave, who was called after my name. He then said he would take the above articles of trade, which were readily paid, took the boy into my house and sent for his father. On presenting his child unto him, he could scarcely speak. I cannot write his feelings, but those who are parents, and have an only son torn from their bosoms by ravages of war, and reduced to slavery for life, to have such a one redeemed by a stranger, and returned to their embrace, at a time when according to their own prospects, there was not the least reason to expect any such thing could take place—if such an unexpected deliverance would overwhelm their hearts, then let them remember that something like this was doubtless the feelings of this poor heathen.

Myself and natives reaping wheat to-day. My wheat this year is thin, on account of a bad winter, but the grain is very good. Barley and oats excellent.

TUESDAY MORNING.—In the harvest field. This morning Capt Moore, of the brig "Woodlark," came to Kiddee Kiddee to inquire if we wanted any supplies, as he had provisions to sell. Mr. Kemp being out of sugar and other stores, we agreed to purchase:—

	£	s	d
12½ cwt. Biscuits at £27	16	11	0
42 gallons of Sperm Oil at £50			
per ton	8	8	0
448lbs. Sugar at /7	13	1	4
10 gallons Vinegar at 5/-	2	10	0
2½ gallons Linseed Oil at 15/-	2	0	9
	<hr/>		
	£42	11	1

In the afternoon I went down with Capt. Moore to the brig, in order to see both weight and measure given. Evening coming on, we could not begin business until morning. I therefore drank tea with Capt. Moore, and then went on shore and spent the evening with Rev. Mr. Leigh and Mr. Wm. Hall, and slept at Mr. Hall's. In the night I had a very bad pain come in my left ankle, so that in the morning I could scarcely put my foot to the ground. I had sprained it about a week ago travelling over rocks, but did not feel any particular pain in it until now. Mr. Leigh advised me to have it dressed, but thinking it would work off I refused. After morning prayers and breakfast, Mr. Leigh accompanied me to the ship. The

canoe came from Kiddee Kiddee, and we proceeded to business immediately, and finished about two o'clock. I sent the canoe off immediately, and tarried myself behind for the bills, etc. I drew a bill in the Society's name on Rev. Samuel Marsden for the amount, say £42 11s 1d.

Business being completed, I went on shore, dined with Mr. Leigh, and spent the evening with Mr. and Mrs. Leigh, and Mr. Hall and family. After evening prayer we had some conversation on missionary business, and I desired Mr. Leigh and Mr. Hall to be so good as to give me their opinion respecting New Zealand at the present time. Mr. Leigh said he had carefully noticed what took place (generally) in the native mind since his arrival, and by reflecting on the past, and by reviewing and weighing present appearances, he was led to believe that a change had taken place in the native mind, in favour of the missionaries. Mr. Hall was in the same opinion. I then gave it as my decided opinion that it was so, and from the following circumstances:—

First.—They had ceased to annoy us about guns and powder. They sometimes ask for these, but are not troublesome when denied.

Secondly.—They are not so insolent and hostile to us as they have been.

Thirdly.—Many of the chiefs are anxious to put their children under our care.

Fourthly.—Their general readiness to hear and join in prayer in the vernacular language.

These things, with some others which might be mentioned, are, I trust, a token for good. May the Lord Jesus this glorious day spring from on high, arrive upon these poor benighted heathen, and dispel the darkness from their minds, the ignorance from their hearts, and save them with an everlasting salvation. We then retired to rest, but my foot was so painful, I scarcely had any rest. In the morning, Mr. Hall bathed it in hot water and marshmallow, and Mr. Leigh dressed it with opodeldoe and laudanum.

About noon the canoe returned from Kiddee Kiddee to bring back the bread casks to the "Woodlark." We got an early dinner at Mr. Hall's. I returned home in the canoe, found Mrs. B. and my little daughter pretty well. My foot continued very painful and much swollen.

FRIDAY, SATURDAY, SUNDAY.—My foot was in great agony; not able to perform Divine Service on Sunday.

MONDAY AND TUESDAY.—Much better; continued to bathe in opium and opodeldoe.

WEDNESDAY. — Much better, swelling down; able to walk with a stick.

THURSDAY, JANUARY 30th.—This day we finished the harvest, and we gave the poor natives what we call a harvest home. Mrs. Butler made four large plum puddings, and cooked them an excellent feast. We killed a hog on the occasion. They sat down to table, fourteen in number, after the European fashion, each with his knife and fork. I carved for them, and Mrs. Butler was waiting maid. Some of them had never had a knife and fork in their hands before, and you would have laughed to see the way in which they used them.

They behaved themselves with the greatest propriety, and expressed their thanks in the most feeling manner.

Afterwards I paid them for their labour in axes, etc., and discharged several for the present, having little food. They went away very reluctantly, and were anxious to know when they might return.

FRIDAY, JANUARY 31st.—This morning sent part of my men to gather shells for lime, others to pulling weeds, burning fern, etc.

SATURDAY.—In the study, preparing for the Sabbath.

SUNDAY.—Divine Service, M. & E. Afternoon, service and school among the natives.

MONDAY, TUESDAY AND WEDNESDAY.—Busy burning and sifting lime; got about eighty bushels. My working natives go on remarkably well. Most of the natives are gone away to war towards the East Cape of New Zealand. Shung-hie is expected to go in a few days. I have one of his little daughters in my house learning to read, sew, etc.

THURSDAY AND FRIDAY.—Writing native language. My natives at work in the garden and sawing timber. Mr. ——— came to Shung-hie's place on Saturday at Kiddee Kiddee to bring him a present consisting of a red shawl, but this I have learned since is not the principal thing intended. His intention was to poison Shung-hie's mind afresh against me in the following manner. Mr. ——— has received from Mr.

Nicholas a letter, the contents of which I do not know. Mr. ——— took occasion from it to inform Shunghie that I had been writing against him to all the friends at the Missionary House. Being informed of this by another chief who heard Shunghie say among his own people and strangers that Mr. ——— had brought him a letter which contained an account of what I had written against him, and against Mr. ———. I therefore judged it necessary to go and speak to Shunghie on the subject. I also took with me Mr. Shepherd to witness what passed. I told Shunghie I was sorry to hear that he was displeased with me, and should be glad to know what it was for. He then sat down, and began to relate his voyage to England, saying that Mr. Butler and Mr. Marsden had written to England to say to the Society, "Give Shunghie and Wykato two or three axes each, or an article of each sort of principal tools." He then told us what the Society did for him, and declared his satisfaction; next, what Mr. Mortlock did for him, and what a quantity of things Mr. Nicholas gave him, with a fine gun, saying they were good men. He then began to speak of what took place on his return, concerning the several robberies committed. He next said that I had forwarded an account of them to the Society, and had written against him and against Mr. ———, and that he was further informed that the Society was going to send a ship to take us all away in consequence thereof; and send another to redress our wrongs upon them; that Mr. Nicholas had sent this information with some presents to him and other chiefs. I told him that the Society expected that they would be kind to us, or at least not plunder or torment us.

If we went away it would be on account of this ill-usage to us; but that the Society had any intention to send a ship to fight or destroy them was very false. After some further conversation Shunghie seemed satisfied with our answer and information, and we came away. In the course of the conversation, Shunghie often spake in the highest terms of Mr. Nicholas, but very coldly of the Society. Thus, while the Society spend many hundreds in a year upon them, a single individual who makes a few trifling presents to one or two natives, is set up and thought more of than the Society itself. I do not find fault with any person for making a present to a poor native. No! by no means, but I abominate the very idea of any private letter being made a handle of to lessen the credit of the Society, or to prejudice the minds of the heathen against their servants, and that Mr. ——— should make this use of Mr. Nicholas' letter is shocking to think on. But this he has done.

SATURDAY.—In the study, preparing for the Sabbath.

SUNDAY, FEBRUARY 9th.—Divine Service, morning; afternoon, school and prayers with the natives.

MONDAY, TUESDAY AND WEDNESDAY. — White-washing and painting. There are many natives coming daily from different parts to Kiddee Kiddee to join Shunghie in his war expedition. I have some of the chiefs at my house every day, and I have been obliged to make several presents among them of axes, etc., etc.



CHAPTER VIII.

Rev. S. Marsden to Rev. J. Pratt.

PARRAMATTA,

January 15th, 1823.

Reverend and Dear Sir,

The time is now come when I should state to you my object in sending cattle to New Zealand.

My wish was that the missionaries in time should be supplied with milk, butter, cheese, and animal food, which would in a great measure render them independent of the natives for support. Their number must now be fifty or upwards, and many of them females of the best breed. I now wish to present them as a donation to the Missionary Society for the comfort and support of the missionaries, reserving two cows and one bull for the Wesleyan missionaries, for them to take with them to the station where they may settle.

I am, etc.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

Also same date.

Though there are and have been great difficulties in the Mission at New Zealand, they will diminish, and I think the worst is over. I wish Mr. Francis Hall would be prevailed upon to return, to take charge of all the stores, and to manage the secular interests of the Society. (*Yet note! Butler was sent out as Superintendent.*) He is so excellent a character, he could not be more usefully employed. Should the Rev. Mr. Williams come out, it is my intention to fix him and Mr. and Mrs. Clark with another tribe at some distance from the present missionaries. I purpose also to direct Mr. William Hall to accompany them.

Mr. Kendall and Mr. Hall will never be happy together.

I am, etc.

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

Extract from Commissioner Bigge's Report to Earl Bathurst, 27/2/1823.

. The missionaries have made some attempts to introduce cattle, but from want of care and superintendence they have been dispersed. The draught cattle that were taken from Sydney to assist in the conveyance of the wood for loading the "Dromedary," were purchased by the Rev. Mr. Marsden, and for the first time the plough was made use of in New Zealand under his direction in the year 1820.

. It would be advisable to give an express authority to the Governor of New South Wales, to appoint Magistrates as well as constables in the islands of New Zealand, and with a view to give efficiency to the Magisterial authority, it would be expedient to give salaries not exceeding £20 per annum to any two respectable persons who might be selected for filling the offices of constables.



REV. HENRY WILLIAMS (afterwards Archdeacon of Waimate).

MR. BUTLER'S JOURNAL CONTINUED, 1823.

1823.

THURSDAY, FEBRUARY 13th.—Working at the farm with my natives, burning the weeds from off the wheat lands.

FRIDAY.—Writing, etc., etc.

SATURDAY, FEBRUARY 15th.—In my study, preparing for the Sabbath.

SUNDAY. --- Divine Service in the morning; afternoon, school and prayers with my natives.

MONDAY, 17th. — Writing in the morning; afternoon, employed among my men.

TUESDAY, WEDNESDAY AND THURSDAY. — Employed chiefly in writing the native language; my men in sawing, threshing, fencing, etc., etc.

FRIDAY, 21st FEBRUARY. — Employed in my study, preparing for the Sabbath.

SATURDAY MORNING.—Employed in the study; afternoon, set off with my friend, Rev. Sam. Leigh (who had spent some days at our house) to Ranghe Hoo to preach on the morrow, and administer the Holy Sacrament.

SUNDAY, 23rd FEBRUARY.—Divine Service, morning and evening, at Mr. Wm. Hall's. Administered the Holy Sacrament to Mr. and Mrs. Hall, Mr. and Mrs. King, Mr. and Mrs. Hansen, Mr. and Mrs. Leigh; Mr. and Mrs. Cowell never attend Divine Service.

MONDAY MORNING.—I set off for Paroa, accompanied by Rev. Mr. Leigh and Mr. King, to see the bull and cow which were given to the Mission by Governor Brisbane. They look exceeding well, and I gave Tooe's brothers (Shou and Te-ranghee) one axe, and one iron pot for looking after them. We next set off for Kororarica, to the ship "Cumberland," as Mr. Leigh wanted to purchase some articles for his use from Capt. Brend here; as it was growing towards evening, it became proper for us to remain for the night. In the morning, when Mr. Leigh had finished his business, we returned to Rangehoo.

The brig "Governor Macquarie," from Port Jackson, came to an anchor off the settlement at two o'clock. She has brought goods for Mr. Leigh, but none for our Mission.

In the afternoon I returned to Kiddee Kiddee, and found my habitation in peace, tho' many prowling wolves were lurking round it.

WEDNESDAY AND THURSDAY.—Writing; my natives employed in fencing and sawing.

FRIDAY, FEBRUARY 28th, AND SATURDAY.—Writing native language, and preparing for the Sabbath.

SUNDAY, MARCH 2nd, 1823.—Divine Service; administered the Holy Sacrament.

SATURDAY, MARCH 8th.—This morning my son, Saml. Butler, and his wife arrived safely at Te Kiddee Kiddee from Port Jackson, by the brig "Endeavour," Capt. Dibbs.

During the past week I have been principally employed in writing the native language.

My natives have been employed in sawing, farming, etc., etc., and they go on exceeding well.

SUNDAY, MARCH 9th.—Divine Service. Capt. Dibb's boat crew attended Divine Service.

We have established a school at Kiddee Kiddee; Mr. Kemp and Mr. Shepherd, teachers; Rev. John Butler, Superintendent.

MONDAY, MARCH 10th.—This morning Mr. Saml. Butler went to the ship to fetch his things from the brig "Endeavour."

I have this morning received into my house a daughter of Rewah, a chief of this place; she is about seven years of age. I hope she will soon learn to read and sew.

SATURDAY, MARCH 15th.—This week I have been enabled to devote myself to the native language, and am, I hope, getting on pretty well. My natives go on in their employments exceeding well. Part of each day is allotted to religious instruction. Several of them know their letters, and can repeat several long prayers by heart, together with the Lord's Prayer, Belief, Ten Commandments, etc.; and answer many important questions in the fundamental principles of the Christian religion. We have at this time sixteen natives under our care, who are regularly fed with the bread of this life and, as far as we are able to communicate it to them, with the bread "which cometh down from heaven and giveth life unto the world."

SUNDAY, 16th.—Divine Service; morning, English; afternoon, in native language.

SATURDAY, 22nd.—This week I have been employed in much the same as last. I have commenced public prayer, a lesson and a short exhortation in the field from twelve to one o'clock. This affords a relaxation from bodily labour, and the natives being free from any interruption, pay greater attention than at any other time when called to attend to religion.

Agriculture affords me abundant metaphors, by which I am enabled to point out the blessings of the Gospel, and the importance of having their minds well instructed.

Mr. King and Rev. Mr. Leigh have paid me a visit this week.

SUNDAY, MARCH 23rd. — Divine Service. Churched Mrs. Kemp, and baptized her child—Elizabeth Kemp; sponsors: Mrs. Shepherd, and Mr. and Mrs. Kemp.

MONDAY, MARCH 24th, 1823.—This morning I set off, accompanied by my son, Saml. Butler, and Mr. King, on a journey to Pukawakawa, Puka Tawtarra (Puketotara) Wy-mattee, Taiaimai, and Omapure. The objects of our journey were, first to examine timber at Pukawakawa and Puka Tawtarra, and see how far it was practicable to get down a quantity of logs during the floods in winter.

We arrived at Pukawakawa at nine o'clock, where we met with some of the chiefs, belonging to the timber, who seemed to be very glad at our visit, and readily accompanied us to the wood, and showed us the timber. We passed thro' a part of the wood and marked a number of trees, some down and some standing, and encouraged the natives to cut them into proper lengths, and get them to the water side ready for the first flood.

I had previously spoken to one of the chiefs respecting a lodging, expecting to remain in the wood all night. On our arrival at this place we found a new rush hut erected for our accommodation.

A chief named Atowa very generously gave us a pig for our party; while others readily supplied us with potatoes, etc. Our natives killed the pig and cooked dinner, while we attended to the marking of timber, etc., etc.

After dinner we sang and prayed with them, and then proceeded on our journey to Wymattee to pay them a friendly visit, to conciliate their minds, to see their improvement in agriculture since our last visit, and to impart religious instruction to the best of our power. Two of the chiefs accompanied us from Puka Tou Tarra. At the going down of the sun we arrived at the residence of a chief named Tiarar. Here they wanted us to tarry for the night, but we thought it best to proceed to Shunghe's place and remain there.

We were much gratified on beholding a great increase of land cultivated with corn, taro, potatoes, etc., etc., at this part of Wymattee; we passed thro' several fields of Indian corn which looked remarkably well, but we were prevented taking anything more than a general survey on account of the sweet potatoes being tabooed. This being their harvest time, everyone was busily engaged, some on making houses to receive produce, and some on making baskets for the purposes of carrying it to their store houses, or presenting it for sale.

On our reaching Shunghe's place, his daughter and her husband received us in the kindest manner, and supplied us with plenty of corn and potatoes, and a very good rush hut to sleep in. We supped and had prayers and singing by moonlight; the natives were very silent and attentive. I made it known that after breakfast we should perform prayer and singing, and talk with them about our God, and His goodness to us, and likewise to them, altho' they did not know him; and that such as attended should have a fish-hook. We then retired to rest. In the morning we arose at daylight, and the natives prepared breakfast as fast as possible. Breakfast being ended, we proceeded to perform Divine Service, and to give other instruction in the best manner we could. There were many natives, and they paid every attention to what we had to say, and at the close I gave each one a fish-hook.

We then proceeded on our journey towards Taiami, and were equally pleased in passing along through a great increase of cultivation, and seeing the people busy in the harvest field.

The whole of the land between Wymattee and Taiami is very fine.

We reached Taiami about two o'clock. The natives greeted us, and immediately prepared provisions for our party.

After dinner we performed Divine Service, had some conversation with them about our religion, and the objects of

our stopping among them. This being ended, they pressed us to stop all night, but we were confined to time, and therefore proceeded to Omapere. In about an hour we arrived at a wood through which we had to pass; and a little after our entrance we were agreeably surprised to find many large plantations of Indian corn, sweet potatoes, taro, etc., and many natives living up and down in this place of solitude.

At the going down of the sun we reached the borders of this fine lake called Omapere.

We fixed upon a spot for the night, and were about erecting a shed for the night when a chief named Tokotoko, hearing of the arrival of some white people, came to invite us to his place; we went with him to his place, and he entertained us and our party with the best he had.

After supper and prayer, being weary, we retired to rest in this wilderness wood, in the midst of savages, with as much composure as if we had been in the Mission House in London. In the morning we arose early, and got our breakfast as fast as possible, as many natives kept coming from the neighbouring farms to see us. On being informed we were going to sing and pray in their language, they appeared struck at the thought of our praying and singing in the New Zealand language.

After we had collected together as many as we could, we began by singing a hymn, given out by two lines at a time; all of them listened with great attention; some joined in singing, and after the whole was over, they said it was very good, and begged us to come again to teach them how to pray. The name of the farm where we stopped is Mawe.

Having now completed the objects of our journey to this place, as far as we could, we again proceeded. The morning was lowering and very cloudy, and soon after we started it began to rain, and we had some thought of returning, but, fearing lest the swamps and creeks should be filled over with water which we had to pass, we thought it best to proceed.

Our guide missed his way in the wood through which we had to pass, and by this mistake we were detained in the wood several hours, walking through the thicket as through a river. At length, more by chance than judgment, we found our real path, and reached the upper end of Wymattee about three o'clock p.m. Here we stopped and dried our clothes, and got something to eat and drink, and then proceeded to our old

lodgings at the other end of Wymattee. Shunghe's daughter again provided us with as many potatoes, etc., as we wanted, and when we left we made a present to her and her husband of two knives, two pairs of scissors, and an axe. We had prayers as usual, and singing, and then retired to rest. Our natives arose at daylight and prepared breakfast, and after we had performed Divine Service with the natives, we set off with all haste to Kiddee Kiddee, the morrow being Good Friday. We reached my house about five in the evening, pretty well in health, and thankful to God for all His mercies.

GOOD FRIDAY. — Performed Divine Service; administered the H.S., and had services with the natives in the afternoon, and all very attentive.

On Saturday morning I set off with the Revd. Mr. Leigh to Ranghe Hoo to preach and administer the H.S. We arrived about one o'clock, and dined with Mr. Hall.

EASTER SUNDAY.—Divine Service in the morning and afternoon, and administered the H.S. I trust this was a time of refreshing from the Lord for us all.

Drank tea and spent the evening with Mr. King and family, and slept at Mr. Hall's.

MONDAY, MARCH 31st.—This morning I set off with Mr. Leigh to Odu-du, a settlement belonging to Shunghe's relations, and the place where one of his sisters is settled, and about seventy miles north from the Bay of Islands.

Shunghe, when he went away to the war, expressed his desire that the Revd. Mr. Leigh should settle at Odu-du, because it would be among his friends. Indeed, it would be dangerous in the present state of things to settle anywhere but among those that are his friends, or those that were at peace with him; for, as I have often said, he possesses no real authority, but still he possesses great influence.

The morning being fine, and having a good crew, we made great progress; passed Point Pocock at nine o'clock, and committed ourselves to the Lord on the wide ocean. A gentle breeze sprang up for our assistance, and we passed Wangaroa about two, and performed the whole distance by twelve at night, only going on shore at an island for fresh water.

It is certainly a very dangerous enterprise to go to sea in an open boat on the stormy coast of New Zealand, but the

Lord preserved us, and altho' we did not know the place within many miles, nor could any of the natives give us the least information in the night, yet heaven directed; we made a sand beach in the dark, just at the mouth of the river.

We got our things on shore, and proceeded to cook some bacon and make tea, and after our refreshment, we laid ourselves down on the sand by the fire side to rest, it being about one o'clock. We arose again between four and five and got an early breakfast, and prayer in both our own and the native language, and then proceeded up the River Odu-du. The entrance we found exceeding narrow, and not more than four feet of water; we had not gone more than half a mile ere our boat grounded, but as the tide was flowing we were soon at liberty.

We proceeded as the tide rose, nevertheless we found it a heavy task to get her up to the village during the flow of the tide. It is dry at low water, save a little stream of fresh water from the hills. The tide brings in the sand, and in some places at high water the banks thrown are not covered deeper than two feet. As we wished to get to the heads by the tide, we had only about a half an hour to stop with the natives.

Shunghe's sister met us at the bank of the river, and received us with every mark of attention.

Indeed, all the natives that we saw at this place behaved themselves toward us in the kindest manner as poor heathens. They immediately ordered potatoes to be cooked for us, but we could not stop till they were done; they therefore put three large baskets into the boat for our use. We were but just in time to reach the heads ere the tide was out. Mr. L. made some presents to the natives. We proceeded to the sandy beach we started from in the morning, and stopped to get dinner.

Had we found a good harbour, and the place otherwise suitable, Mr. Leigh intended to establish himself at Odu-du, and commence their missionary operations at this place. But it is next to an impossibility in the present state of New Zealand to form a missionary station at this place, there being no harbour for any ship to go into, and a very deep and dangerous bay, to the very bottom of which every vessel must go in order to reach the inlet to Odu-du.

After dinner, being about three o'clock in the afternoon, the wind veered two or three points, and became fair for our

return. We all stood in great need of some sovereign rest, yet having so far to go in an open boat by sea, we gladly embraced this favourable opportunity of returning. We therefore got our things into the boat as fast as possible, and set sail.

We continued sailing a good steady pace the whole night, and made the Bay of Islands about four in the morning; we were now obliged to pull down the sail and row, and we reached Kidee Kidee about eight in the morning, having completed more than eighty miles with boat without leaving our seats. When I first put my feet on the shore, I was ready to fall down, my limbs being so stiff, and my head so giddy, and this was the case with us all. But blessed be the God of all grace, He made a way for us and guided us in the dark through the mighty water, and brought us back to our habitation in peace and safety.

THURSDAY AND FRIDAY, 3rd and 4th APRIL, 1823.—Employed in writing, and looking after my native farmers.

SATURDAY.—Preparing for the Sabbath.

SUNDAY, APRIL 6th.—Divine Service, and administered the H.S. Captn. Curry, of the “Satellite,” brig of war, and Captn. ——— of the 48th, visited the settlement, and dined with me.

MONDAY, TUESDAY AND WEDNESDAY.—Employed in committee business.

Marsden—Butler. (Ex “Hocken” Collection.)

PARRAMATTA,

April 10th, 1823.

Rev. Sir,

I herewith forward to you a letter from the Church Missionary Society, written by order of the Committee in consequence of the letters you addressed to me when you were last at Port Jackson.

I beg to recall to your recollection that I reminded you to withdraw those letters, which you declined. I then recommended that if any differences did exist between us, that we should follow our Saviour's advice, and submit them to our Christian friends to settle; that I would select two upon my part, and you should select two upon your part. This proposition you also rejected; nothing would satisfy your angry feelings but the submitting these letters to the C.M. Society. I warned you of the consequences at the time, but you would not be advised. You continued under the government of such violent passions, and openly, and publicly cast such personal reflections and reproaches upon me, as compelled me to withdraw from you altogether, with a full

determination never to put it in your power to use the language to me you had done in the presence of several gentlemen, until the C.M.S. had given their opinion upon the letters you assured me you would send to them; upon this I have acted to the present time. Your conduct wounded my feelings very much as a man, and much more as a Christian minister. Had I taken the advice of my friends, I should have taken public notice of what you said to me in Mr. Campbell's office in the presence of the Rev. Mr. Williams and other gentlemen. They thought you had impeached my character very much, and was called upon to vindicate. I replied the inhabitants of this colony knew what my character was, (*And men like Macquarie, Lang and Wentworth were not above exposing it!*) and that the measures they recommended, was I to adopt them, would neither make my character better or worse in the public opinion, and on that ground, I should not give myself any trouble in the business.

I have thought it just to mention the above, to shew you I have never had the most distant wish to injure you in this colony, nor with the Society. If I had entertained such a wish, you must be aware, I could have indulged it, from the many opportunities your violent passions afforded me.

As the Committee of the C.M.S. have expressed a wish that all past differences should be buried in oblivion, I am very willing to meet their views. You have had time now to reflect upon all that is past, and I trust that you will see that you have not acted under a proper spirit, not only to me, but also to some of your colleagues. I propose to be in New Zealand in a short time, and I hope the Mission will put on a better appearance. I am very sorry that you should have subjected yourself to the severe censures which the Committee has put upon you, but you have brought it all upon yourself, and you must blame yourself alone. I hope nothing of this kind will ever happen again, but that all concerned in the Mission will be of one heart and mind, and then the blessing of God will attend the work, and the power of Satan will be weakened, and the righteous will rejoice. I lament more than any person the evils that have existed among you as a body. Your difficulties have not originated from the natives, but among yourselves. A total change must now be made, and such missionaries as will not obey the Society's directions and positive orders must be dismissed from the work, and others sought after who will submit to those who have authority over them. My great anxiety for the success of the Mission has often induced me not to take public notice of the conduct of some of the missionaries, when I am convinced I ought to have done so. I hope you will weigh all that has been stated to you with coolness, and make up your mind before my arrival in New Zealand upon that line of conduct you intend to follow in future. Pray for divine direction, and may the great Head of the Church guide you in the right way, then your peace of mind will be restored and the mouths of gainsayers will in time be stopped.

I am,

Your obedt., humble servant,

(Signed) SAMUEL MARSDEN.

Rev. J. Butler.

(The letter referred to is not traceable.)

THURSDAY, FRIDAY AND SATURDAY. — Employed in the study. My native farmers and sawyers go on exceeding well, and learn many things concerning the Christian religion by rote very fast.

SUNDAY, APRIL 13th.—Divine Service in morning for Europeans, afternoon for the natives.

SATURDAY, APRIL 19th.—This week I have been particularly busy with natives, in preparing land for wheat.

SUNDAY, APRIL 20th.—Divine Service morning, afternoon with the natives.

SATURDAY, 26th.—This week I have been very busy in the field sowing wheat, and have got in six acres of seed, in very excellent order.

My natives go on with the work exceeding well, yea, quite as well or better than can be expected of poor heathens.

It certainly would be a very gratifying sight to the Society to see and hear them in the evening, after labouring all day in the field, singing hymns and offering up the prayers to Jehovah, the true and living God, in their own language; and altho' at present they do not fully comprehend what they utter, yet it affords a pleasing prospect, and hope seems to apprehend that the day of Gospel light and salvation is near at hand. At present we victual and employ seventeen natives.

SUNDAY, APRIL 27th, 1823. — Divine Service in the morning, European; afternoon, with the natives.

SATURDAY, MAY 3rd.—This week I have been getting on with my farm; have cultivated and sown an acre and a half of oats; cultivated part of the garden; go on with my regular plan of instructing the natives, all of whom go on exceeding well. We muster between myself and my son nearly twenty to prayers and exhortation; may the Lord grant His blessing.

FRIDAY, MAY 2nd, 1823.—This morning about half past seven o'clock, Capt. Dix, of the American schooner "Cossack," came to our settlement, and the crew, having been wrecked at the heads of the Shukianga River on Sunday evening last, April 27th. From Capt. Dix I learned that the accident happened in the following manner: the vessel having been into the harbour of Shukianga for the purpose of purchasing provisions to enable them to prosecute their voyage, and having accomplished this object, the captain was anxious

to go to sea, and ventured out at low water with a light breeze which proved insufficient to carry them off the land. The returning tide, and the tremendous swell which always sets upon that shore, was more than the vessel could stand, and she went on shore stern first, with all sail set, and in about two hours she was all to pieces. The whole of them were in a most distressed state, having lost everything but what they had on, and some of them not more than half clothed. We furnished them with supplies to carry them down to Kororārica in the bay, two whalers, the "Mary Ann" and "Sarah" being at anchor there, and they intending as many as could to get on board those ships, to get away from N.Zd.

SATURDAY, MAY 3rd.—This morning I set off for Range Hoo, to be ready to perform Divine Service on the morrow; arrived safe, but a very rough passage.

SUNDAY, MAY 4th, 1823.—Performed Divine Service, morning and afternoon. Administered the H.S.; a very comfortable Sabbath. Rev. Mr. and Mrs. Leigh, Mr. and Mrs. Hall, Mr. King, Mr. and Mrs. Hansen at Sacrament. Mr. and Mrs. Cowell never attend Divine Service, nor come to the Lord's Supper, never attend prayer meetings on week days, nor even unite in public worship on Sundays, either when I am there, or when I am not. Query: Can they be disciples of the Lord Jesus X^t?

MONDAY, MAY 5th, 1823.—Returned to Kidde Kidde, and found my family all in good health.

On reaching my house, I found two distressed sailors belonging to the American schooner, "Cossack," having returned from the aforementioned whalers, not being able to get on board on account of the scarceness of provisions in those ships. They came to me to claim protection and support until they may be able to get away. The name of one is James Spencer, a native of Stafford in England, and the other a native of Otaheite, named Onaha. I have taken them in, and in the name of the Society I shall render them as comfortable as I can, until an opportunity comes of sending them away, or for them to get employment on some vessel that may come into the harbour.

TUESDAY AND WEDNESDAY, 6th and 7th MAY.—Sowing barley. My natives go on exceeding well.

THURSDAY AND FRIDAY, 8th and 9th. — Preparing land for barley.

SATURDAY MORNING.—Sowing barley; afternoon in the study.

SUNDAY, MAY 11th.—Divine Service, and administered the Holy Sacrament.

MONDAY, TUESDAY, WEDNESDAY AND THURSDAY.—Busy among my natives at the farm.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—Finished sowing. Ship “St. Michael” arrived on Friday, Capt. Beveridge, with stores for the W.M., and Mr. White for New Zealand Mission.

SUNDAY, 18th.—Divine Service in morning in English; afternoon, in New Zealand.

NEW ZEALAND,
May, 1823.

The Revd. J. Butler,

Revd. and Dear Sir,

Mrs. Leigh and I write in acknowledging the great kindness we have received from you and your dear partner and family since we have been in New Zealand, and we have no doubt but that the Lord will bless your ways.

We request that you will favour us with your company to Wangeriee, and give us all the counsel and assistance we so much need in this stage of our work in New Zealand.

I shall by the first opportunity acknowledge to the Church Missionary Committee in London, and likewise to the Wesleyan Missionary Society, your great kindness to me.

My dear partner writes with me in love to Mrs. Butler, your dear family, and yourself. Praying that every blessing may be your happy experience, and that God our Saviour may be your guide until death.

I am,

Revd. and Dear Sir,

Yours,

(Signed) SAMUEL LEIGH.

MONDAY, MAY 19th.—Having received by letter a very earnest entreaty from Rev. Mr. Leigh, requesting that I would accompany him in the ship “St. Michael,” Capt. Beveridge master, to seek out a suitable place for the establishment of a Wesleyan Mission. I therefore set out this morning for Range Hoo to assist him in getting his things on board; and this part of the business, as far as respected Range Hoo, we completed on Tuesday evening.

WEDNESDAY MORNING, MAY 21st.—Mr. Leigh, Mrs. Leigh, Mr. White, Messrs. Hall, King, Hansen, James, Luke, Captains Beveridge and Gardiner, Mrs. Beveridge and others, set off with me to Kiddi Kiddi to bid us all farewell, and to take away such things as we could furnish from our gardens for their use, as trees, garden seeds of all that we have, etc., etc., together with a cow and calf and some goats.

THURSDAY, MAY 22nd, 1823.—We all dined together at my house, and a true missionary spirit of love and harmony appeared among us. We drank tea together at Mr. Kemp's, and spent the evening in praise and thanksgivings to our God.

FRIDAY, MAY 23rd.—Our friends returned, except Mr. Leigh, who remained until Saturday. I accompanied Mrs. Leigh to Range Hoo, and on the next day Mr. Leigh came down, bringing Mrs. Butler with him. The day was very stormy, but the Lord preserved them.

SUNDAY, MAY 25th.—Divine Service at Mr. Hall's. I read prayers, Mr. White preached. I then administered the H.S. All the friends attended except Mr. and Mrs. Cowell, who have never attended Divine Service in public with their brethren since Mr. Kendall ceased.

Performed Divine Service in the afternoon; preached from Romans 8th, 32 v.

MONDAY, MAY 26th.—We embarked on board the "St. Michael;" weighed anchor at noon, and bid farewell to Range Hoo.

Wanga Ree was the place proposed, lying about seventy miles to the southward of Bay of Islands.

We had a fine breeze and made good progress, and the next morning we were at Bream Head. We observed two war canoes making toward us, and as the wind was now very light, they were soon alongside, and proved to be canoes returning from the war, and belonging to the Bay of Islands. We learned from them that several battles had been fought, and that Shunghe had destroyed four fortified places, and slain a great number of people; but that he had a very narrow escape, a musket ball having passed through his helmet cap just above his head.

We now stood into Bream Bay for the heads of Wangaree, but the wind became foul just as we arrived at Ventram, and

the tide running out, we were in danger of being driven out to sea. When the tide returned, we immediately got under weigh, worked the ship into the harbour, and came to anchor at dark, being about eight in the evening.

Samuel Butler to Rev. Josiah Pratt. (Ex "Hocken" Collection.)

KIDDEE KIDDEE,

May 27th, 1823.

Rev. Sir,

As my father is sailed in company with the Revd. Messrs Leigh and White (Wesleyan missionaries) to Wangaree, a distance of eighty miles on the coast, as they are going to form a station there, the above gentlemen wished my father to accompany them to converse with the natives, and tell them for why they are coming to reside amongst them. I wish to apologise for his not sending a letter with these minutes, according to the directions of the Society, and as there is a ship bound for England, I have thought it best to send them without, for we do not know when we shall have another opportunity.

I remain,

Your humble servant,

SAMUEL BUTLER.

WEDNESDAY MORNING, MAY 28th. — Mr. Leigh, Mr. White, Mr. Wm. Hall, Mr. Shepherd, and myself, set off in a boat to examine the harbour, and to look for a place to form the settlement. We pursued our searches until night, and were astonished to find so few natives, only a few small fishing parties here and there upon the banks were to be seen. We returned and got on board at eleven, night.

THURSDAY MORNING.—We again set off to examine the other side of the harbour, and to seek for native settlements, and a suitable situation. We rowed about from place to place till hunger called upon us to go on shore at an island to cook some food. After our refreshment we again started on farther up the harbour. We were hailed by a small canoe, soon after we left the island, which went with us, and conducted us into a small muddy creek to a small village. It was now dark, and here we took up our lodgings for the night. After supper and prayers, we lay down on the ground under an open shed to rest. About two in the morning the heavens began to thunder, and lightning to fly. We expected a heavy storm, but it passed away without much rain.

I rose up at four o'clock and made tea as soon as possible, so that we got breakfast and prayers over by daylight, and started away to look at another river where the natives informed us there was plenty of timber.

On examination we were disappointed, as we found only a small quantity of timber, and very difficult to obtain. We returned, and went up another river for several miles, and we came to native settlements belonging to a chief named Tarra. Here we stopped and got dinner, and visited the place as far as we could; we found that a good missionary station might be formed at this place at some future period, but in the present state of things it would be impracticable.

After such observation as we were enabled to make, we set off for the ship, lying about twenty miles distant in a straight course, with all speed, and as we had a fair wind, we arrived at the going down of the sun.

SATURDAY.—It was proposed that I should remain on board and prepare to preach on the Sabbath. This I consented to, and the rest started to seek the great objects of our desires. A chief named Tutai conducted them to his place, as the only one likely to answer the ends for which we came. On arrival they found the land eligible enough, with a sufficient quantity of timber near at hand, and plenty of firewood and fresh water, but very few natives. The friends took a general survey, and returned in the evening to the ship.

SUNDAY, JUNE 1st. — Divine Service on deck in the morning, and in the cabin in the evening. The Sabbath we found a day of rest, and a time of refreshing from the presence of the Lord.

MONDAY MORNING, JUNE 2nd.—Being very wet, and having sent messengers to collect as many chiefs as we could together, we had them on board, and entered into a full explanation with them as to the objects of our coming among them. There were only five principal men, viz., Tarra, Kytow, Tutai, Thoutou, Ra-i-di. They all seemed very anxious for Mr. Leigh and his colleagues to reside at Wangaree; but when we began to inquire why they had forsaken their former residences in the harbour and gone up into the country, they, with one voice, cried out, "It is on account of the wars;" and here I would observe that at one place in particular we saw the most evident marks of the truth of their statements, where the warriors had burned their villages to the ground, and as the natives said on the spot where we inquired, they were plundered of everything they had, and the warriors dragged their children about by the hair of their heads, and kicked them about on the ground like dogs.

Wangaroa, I could observe, lies on the verge of two competing powers, so that the natives are continually plundered by one party or the other, and thus they are driven to seek shelter further inland. They were nevertheless very urgent for Mr. Leigh's stopping, and promised to come and live with the white people to take care of them. This was very fair, and as much as we could presume and we believed, much more than they would (under existing circumstances) be able to perform.

A committee was called, Captain Beveridge took the chair, in order to settle what was best to be done, when after due deliberation and much thought on this important business, it was deemed most prudent not to attempt an establishment at this place under such very unfavourable appearances.

The next thing for the committee to consider was where should we go? After some conversation, Wangaroa was thought the most favourable district, about thirty miles northward of the Bay of Islands, and it was finally concluded to proceed thither as soon as possible.

TUESDAY MORNING. — Everything was made ready, the anchor weighed, and about ten we made sail down the harbour with the tide. The wind was blowing a light breeze landed from the sea, so that we had to work the ship, the pumps, and the muzzling muzzles in one place, and the ship ran on the sands and stuck fast. Every exertion was instantly made by means of anchors to get the ship over a narrow neck of sand into deep water, but failed on account of the tide leaving us.

This was a time of trial and exercise of faith and prayer. Had it come as to blow land into the harbour, the ship must have gone to pieces, but God ordered otherwise. When the tide turned every possible exertion was made, and the ship got off without damage. We were on the sand bank six hours.

WEDNESDAY, JUNE 28. — We again weighed anchor and put under sail about four p.m., and after clearing the heads, we had a fair wind all the night.

THURSDAY MORNING. — We passed Bay of Islands about nine o'clock, and arrived at the heads of Wangaroa at the point down of the wind, and cast anchor without the heads in ten fathoms, on account of wind and tide setting out of the harbour. In the course of day, the captain worked the ship into the harbour.

FRIDAY MORNING. — We rose early, and had many natives alongside at daylight, belonging to a chief named Tipparee (Te Pare); the name of this tribe is called Natepo. Tipparee, the chief, with part of his people are gone to the wars. There are two distant tribes of natives living within the heads of the harbour of Wangaroa. The one next the heads is called Netepos, as aforesaid, and the other Na-te-uru-urus. The former are under Tipparee, and the latter under George, Tippuhi and Uru Uru (Te Ara, Te Puhī, Huru Huru), three brothers; these men were the principals concerned in the destruction of the “Boyd.”

A boat was manned for us, and we proceeded up the harbour to George's place. We saw George and his brothers, and informed them of our business. They all seemed much pleased, and George accompanied us to the ship.

In the course of the evening, we had a great deal of conversation with George about missionary work, and the preservation of missionaries, and he promised that if Mr. Leigh would go and live with him and his brothers, they would protect the missionaries, and their hearts would be very glad. At length it was therefore determined to settle with them.

SATURDAY, JUNE 7th.—This morning we went to examine the bays belonging to Tipparee, and in the course of our morning's excursion we saw eighteen villages and plenty of natives. There is a wide field within this harbour for missionary operations.

SUNDAY, JUNE 8th.—Divine Service in the cabin, on account of the rain. Mr. Leigh preached in the morning, Mr. Butler in the evening. Much wind and rain the whole day.

MONDAY.—More moderate, and a boat's crew went on shore to cut handles for axes, hoes, etc., etc.

TUESDAY MORNING.—Mr. Leigh's boat was manned, and we started for George's place to commence operations. We landed on the spot where the “Dromedary” put her spars into the water; several canoes arrived from the ship laden with boards, and we proceeded to make a little shelter, as the rain fell very fast. This being done, Mr. Leigh and myself returned to the ship completely soaked with rain; the other Europeans remained on shore in the hut. In the evening we endeavoured to arrange our plans in the best manner to carry on the work. Mr. Beveridge kindly offered the assistance of his carpenter, and it was proposed that with his assistance

and such natives as I might be enabled to hire, I should undertake the building of a log house, thirty feet by fifteen, and thatch it with flags; Mr. Leigh and Mr. Shepherd to attend the landing of stores, Mr. Wm. Hall and Mr. White to the erection of a tent which Mr. Leigh brought with him.

Matters being thus settled, everyone attended to his particular branch of duty. The carpenter belonging to the ship and myself, with a gang of natives, went into the nearest wood, and there we felled such timber as was suitable for our purpose, and framed the building by the side thereof, just on the spot, according to the natives' information, where the "Boyd's" people were killed and eaten. To think that, but a few years before, these very men killed and ate our countrymen, and that now we were erecting a house on the same spot, in order to preach the Gospel to these very murderers, in hope that their guilty stains might be washed away in the precious fountain of Christ's blood. Methought, surely this is the Lord's ordering; certainly this is a God-like act, thus to return them good for evil. If a Christian's breast ever glowed with true benevolence, it must be, methought, at such a sight, and at such a recollection. We continued our work until Saturday night, when some returned to the ship to spend the Sabbath, and others performed Divine Service on shore.

On Monday morning, June 16th, 1823, we set off early, and went to our work; and in the course of the week we got our house away to the settlement, all the frame up, sides and ends logged, the fronts weather-boarded, and one course of thatch upon the building. The tent was finished, and all the stores landed and housed.

SATURDAY.—Mrs. Leigh came to her new habitation, accompanied by Mrs. Shepherd and Mrs. Beveridge and the captain.

SUNDAY, JUNE 22nd.—We all spent the Sabbath on shore, and humbly implored a divine blessing on the undertakings. I preached in the morning, Mr. Leigh in the evening; our hearts rejoiced in the Lord, though our bodies were much fatigued.

MONDAY, JUNE 23rd.—The natives were paid for their labour, and it is but right to say they behaved themselves exceeding well through the whole business.

Having been a month from home, and having had the pleasure to see our dear friends safely housed, I determined to return on the morrow to Kiddi Kiddi.

TUESDAY MORNING, JUNE 24th.—After prayer, etc., I bade farewell to our much loved and respected friends.

The morning was rainy, and from the late falls, the river which I had to pass, and the woods and swamps I had to go through, rendered my journey a very difficult as well as a dangerous undertaking, but by the assistance of the natives, and the mercy of a gracious God, I reached my home in safety at seven o'clock in the evening, and found my family all in good health. After some refreshment, we offered up our sacrifice to prayer and praise, to an adorable God and Saviour Who is the strength and support of His people, and Who preserveth the going out and the coming in of His servants for ever and ever.

WEDNESDAY, JUNE 25th. — This morning, from my late fatigues and the wet to which I was exposed, I could scarcely move my limbs, but feel pretty well in health, tho' in much pain. Spent the day in retirement.

THURSDAY, JUNE 26th. — In the morning employed among my natives, afternoon in the study.

SATURDAY, JUNE 28th, 1823.—Employed in the study, preparing for the Sabbath. The natives whom I employ have gone on very well during my absence.

SATURDAY EVENING.—Taken suddenly ill with a pain in the bowels, which lasted until Sunday, ten o'clock, when I began to get easier. About an hour after I was taken with pain, I began to vomit and purge violently, so that in the morning I was greatly exhausted, and not able to get up through the day to perform Divine Service.

MONDAY, JUNE 30th.—Having, through mercy, received comfortable sleep during the night, I felt much refreshed.

Enabled to christen Mr. Hansen's child. I had purposed to go to Tipponah and christen it on the Sabbath, but as I was not able, he brought it to Te Kiddi Kiddi for that purpose. Capt. Brend came with Mr. Hansen's family to be sponsor, and the child was christened Wm. Brend Hansen.

TUESDAY.—Employed in my study.

WEDNESDAY.—Employed with my natives in fencing.

THURSDAY, JULY 3rd, 1823. — Went on board the “Asp” to purchase a few things; returned on Friday.

SATURDAY, JULY 5th.—Employed about garden fence, and in the study.

SUNDAY, JULY 6th, 1823.—Divine Service in the morning in English. Administered the H.S. Afternoon, in native language.

MONDAY, JULY 7th.—Employed about fencing, etc., etc.

July 7th, 1823.

To the Committee,

Mr. Butler reported that during the first two months of the last quarter, he had been employed at the farm with his natives in preparing land, and sowing wheat, barley, and oats. At the earnest request of Rev. Mr. Leigh, he has spent the last month with him and Revd. Mr. White in assisting them to establish a Wesleyan Mission at Wanga Roa.

The place first proposed for them to settle was Wangaree, seventy miles southward of the Bay of Islands, but on inspection it was not found eligible, or practicable, to settle there at present, on account of the wars; the ship therefore returned to Wangaroa, thirty miles northward of the Bay of Islands, where the Mission is now established.

Mr. Butler also reported that on the 2nd May last, about seven in the morning, Capt. Dix, of the American schooner “Cossack,” and the crew came to our settlement, having been shipwrecked near the heads of the River Shukiangia on Sunday evening, April 27th, ult., and lost all they had on board.

After some refreshment, the whole party set off for Kororareka to see what assistance they could obtain from two whalers then lying in the harbour. Mr. Butler further added that many of the distressed crew were not able to get on board those ships, and therefore they were obliged to live on shore among the natives; but that two of them returned to Kiddi Kiddi on Monday, May 5th, to his house, to obtain relief and protection until they might be able to get away. Mr. Butler then stated that he had taken them into his house in the name of the H.C.M.S., upon whose bounty they will depend until an opportunity for them to go away. The name of the one is Honanahi, a Tahitian, the other, James Spencer, a native of Stafford in England. The Tahitian remained at Mr. Butler's until June 14th, 1823, when he left to get a ship at Kororareka. James Spencer is still with me; labours hard, and conducts himself in other respects with propriety.

Mr. Butler also reported that he had employed and instructed twelve natives during the last three months; that he had sowed seven acres of wheat, and five of oats and barley; and that the natives behaved themselves well, and done more than might be expected from them, as poor heathen.

The trade expended by Mr. Butler for the last three months for food, wages, for timber, in gifts to chiefs, work, etc., is as under:—

Thirty-four F axes, eighteen B axes, two spades, twenty-nine hoes, nine adzes, two iron pots, twenty-seven pairs of scissors, eight hundred and forty-five fish-hooks, twenty-one frocks and trousers, three bags rice, eighteen knives, seven bls. soap.

THE ORIGINAL IS IN THE POSSESSION OF THE "HOCKEN" LIBRARY.

Rev. W. White to Rev. J. Butler.

WHANGAROA,
July 13th, 1823.

My Dear Brother and Friend,

I cannot neglect the present opportunity of writing you, without exposing myself to the cutting reflection of appearing to slight the great kindness which you manifested in leaving your family and home to accompany us to some place where we might fix our residence and set up our standard in the name of the Lord, and in exposing yourself to all the wet and cold, and plodding in the dirt, in erecting a house in which we might screen ourselves from the inclemency of the weather. I shall ever retain a grateful sense of your kindness, and should an opportunity offer, most readily return it. We felt your absence, but the Lord has been with us to protect and bless us.

You will learn by the bearer of this, that Mr. Leigh has been very ill—is a little better, but very poorly. I have been working very hard since you left us, and am surprised that I am as I am, having been exposed almost every day to the wet, and with exertion bathed in perspiration. We have got into your house, and are very comfortable. I have put a chimney up at the west end in the back side, and a window in the front. Mr. and Mrs. Leigh live in the lower room, Mr. and Mrs. Shepherd in the west end upstairs, and having got almost everything from the tent, we hope to have it down in a few days. We have been surprised at not hearing from you. And I have been much disappointed at not seeing Saml., but hope that nothing has happened to you to cause this disappointment. It affords me some pleasure that I perceive in myself a capability of learning the language, and hope ere long, to be able to tell the wretched creatures by whom we are surrounded that Christ died for them, and to invite them to partake of the blessings of His saving grace. This is our errand to New Zealand, and this being our object, till some advances be made towards its accomplishment, I shall feel discouraged and cast down. I hope the Lord will bless you and your family, and make you a blessing. I begin to feel my ability in shooting. It would appear strange to some people for a missionary to make a boast of this; but in New Zealand it is necessary and profitable. Having laboured very hard the former part of last week, for a change, and by way of recreation, I went out on Friday to shoot pigeons—shot ten and two ducks, which will supply us with fresh meat for three or four days. This is profitable as well as necessary, as pigs are difficult to get without muskets and powder.

When I tell you it is now late, and I am tired and sleepy, you will excuse this scrawl. Please to make my kind respects to Mrs. B., Mr. and Mrs. Samuel, and Hannah. I shall expect all the news you can

give me by return of the bearer, and none will be pleasing than to hear of your prosperity and happiness in the work of the Lord.

I am, my dear brother,

Your affectionate fellow-labourer in the vineyard of the Lord,

W. WHITE.

Answered July 15th, 1823.

WANGAROE,

July 14th, 1823.

You will excuse a long letter, as I am very unwell, and have been ever since you left us. Have had great pain all over my body, and am very weak for a long time past. I have not had such affliction of all my members; nevertheless the Lord is good; all is in His mercy and love; blessed be His holy name. Mr. Shepherd will give you all the information. I could send you a long epistle. We shall be glad to hear from you. We have been expecting some person from Kiddee Kiddee for some time past. We hope you are all well, but I have my fears about you.

Mrs. Leigh is in good health, and all the others with us. Mrs. L. sends her very kind respects to your dear partner. I write with her own kind remembrance to Mr. and Mrs. Samuel, and to all of you, not forgetful of your dear daughter. That every blessing be with you and your all, is my, Dear Sir, very fervent prayer.

(Signed) SAMUEL LEIGH.

To the Rev. John Butler.

The remaining part of the week I have been busy in fencing and gardening.

SUNDAY, JULY 13th.—Divine Service in the morning in English; afternoon in New Zealand.

MONDAY, JULY 14th.—Employed in the garden with my natives. In the evening Mr. Shepherd came from Wangaroa, bringing letters from Mr. Leigh and Mr. White. Mr. Leigh was very poorly.

TUESDAY, JULY 15th.—Writing to Wangaroa to the Wesleyan missionaries.

WEDNESDAY.—Gardening, etc.

THURSDAY.—Winnowing oats and barley.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—As much rain has been falling since Wednesday night, I have been employed in getting timber down the river.

SUNDAY, 20th JULY.—This morning I set off to Rangi Hoo to preach and administer the Holy Sacrament; found all the families in good health, and I trust we all got good to our souls on this day. Slept at Mr. Hall's.

MONDAY, JULY 21st. — This morning a native chief named Tooi, belonging to Rangi Hoo, came from Wangaroa, bringing news that the natives of that place had behaved ill to Mr. Leigh and his people, and that he had been there to bring away Mr. Shepherd on account of his having left the place of his former appointment without any reason. He said that where anyone is appointed to settle, after the agreement is made such a person should not go to another tribe without leave of the tribe with whom he dwelt, or some other reasonable cause.

We (Mr. Hall, Mr. King, Mr. Kendall), told him we were all satisfied with what he said, and informed him that Mr. Sd. went away of his own accord, and that we knew nothing of the matter.

At noon, we set off for Te Kiddi Kiddi, brought home a log of timber, and arrived at four p.m. Found all well.

TUESDAY, JULY 22nd. — Transplanting and pruning vines.

WEDNESDAY, JULY 23rd. — Fencing and gardening, and getting timber out of the water.

THURSDAY, JULY 24th.—Very wet, not able to do much out of doors.

FRIDAY, JULY 25th. — Morning employed in getting timber down the river, etc., etc. Afternoon, the flood arose to an alarming height, took away all my stock-yard fence, and swam away everything that was in it: pig trough, dung, boards, slabs, scantling, etc., etc. The natives wrought well, and saved, at the risk of their lives, many boards and other timber.

Mr. Saml. Butler, James Spenceer, and crew of natives took the whaleboat and went down the salt water river to save as many boards and as much timber as possible; in coming back the rapid current caught the bow of the boat, and she immediately upset. One native, with great difficulty, reached the nearest shore through the current, and with all speed came to Kiddi Kiddi to tell us the melancholy news, fully expecting



REV. NATHANIEL TURNER.



REV. J. HOBBS.

that all the rest must inevitably be lost. But God Who is rich in mercy ordered otherwise. They all stuck or hung to the boat until she got out of the river into the harbour, which was more than a mile from the place where she upset, the boat every now and then turning over and over, whelming them below. James Spencer now lost his hold of the boat, but held fast to two oars which yet remained; he made for shore, and reached it almost exhausted; also another native reached the shore, leaving Mr. Saml. Butler and two other natives still clinging to the boat, and the boat making out towards the sea.

The rain and wind increased, but as the wind blew across rather than down the river, they were thus mercifully driven into shallow water, on a sand bank connected with the shore. Perceiving that this was the only likely opportunity to save their lives, they let go their hold of the boat, and after swimming about twenty fathoms, they found bottom with their feet, and standing by and assisting each other, they all got safe to land.

They were, nevertheless, now in a deplorable situation, being naked, and exposed to all the inclemency of the weather, and several miles from home, and almost perished with cold, being so long in the water, and having so much water within them. However, the natives who live on the banks of the river, about a mile from the place where they landed, came to their assistance, gave them some mats to cover themselves, rubbed their limbs to make them warm, and then helped them to Te Kiddi Kiddi by land.

Our feelings respecting them for several hours' suspense may be better felt than expressed. But the Lord hath delivered us out of our distress, and we are the living to bless and praise His holy Name.

SATURDAY, JULY 26th, 1823.—The morning being fine, and the stream in river much abated, I ventured to go in a canoe with my natives to seek after the boat in the harbour. She was luckily driven on shore by the violence of the wind about a mile below where my son and the natives quitted her. The natives picked her up, and I gave them four axes for their trouble.

We filled our canoe with boards, posts, and fencing which we found lying up and down on the beach, and returned to Kiddi Kiddi by three in the afternoon.

The whole of the natives behaved exceeding well on the occasion, and I gave them an axe each as a remuneration.

SUNDAY, JULY 27th.—Divine Service. Offered up our humble praise and thanksgiving to Almighty God for His great mercies vouchsafed unto us. Preached from 116 Psalm, one and nine verses.

MONDAY, JULY 28th, 1823.—Putting things a little to rights, repairing the fence, etc., etc. The remainder of the week employed in repairing the kitchen and garden fence, etc.

On Saturday, August 2nd, 1823, Mr. Kendall came to see me, and bring some writings in the New Zealand language; remained until Monday morning.

SUNDAY, AUGUST 3rd.—Preached from Hebrews 12, 14. Administered the Holy Sacrament.

In the evening my natives brought in the news of a ship entering in Mongonui, at the going down of the sun.

MONDAY, AUGUST 4th, 1823.—This morning I set off to see what vessel arrived last night at Mongonui. When I arrived, I found her to be the "Brampton," Captn. Moore, with stores for the Mission, the Revd. S. Marsden, Revd. Mr. Williams and family, for our Mission; the Revd. Mr. Turner, Mrs. Turner and child, and Mr. Hobbs for the Wesleyan Mission.

All the friends were gone to Rangi Hoo, and I waited until evening before I had the pleasure of seeing them. I greatly rejoiced to meet Mr. Marsden in peace, and all the other friends in good health.

I remained all night on board. Next morning I took Mrs. Turner and Mrs. Fairburn to Rangi Hoo, and returned to the ship and conveyed Mrs. Williams and children to Kiddi Kiddi to my house, to remain until they are provided with a place to go to. Captn. Henry and Capt. Dillon are in the harbour.

WEDNESDAY, AUGUST 6th.—This morning Revd. Mr. Marsden and the friends from Rangi Hoo came to my house to hold a special committee, to read certain resolutions from the Committee in London, and other business.

We all dined together at my house, and peace and goodwill seemed to possess every heart.

In the afternoon I received letters from the brethren at Wangaroa. Their contents were pleasing, except that they contained an account of Revd. Mr. Leigh being seriously indisposed.

THE ORIGINAL IS IN THE "HOCKEN" COLLECTION.

Mr. Jas. Stack to Rev. J. Butler.

WANGAROA,

4th August, 1823.

Dear Sir,

A sense of duty and love excite my desire to write to you, in return for your kind letter by Mr. Shepherd, which I thankfully received, but not without blushing at the charitable hope you entertain of my views in coming to New Zealand. I desire your prayers to the God of all grace that I may increase in the knowledge and love of His most holy will, and be preserved through the dark vale of tears to mansions eternal in the heavens where Jesus the forerunner has gone before. The Christian, like a little bark that sails upon the ocean, often meets an adverse blast, but if the tempest roar, it cannot prevail; the Lord is nigh. His word—His eternal word—will never err. If we make shipwreck of faith, the folly is chargeable on ourselves alone. Life is a time of trial where many vices are to be eradicated, and many virtues implanted.

In the fond hour of earthly tranquillity, we are prone to fix our aims too low in copying our great Lord and Master, but when the earthly tabernacle begins to loose its hold, or when it is mouldering about its possession, no hope but that which entereth within the veil can give the spirit rest. Happy he who can, at the close of life, look back upon his well-spent day of life, whose soul is fixed upon eternal basis of unerring truth, and meets the tyrant death, disarmed of his sting. O, may you and I, dear Sir, and all who call upon our common Lord, enjoy this happy experience, that our life may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour, and that we may be made instruments in the hands of Jehovah of imparting the words of eternal life to the perishing sinners around us.

Poor Mr. Leigh has laboured for some time under severe indisposition, but all besides are well. I might mention other things to you, but as it will be told you by some of us, concerning the conduct of the natives, I thought it needless.

With my warmest desire for your present and eternal welfare, and also Mrs. Butler and family, and Mr. and Mrs. Kemp, I conclude,

Dear Sir,

Yours in the Lord,

JAS. STACK.

P.S.—Mrs. Leigh desires her and poor Mr. Leigh's love to you all; poor Mr. Leigh not being able to write himself.

THE ORIGINAL IS IN THE "HOCKEN" COLLECTION.

Mr. James Shepherd to Rev. J. Butler.

WANGAROA,

August 4th, 1823.

Rev. and Dear Sir,

We have to call upon you and all our friends to thank Him Whose tender mercies are over all His works, and Who has mercifully been pleased to vouchsafe His aid to Mrs. Shepherd when bringing into this world of sorrow another spirit.

On the 26th July, Mrs. Shepherd was safely delivered of a fine boy; he is much finer than James was. Mrs. Shepherd is in a fair way of recovery, and the children all tolerably well. I have not been very well, and now I feel ill. Our friend, Mr. Leigh, I think, will soon be delivered from a world of trouble and sorrow. He seems to get worse, his strength diminishes, and his body is decaying. He cannot write you at present on account of his illness. He, with Mrs. Leigh, desire their love to you all.

You will not fail remembering us and this Mission at the throne of grace; we always remember you. Those who live here will have the same trouble as you have had, and the same enemies to cope with, but when we consider the work is the Lord's, and His aid and blessing are promised to us if we seek them, we should take encouragement.

I have had a good deal of trouble with the natives since I left you last, on my return from Kara Kara. I found Towe with a number of canoes to take me to his place. He said I was given by Mr. Marsden as an utu (?) for Parahoko's son, who died at Parramatta, and therefore I should go back with him. I told him I could not think of doing so. He said he would oblige me. He teased me for two or three days, and then obliged me to give him all my trade, part of which was given to chiefs here, and the rest he took himself, and left his son with me to accompany me to his place, when Mrs. Shepherd shall have recovered. I shall see you at the Kara Kara soon, and hope it will be convenient for some of the brethren to accompany me to his place. I have written to Mr. Kemp on this subject, to whom I refer you. However, time will not admit for me to write at present minutely; I shall therefore be more explicit when I go to Kara Kara. You will be pleased to give our respects to Mr. Samuel and his wife, and accept the same yourselves. We hope poor little Hannah is better. James is pretty well.

Yours respectfully,

J. SHEPHERD.

P.S.—We should be glad if you could send us a cat by the return of the lads.

WANGAROA,

August 4th, 1823.

Revd. and Dear Sir,

It is with no small degree of pleasure I take up my pen to acknowledge your kind, affectionate, and very encouraging epistle by favour of Mr. Shepherd. Had it not been seen that you possessed no degree

of the attribute of foreknowledge, I should have concluded that you were aware of what was going to take place. But is it not a striking proof of our heavenly Father's watchful care over His children, that He should so frequently direct epistolatory correspondence, so as to afford the very help and advice which is needful? As Mr. Shepherd will write you by this conveyance, he will furnish you with the substance of what has transpired since his return from the Kiddee Kiddee—and as I purpose writing four letters besides this, you will excuse me entering into details, and I only add on this subject that we have already proved the New Zealanders to be all that is said of them by St. Paul in his Epistle to the Romans, Chap. 1st. Perhaps you may think that the picture is drawn in too dark colours, but when we are “without God in the world,” what are they but incarnate devils? No principle of honour, virtue or truth dwells in the New Zealander, but this, even this, is enough to discourage a person who seriously and fully believes his Bible, and trusts in his God. And we have, indeed, my dear brother and friend, been forced to feel that Jehovah alone was our safeguard and our tower. We have abundant reason to bless God, that we are now more at rest than we have been.

The storm which succeeded Mr. Shepherd's return from the Bay of Islands has now subsided, but still we daily prove that we are amongst thieves, who will rob us and then insult us. Must not a man be left unprotected in New Zealand before he can come at the real character of the people! I am sorry to inform you that brother Leigh is so unwell that he is not able to write. He and Mrs. L. desire their kindest love to you and your family.

Mrs. Shepherd was safely delivered of a fine boy on Saturday, the 26th July. She and the child are very well. Mr. Shepherd and I went out this morning to shoot some pigeons for our friends in the Bay of Islands—I shot twenty-four and other three lesser birds. Mr. S. shot ten pigeons. The reception of half a dozen kukupar will at once convince you that we have not forgotten you, neither are we starving for lack of food. You have an interest (if it is an interest) in our daily and united prayers at the throne of grace, and hope you will not cease to pray for us. We need all that we can get from God directly; and from our brethren as channels indirectly. Does not God serve man by man? And may He not serve the New Zealanders by the combined efforts of His servants?

But I must draw to a conclusion by assuring you that you, and your family, have a place in the upper room of my esteem and affection.

My kind love to Mrs. B. and your dear little daughter, who I hope is recovered from her misfortune. Praying that the presence of “Him Who dwelt in the bush” may be with you, and give you rest and peace and eternal life through Jesus Christ.

Yours affectionately,

(Signed) W. WHITE.

The Rev. J. Butler.

ORIGINAL IN THE "HOCKEN" COLLECTION.)

Rev. W. White to Rev. J. Butler.

WANGAROA,

August 6th, 1823.

My Dear Brother,

I just write a note to say that we could not get men to come to the Kiddee Kidde yesterday. We engaged two who are waiting now for this note. Very important news arrived last night, viz., that a large party were coming from the Bay of Islands against this people. I suppose we will be sufferers if they do come; likewise we heard that Mr. Marsden had arrived at the Bay of Islands.

We send you a box enclosing twelve pigeons, two tarts, and two pies. Six pigeons, one tart, and one pie are for Mr. Kemp.

All friends send their kind love to you and your family.

I am,

With affection and respect,

Yours,

W. WHITE.

To the Rev. John Butler.

THURSDAY, AUGUST 7th.—Writing the whole day.

SATURDAY, AUGUST 23rd. — From the above date I have been constantly employed in assisting to form a new Mission at Pyshe (Paihia), near Wytangi. The place belongs to a chief name De Koke, and Rangaeoua, and also in forming a settlement at Mongonui, under the direction of my son, Mr. Saml. Butler.

AUGUST 30th, 1823.—During the last week I have been chiefly employed in committee business, and other important affairs of the Mission. Poor Mr. Leigh, who is returning to Port Jackson for the good of his health by the "Brampton," Capt. Moore, is now at my house waiting for orders to go on board. We got him on shore a few days, while the vessel stops at this place, in hope of doing him good.

AUGUST 31st.—Revd. Mr. Marsden preached at my house from Acts 10th. Afternoon, prayer with the natives.

MONDAY AND TUESDAY.—At Pyhia, holding a special committee.

WEDNESDAY. — Accompanied Revd. Mr. Marsden to fall of water, to ascertain its eligibility for a water mill, and to Mongonui to visit Mr. Sm. B. On account of the heavy sea and wind, I did not reach home until midnight.

THURSDAY MORNING.—At six o'clock I took poor Mr. Leigh and his wife on board the "Brampton" for Port Jackson, and she was lying sixteen miles off, and Mr. Leigh was much fatigued when he arrived at the ship. It was my desire also to see Mr. Marsden, to speak to him, and bid adieu to him for a season.

Returned home on Friday morning much fatigued.

SATURDAY.—Went to the farm, etc., etc.

SUNDAY, SEPTEMBER 7th, 1823.—Rev. Mr. Williams preached from the 139th Psalm. Mr. Butler read prayers. Afternoon, prayers with the natives as usual.

This morning the ship "Brampton" weighed her anchor, having on board as passengers, Revd. Sm. Marsden, Rev. Saml. Leigh and wife, Revd. Thos. Kendall and family, Mr. John Cowell and family, a quantity of New Zealanders, and several ship-wrecked sailors from the American schooner "Cossack." The wind was blowing strong from the eastward, and directly into the harbour.

In working the ship, she unfortunately missed stays twice, and went on shore; and, as the wind increased, every attempt to save her became vain, and she was totally lost. But it is a great blessing to add that in this dreadful calamity no accident happened to the crew, nor were any lives lost.

MONDAY, SEPTEMBER 8th.—In my study.

TUESDAY MORNING.—Revd. Mr. Marsden and Revd. Mr. Leigh and his wife returned to Kiddi Kiddi, to remain until an opportunity offers for them to go to Sydney. Mr. and Mrs. Leigh are at my house, and Rev. Mr. Marsden at Mr. Kemp's.

As soon as they arrived and informed me of particulars, I set off, accompanied by Messrs. Kemp, Shepherd and Puckey, with three boats, to get Mr. Marsden's and Rev. Mr. Leigh's things from the wreck. The wind blew very strong, so that on our near approach we landed on an island about a mile and a half from the ship, to take a survey of the surf, which was beating against the ship.

We remained some time on the island to consult whether it would be prudent to attempt getting the things out of the ship. At length we determined to make the trial, and we happily succeeded in getting the things from the wreck, but

then we had a very heavy sea to go against in our return, and in which I had nearly been upset many times, and got a complete drenching notwithstanding. However, we arrived home about ten at night, much fatigued and very wet.

WEDNESDAY, SEPTEMBER 10th, 1823.—Spent the day at home to recruit my exhausted powers, etc., etc.

THURSDAY, 11th.—Went down to the wreck, accompanied by Revd. Saml. Marsden as far as Mutu Roa, where I left him, and proceeded by myself to the ship; gave directions about Rev. Mr. Kendall's things, Mr. Cowell's goods, got the remainder of Rev. Mr. Leigh's things, and returned to Moturoa, took in Rev. Sm. Marsden, and reached Kiddi Kiddi about seven in the evening.

The historian Strachan, in his account of the "Brampton" wreck, spends many columns on heroic description of the fortitude of Messrs. Marsden and Leigh. He describes the bare island (Moturoa), the starving ship-wrecked, and finally winds up: "Mr. Marsden and his friends (i.e., only Mr. and Mrs. Leigh) remained on the island for three days and three nights, naturally in a state of suspense. On the fourth day they were rescued," etc., etc.

Mrs. Henry Williams, who was at Keri Keri, records:—"Mr. Marsden had taken leave to return in the 'Brampton' to New South Wales. The day following, while engaged in prayers, Tom, one of the boat's crew, arrived on the scene." One of the domestic servants exclaimed, "The ship is broken to pieces (kua pakaru te kaupuke) and Mr. Marsden is come back again."

According to Williams, the captain removed from the ship everything of importance, although five or six hundred natives had at one time appeared as though they were going to be troublesome.

According to Strachan, after Marsden had been "marooned," the boat returned to the ship, and all hands left her to sail in the boat to New Zealand (the mainland); soon after they left the "Brampton," she went to pieces and disappeared.

Strachan has apparently drawn upon a very inaccurate journal. Williams did not go to the vessel.

Marsden's account is indicative of what actually took place: "I requested the captain to lend me the boat to take Mr. and Mrs. Leigh to the nearest island, being about two miles distant. The natives . . . prepared the best hut they could for our reception. I requested them to send a canoe to Rangihoua to inform Mr. and Mrs. Hall of the loss of the ship, and to bring their boat to assist in bringing the people to land. They had about five or six miles to go, through a very rough sea.

"About three o'clock, Messrs. Hall, King, and Hansen arrived in Mr. Hall's boat, and a large war canoe full of natives. They immediately proceeded to the ship. In the evening of the next day, Mr. Hall returned. He said the passengers on board had not determined what they would do, or where they would land.

"At the return of day, Tuesday, 9th, I now determined to return to Keri Keri in Mr. Hall's boat with Mr. and Mrs. Leigh, where we arrived about nine o'clock. The wreck was about twelve or fourteen miles from the settlement. We went to the station of Rev. Henry Williams."

[This is incorrect; Williams did not go to his station until 15th. Marsden went there on 26th, and Leigh and his wife stayed with Butler. Marsden's account is characteristic of his feelings towards Butler—not a word, no mention, slowly biding his chance to vent his spleen and vindictiveness, manifested in innumerable quarrels with all and sundry, across in New South Wales.]

(COPY IN THE "HOCKEN" COLLECTION.)

Rev. J. Butler to Rev. S. Marsden.

KIDDEE KIDDEE,

September 18th, 1823.

Revd. and Dear Sir,

The undermentioned is an account of trade received by me from the public store from January 1st, 1822, to September 30th, 1823, with an account of expenditure in farming, fencing, sawing, gifts at sundry times to different chiefs, timber purchased for building, journeys, boating, and other general work, etc., etc.

	Price	£	s	d
Falling Axes, 136 at 4/-	27	4	0	
Broad do. 53 at 3/-	7	19	0	
Hoes 121 at 2/6	15	2	6	
Adzes 63 at 4/-	12	12	0	
Iron Pots 29 at 3/-	4	7	0	
Knives 55 at 1/-	2	15	0	
Scissors, 116 pairs	2	18	0	
Spades 17 at 4/-	3	8	0	
Sickles 18 at 1/-	18	0		
Blankets, 2		12	0	
Chisels 3 at 1/-	3	0		
Slops 18 at 10/-	9	0	0	
Rice Bags 20	20	0	0	
Biscuits Cwt. 100	10	16	0	

£117 14 6

Fish-hooks for gifts, six thousand.

The following is a list of natives who have been under my care at different times during the last two years, and some of them have been with me much longer than that period. They have been regularly employed as before stated, fed, clothed, and instructed in the principles of the Christian religion to the best of my power. Many of the natives can say the Lord's Prayer and several others in their own language, by heart.

BOYS.

1 Taiori
 2 Torotoro
 3 Buterra
 4 Ti-wha
 5 William
 6 Peter
 7 Makuku
 8 E Kaddi
 9 Tommy
 10 Rakou
 11 E Miro
 12 Kumu Kumu
 13 A hua tu
 14 E Hamma
 15 E Wiwi
 16 Wa-puku
 17 E I wi
 18 Reede
 19 Tero patu
 20 Tywanga
 21 Murupary

EXPENDED.			
	Price	£	s d
For Timber—			
19 F Axes, 6 B Axes			
14 Hoes	6	9	0
2 Iron Pots, 18 Scissors			
2 Adzes		15	0
1 Hoe, 4 Knives, 1 F Axe	14	6	
2 Hoes		9	0
Gifts—			
12 F Axes, 2 B Axes,			
9 Hoes, 2 Iron Pots,			
3 Knives, 2 Slops, 2			
Blankets, 1 Chisel	5	8	6
12 Axes, 12 pr. Scissors			
for saving things from			
Flood	2	16	0
To Journeys, Food, Saw-			
ing, Farming and			
General Work	101	2	6

£117 14 6

22 Kutu
 23 Keepa
 24 Koro Koro
 25 E Aro Kai
 26 Tope
 27 Te Werri
 28 Wairo
 29 Kawai
 30 Maddu
 31 Hall
 32 Tongatabu
 33 Horaha
 34 Takimui
 35 Ato
 36 E Thou
 37 Pahaudu
 38 Frank (child)
 39 Epahi
 40 E Cookey
 41 Pakuda

GIRLS.

42	Awha	49	Taki-ta-ai
43	Sally	50	Betty
44	Kitty	51	Pattu
45	E a Koe	52	Paku
46	Waka	53	Hannah (the daughter
47	Jane		of Rewah the chief,
48	Pai-hi-tha (daughter of		named after my little
	Shunghie)		daughter).

In addition to the above list, we have had at our house from time to time many natives: chiefs, their wives and children—going to and fro—who have been fed at our table, and exhorted by advice to be kind to all; to whom also I have made known, as far as I am able, the great objects we have in view in living among them. We have had, besides these, the sick and afflicted to attend to, and afford such comforts as we possessed. Upon the whole, I trust we can appeal to God that we have not done the work of the Lord neglectfully, nor eaten the bread of idleness.

I hope, dear Sir, the improvements made in the settlement and among the natives at Kiddee Kiddee will meet with your entire approbation, be an encouragement to you, and a stimulus to us to greater exertion and diligence in the work of the Lord.

I remain,

Yours affectionately in the Lord, etc.,

JOHN BUTLER.

P.S.—To the Rev. Josiah Pratt.

Revd. and Dear Sir,

I hope by this succinct account of our labours, the Committee will see that we have done our utmost under existing circumstances for the salvation of the heathen, and we hope by divine grace to continue so to do.

And am, ever faithfully,

Your obedt. ser.,

JOHN BUTLER.

Rev. J. Marsden to Rev. J. Pratt.

BAY OF ISLANDS,

20th September, 1823.

Revd. and Dear Sir,

As it is probable that a letter may reach you from New Zealand before I can write to you from New South Wales, I have judged it prudent to drop you a few lines. I sailed from Port Jackson in the "Brampton," with the Revd. Mr. Williams and family, and we arrived at the Bay of Islands on Sunday, August 3rd.

Mr. Kendall consented to return with me to Port Jackson. I took a passage for him and his family in the "Brampton," and when the ship was ready, they all embarked. On Sunday, the 7th of Septem-

ber, we attempted to get out of the harbour. There was a strong gale from the east. In working out, the ship missed stays, and was driven amongst the rocks, where she was wrecked. No lives were lost, tho' our situation was very awful. This was a very distressing calamity to all. The bottom of the vessel was soon beat out; so that we had no hopes of ever returning in the "Brampton." In a few days we were all landed again with our baggage, as the vessel did not go to pieces. We met with no loss excepting the ship. The natives behaved exceedingly well, and did not take from us the smallest particle. . . . I shall send you the particulars from N.S. Wales. I had also Mr. Cowell and family on board. The whole number under my charge was sixteen Europeans and twelve natives. We have had a very anxious time.

I am, etc.,

SAML. MARSDEN.

FRIDAY, SEPTEMBER 12th. — Killing of pigs in the morning; assisting my son in the afternoon to raft his timber for Mongonui.

SATURDAY, SEPTEMBER 13th.—Cutting up four hogs in the morning, etc., etc. Afternoon, in the study preparing for the Sabbath.

SUNDAY, SEPTEMBER 14th. — Divine Service; Mr. Marsden preached; Mr. Butler read prayers. Afternoon, prayers as usual with the natives.

MONDAY, SEPTEMBER 15th.—This morning Mrs. Butler and self went down with Revd. Mr. Williams and family to Pyhea, their new station. Took part of Mr. Williams' boxes, etc., etc., with me in my boat. Returned in the evening with Mrs. Butler to Kiddi Kiddi.

TUESDAY, SEPTEMBER 16th.—Set the men on in fencing, etc.

WEDNESDAY, SEPTEMBER 17th.—Sawing up a canoe for fencing, etc., and attending the natives.

THURSDAY AND FRIDAY.—Attending to natives.

SATURDAY, SEPTEMBER 20th.—This morning Rewah, Warehou (Whareumu), Hihiotote, and many natives returned from Waikato. They have been away a long time on purpose to make peace with the people of that place. Several of them breakfasted with me, and most of them came to pay me a visit. In the afternoon I set out for Range Hoo in order to be ready to preach and administer the Holy Sacrament on Sunday.

SUNDAY, SEPTEMBER 21st. — Preached and administered the Holy Sacrament to Mr. and Mrs. Hall, Mr. and Mrs. King, Mr. Hansen and a sailor. Spent the day very comfortably.

MONDAY, 22nd SEPTEMBER. — Very wet; could not return home; writing native language.

TUESDAY, SEPTEMBER 23rd.—Morning being fine, I returned to Kiddi Kiddi.

WEDNESDAY.—Writing native language.

THURSDAY. — Gardening in the morning; afternoon, our friends, Mr. White and James Stack, arrived from Wangaroa to see Revd. Mr. Leigh.

FRIDAY.—Took Mr. Marsden to Motu Roa to see Captn. Moore, and from there to Pyeha to Mr. Williams's. Having left Mr. Marsden at Pyeha, I proceeded to Mr. Kendall's to settle some accounts. Stopped tea; bought a cask of paint of him, and then set off to the "Sisters," a whaler in the bay, to enquire if any letters; and from there to Motu Roa, where I bought some things of Captn. Moore, and again started for Kiddi Kiddi, and reached home about twelve at night.

SATURDAY.—Preparing for the Sabbath.

SUNDAY, SEPTEMBER 28th.—Divine Service in morning with the Europeans; in the afternoon with the natives.

MONDAY, SEPTEMBER 29th.—Winnowing wheat and other business.

TUESDAY, SEPTEMBER 30th.—This morning Shunghi and the remaining part of the tribe returned from the wars at Rotodua. I understand they have destroyed most of the people at that place. I forbade them to give an account of their shocking barbarities. Employed mostly among the natives in receiving visits and so forth.

WEDNESDAY, OCTOBER 1st.—Employed in writing the native language.

THURSDAY.—Went with my natives to Kai Katearoa to get a spar for a flag-staff; succeeded pretty well. Mr. Turner, from Wangaroa, overtook us on the plain, and gave me a favourable report of their station, etc. He came to see Revd. Mr. Leigh, who is residing at my house, seriously indisposed; and other business.

FRIDAY MORNING. — Writing native language; afternoon, went to the farm with Mr. Turner.

SATURDAY, OCTOBER 4th.—Employed in my study.

SUNDAY, OCTOBER 5th.—Divine Service morning and administered the H.S. Afternoon, I went to Motu Roa to preach to the ship-wrecked sailors belonging to the “Brampton;” returned in the evening.

MONDAY, OCTOBER 6th.—The brethren all came to my house to hold the quarterly committee, which lasted until Tuesday evening; some unpleasant things took place at the meeting about potatoes, and ———, the emancipated convict from New South Wales; but all ended in peace.

WEDNESDAY, OCTOBER 8th.—I went with my son to Mongonui, to examine the extent of land suitable for that settlement, and to judge as far as possible what quantity of trade it would be right, in the present state of things in New Zealand, to give for it.

THURSDAY, OCTOBER 9th.—Went round the adjoining land to examine the quality, etc., etc. Found some parts of the soil to be strong loam, and some parts of a light and gravelly nature; pretty well watered, and some small woods in the valleys. Afternoon, conversed with the natives on religious subjects, and spoke to them of the charity of the Church Missionary Society, and their kindness in sending missionaries to teach them the word of God, and in giving them clothes, tokees, etc., etc.

FRIDAY, OCTOBER 10th.—This morning Mr. Wm. Hall came to Mongonui to assist in fixing the boundaries of this station, and other business. Revd. Mr. Marsden came in the afternoon, and ordered Mr. Saml. Butler's house to be altered, in cutting off the angle and placing the room at the end; his house consists of three rooms, fourteen feet each, with a passage of six feet through the house.

Mr. Marsden returned with Mr. Hall in the evening to R. Hoo.

SATURDAY MORNING. — Employed about the settlement. In the afternoon I went to Tabooatahi, about three miles distant, to see the natives and to converse with them. I found them busy in working their ground for koomeras. I told them I was glad to see them so usefully employed, etc., etc.

I then told them that the morrow would be Sunday, a sacred day, and that they must not work, but go to Ta Tee, the missionary station, to hear prayer, singing, and preaching in New Zealand language. They replied that the seed time was almost over, and they wanted to finish planting their potatoes. I told them that Jehovah, the Atua Newee, has commanded one day in seven to be kept holy, and on that day we were to attend to religion only, and learn God's will, and pray for strength to enable us to do that which He commands for our good.

After some further conversation, I assured them that I should expect to see them over at Ta Tee in the morning, after they had got their breakfast. While I was thus engaged, a young man came over the river from the other part of the settlement on the opposite side, and wanted me to go and see a chief's wife who was dangerously ill; but, as it was near the going down of the sun, I was obliged to decline. The young man also begged very hard for some bread, tea, and sugar for the sick person, and said he would go with me to the Tee and fetch it, if I would promise to give him some. I told him that I had none there of my own, but I would plead with my son for him.

The young man went with me, and, having obtained what he went for, he returned, promising to bring a basket of potatoes on Monday as an acknowledgment.

SUNDAY, OCTOBER 12th.—Spent the early part of the morning in meditation. About ten o'clock the natives began to assemble together, and we fixed on a spot pretty well sheltered from the wind, which was very necessary, as it was blowing hard at the time: we then brought a table and the books, etc.

While things were thus preparing, I beheld the natives whom I had spoken to on the day before coming over the hills through the brushwood to church.

For the first time I now beheld them coming, some three, some four miles to church, and it made a deep and truly a lasting impression on my mind, an impression of a very encouraging nature, to diligence, constancy, and perseverance, nothing doubting but that (if the good seed of the word of life be sown) God will in His time bring home the appointed harvest.

They all behaved exceeding well, and repeated the prayers in their own language, after me, distinctly, and sang very well, being assisted by some who had some previous instruction. As they had obeyed my voice and behaved well, I gave them two fish-hooks each after service, and a missionary paper each, and endeavoured to explain something of their meaning from the figures and representations. I spake to them from the Fourth Commandment, and endeavoured to point out the benefits and blessings they might expect, as well as the necessity of keeping holy the Sabbath Day. They begged of me to come again to preach to them, which I promised to do, D.V., every other Sunday, and offered to build immediately a good rush-house for church. Is not this a token for good? —

MONDAY, OCTOBER 13th, 1823.—I intended to set off for Kiddi Kiddi this morning, but there was too much wind and sea; I therefore took my natives into the wood to cut some boat knees, as my boat is much out of repair. In the evening, about five o'clock wind abated, and I set off, and reached my house about nine o'clock in the evening.

TUESDAY AND WEDNESDAY.—Employed in writing, and looking after my natives.

THURSDAY.—Writing native language.

FRIDAY, 17th OCTOBER.—Set on two pairs of sawyers to saw for the school. Employed in sorting timber and marking out tree post holes.

SATURDAY.—Employed writing in my study.

SUNDAY, OCTOBER 19th.—Divine Service in the morning; afternoon, with the natives.

MONDAY AND TUESDAY.—At work at the school.

WEDNESDAY.—At the school in the morning. Afternoon in the woods.

THURSDAY, FRIDAY, SATURDAY. — Writing native language.

SUNDAY, OCTOBER 26th.—Divine Service in morning in English; in the afternoon, in New Zealand.

MONDAY, OCTOBER 27th.—This morning I set off for Mongonewee, accompanied by Mr. Shepherd, to pay for the estate called the Tee. Mr. Marsden sent for me as I was going away, to make known to me that ——— had been speak-

ing about my son, saying he would not lend his boat to fetch timber, and such like tales. I informed Mr. Marsden that I was quite tired of hearing such falsehoods propagated, and would in consequence leave the Mission and go home. No answer from Mr. M. Went to the Tee, and found all going well, but Tariahah was on the "Dragon," brig.

Rev. W. White to Rev. J. Butler. (In the "Hocken" Collection.)

MISSION HOUSE, WESLEYDALE,
WHANGAROA,

October 14th, 1823.

Revd. and Dear Sir,

It is now midnight, and I am very tired, and therefore cannot say much. I thank you for your kind remembrance of me, but you accuse me of neglect in your note. Did not my brother Turner tell you that his coming to the Kiddee Kiddee was not known to me till about half an hour before he came, and then I had not time to seek the dictionary in the stores? However, you shall have it by return of the messengers, accompanied by two dozen knives and forks.

At length a plan is fixed upon to spell New Zealand words. Will it answer? I fear not. However, I submit for conscience sake. I shall thank you in your next communication to furnish me with all the help you can on the subject of the N.Z. language. Ask Mr. Leigh what news.

Will you come and see us soon. I hope you will. We should be very happy to see you. Mr. and Mrs. Turner desire their kind love to you and your family. Mr. Hobbs, James and Luke (Luke Wade), the same. My kind love to Mrs. B., to Hannah, Saml. and his wife.

Accept the same to yourself from,

Your affectionate brother in Christ,

W. WHITE.

To the Rev. John Butler.

CHAPTER IX.

WHEN I arrived at the vessel, Tahrayha was gone on shore, and I returned to the Tee. Next morning I paid Tarayha for the land as follows:—five hatchets, twelve axes, eight plane irons, eight hoes, six chisels, one hundred and fifty fish-hooks.

Returned home in the evening much fatigued.

WEDNESDAY, OCTOBER 30th.—Paid the natives, and employed in writing native language.

FRIDAY, OCTOBER 31st.—Writing native language, etc. Natives employed in sawing for the school, threshing, fencing, etc., etc.

Wrote Mr. Marsden a letter concerning a seminary for New Zealand youths at Port Jackson.

SATURDAY, NOVEMBER 1st.—Took Mr. Marsden and Mrs. Leigh to Moturoa, and from thence I went to the Tee, and then to Rangee Hoo; slept Mr. Hall's, and preached from 13th Corinthians on the Sabbath morning. Administered the H.S. Churched Mrs. King. Christened Mrs. King's child—Joseph King; returned home in the evening, and had family prayer and with the natives as usual.

Rev. Mr. Marsden wrote me a letter persuading me to leave the Mission on account of Mr. Kendall, to which I consented.

MONDAY, NOVEMBER 3rd, 1823.—This morning I went down to the brig "Dragon," to examine the accommodations for my family for the voyage; I found them very bad, and a swearing, abusing captain to sail with; but we made up our minds to put up with all insults and privations, knowing that the voyage would be short.

During the remaining part of the week we were fully employed in making necessary preparations to embark. As soon as the poor natives found that I was going to leave them, they came from the distance of thirty miles to see me. They one and all asked in a tone of anxiety what I was going away for. "What have we done to you, pray tell us?"

Placed in such peculiar circumstances I could scarcely tell how to answer them. However, I endeavoured to quiet them by telling them that I hoped it would be but a little while ere I should return. I then appealed to their parental feelings by bidding them behold my little daughter, who had been ill a long time; and told them it was my desire to take her to Port Jackson for advice, hoping that her health might be restored.

They replied: "That is very good; we all love little Hannah, but then there is no need for mother and you to go; let one go and the other stop behind."

I answered, "We must both go for a little time, and then we would return."

One and another kept saying, "My heart is very bad" (grieved for you); "I shall never see you again;" "Is Mr. Kendall angry with you?" "Tell us plainly what is the matter?"

I could not answer these pointed interrogatives direct as I ought to do; for, if I had, I believe there would have been a great disturbance immediately; and the best answers I was enabled to give, by no means satisfied them; they would still have it that some of the white people wanted me away in order to have my house, farm, garden, and karradees (general stock); "But," they said in a tone of anger, "no man shall have your house, for we will burn the whole premises to the ground." This they told Mr. Marsden himself.

I begged them not to think of any such thing as that. I said, "The thought of such a thing grieves me to the heart; you must take care of it and let the missionaries live in it until my return, and then I will make you some little presents."

Shunghee also came this morning to breakfast, bringing his youngest son, putting him under my care to take him to Port Jackson. Shunghee has been very often at my house lately, to breakfast, dine, etc., and one of his little daughters has been at our house a long time, learning to read and study, and household work. I took an opportunity the other day of asking him if his heart was good towards me, and he said it was; I then asked him if he wished me to go away, and he answered, "By no means." I then asked him if Mr. Kendall was coming to live at Kiddee Kiddee; he said, "Perhaps he might, but," said he, "that will not make any difference to

you, as he will not come to live in the settlement, and he is not angry with you now." I told him I was very sorry to leave him and his people for a time, but he might expect me back shortly. He replied: "Kapi; kapi!" (Good; good.)

In the evening, Shunghee's head wife, Turekotooke, came from Te Waimattie, and as Shunghee had not consulted her upon sending away her son, she was very angry, and insisted upon Shunghee's fetching the boy away from our house; and she, continuing her vociferations and entreaties, saying he would surely die, until at length Shunghee was obliged to yield, but appeared to do it very reluctantly. He then asked for a present before I went away, and I gave him and his son a tokee each, and he bade me and Mrs. Butler farewell.

The natives are all going to Shukeeangha to perform some religious ceremony for a person who died some time ago; Shunghee informed me he should set off this evening.

Many of the chiefs and other natives continue about our house, expressing their sorrow on account of our going away, and have shown us their affection for us in every possible way. Indeed, it is a grievous trial to us to leave them at this juncture, being now prepared by the blessing of God to be permanently useful among them; I am enabled to preach to them in their own language the truth and doctrine of the blessed Gospel of Jesus; and I verily believe that if I remained, the Lord would abundantly bless my labours; (His word shall not return unto Him void). There are many pleasing hopes and prospects before me, having in my own house ten, sometimes twelve and sixteen natives who are taught to read, pray, and sing hymns in their own language; most of them can give satisfactory answers to many important questions in religion; these things appear to me like the opening buds of spring which foretell that summer is nigh.

One chief remained until the moment of our departure; they wept aloud frequently, and the old man, in token of his inward affection, insisted on my accepting a greenstone adze, one of the most valuable articles New Zealand produces, according to their estimation, and the greatest present he could make. At first I refused taking it, but at length I took it, and made him a small present in return.

The son of this chief has wrought for me in sawing timber, etc., for a length of time, and he is a clever youth. He can read his letters and repeat many prayers and hymns, and is

very desirous of improvement. He wished to go to Port Jackson with me, but durst not attempt the voyage on account of the smallness of the vessel. On giving him my hand at my departure, he sighed, and said, "Good-bye, father, me no see you again."

Can anyone read these accounts, these strong manifestations of their regard and esteem, and not say, "The fields are white already to the harvest." ? If a spark of divine grace dwells in our breasts or remains in our hearts, we must cry out in earnest prayer, "Lord, send forth labourers into Thy harvest, and let them gather these precious souls into Thy granary, O Lord!"

I have laboured exceedingly to put the settlement at Kiddee Kiddee on a permanent and firm footing; and to leave it just as I began to enter on my proper work as a missionary is too bad, as no just reason can be given for my removal. The following, however, is a copy of Mr. Marsden's letter to me on the subject of leaving. I might go on ad infinitum, but I have said sufficient.

" KIDDEE KIDDEE,

" November 1st, 1823.

" Revd. Sir,

" The Revd. J. Kendall having determined to remain in New Zealand unless I will engage to do for him and his family what is totally out of my power, I consider it absolutely necessary that you should leave Kiddee Kiddee. You cannot be ignorant what his feelings are towards you, and what influence he has gained over Shunghee's mind. Should Mr. Kendall come to reside at Kiddee Kiddee, what he told me he would do, it will be impossible for you to live near each other. The most fatal consequences will be likely to follow: " 'A prudent man foreseeth the evil and hideth himself.' I earnestly request you to take this matter into your serious consideration, and weigh every existing circumstance.

" It is a most painful and distressing thought that all the alarming evils have originated with the missionaries themselves, and that the heathen whom they came to instruct are innocent. Whatever the future consequences may be, the guilt must fall upon the heads of the Europeans. I see danger in your removal, and danger in your remaining, but the greatest, in my opinion, is in the latter.

" I am, Revd. Sir,

" Your most obedient humble servant,,

" SAML. MARSDEN."

" Rev. J. Butler."

I could make a very long animadversion on the above letter, but I forbear lest I should be thought severe.

I told Mr. Marsden that I would go down to Kendall and talk to him, but he persuaded me not, saying there was no confidence to be placed on anything he might say or promise. Therefore, with very great reluctance, we consented to come away and leave that labour and service for the good of the New Zealanders, in which we took so much delight, and in which we have very much exhausted our strength and weakened our constitution. There was one thing, however, which afforded us some consolation; that was the thought of obtaining medical assistance for our little daughter, who has been greatly afflicted for a long time.

SUNDAY, NOVEMBER 9th.—Mr. Marsden preached in the morning; Mr. Butler read prayers. Afternoon, Divine Service with the natives; a pretty good congregation, and very attentive. I spoke to them about the fall of man, and his recovery by Jesus Christ. May the Lord make this handful of seed to spring up and grow, until New Zealand becomes full of the knowledge of the Lord, and every one of them bring forth the fruits of righteousness which are by Jesus Christ to the praise and glory of God.

I must now turn to the letter written to me by the Committee in London, dated September 10th, 1822, and its consequences.

In the first place it was a gratification to Revd. Mr. Marsden to have me completely in his power; this was all he wanted, and without any reference to my diligence, duty, or usefulness, he determined to have me out of the Mission. This must be clearly manifest, because he told it on board the "Brampton," in a kind of triumph, before he came to New Zealand, that he had received orders to turn me out of the Mission.

When some of the parties came to the Kiddee Kiddee and were entertained at our place, and saw the order of our house, and the improvements made among the natives, as well as the settlement put upon a permanent footing, they remarked to me as we walked in the garden together, "What a pity it is for you, Mr. Butler, to go away." To whom I replied I had no such thought, for I was only beginning my proper missionary work. Now, if I had done anything worthy of censure, or of being turned out of the Mission, it ill became Mr. Marsden as a minister of Christ to make known this sentence to strangers and the ungodly, before I knew it myself.

As soon as I heard of the arrival of ye ship in the north harbour, I immediately set off to see what she was, fully believing, from her coming into the north harbour, she must have missionaries or stores on board, or both. When I arrived I found her to be the "Brampton," having on board Revd. Mr. Marsden, Revd. Mr. Williams and family, Mr. Fairburn and family, a carpenter, the notorious John ——— as farmer, who was formerly sent back for bad conduct; and besides these, the Rev. Mr. Turner and family, and a young man named Hobbs, belonging to the Wesleyan Mission.

After saluting the captain in the usual manner, I asked after Mr. Marsden, and was informed that he was gone to Range Hoo, to the settlement, and had taken Revd. Mr. Williams and Mr. Turner with him. Being very desirous to see him, I waited on board, and had some conversation with Mrs. Williams and Mrs. Turner, who, I found, had brought a young female each as a servant, and they asked me what I thought of it. I told them I thought they had done wrong in bringing two young girls to such a place as New Zealand, and that they would be more likely to be a continual trouble rather than an advantage to them. Mrs. Williams found my words true in a little time by bitter experience.

Towards evening Mr. Marsden and the other gentlemen returned; I made my obeisance to Mr. Marsden, and asked how he did, and how his family were, and then turned round and saluted our new friends.

After supper I asked Mr. Marsden if he had any letters for me, or stores for the settlement, as I would endeavour to make arrangements for getting them to the Kiddee Kiddee. He told me that Mr. Williams had got charge of the stores; but that he had a letter for me from the Society. Mr. Marsden then produced the letter, and I sat down in his cabin and read it over, and, as you must suppose, with very deep concern.

I then turned to Mr. Marsden and said, "Sir, all that I desire is, that the whole of my conduct may be fully investigated. With clean hands and pure motives, I have laboured more than any other missionary for the good of New Zealand; but if I have done anything worthy of death or of bonds, let me suffer both the one and the other." I said, moreover, "I may (like Paul), have many and grievous things laid to my charge, but I defy any man to prove them; and as respects my quarrel with you, sir, I am exceedingly sorry that it ever took place. The recollection has often grieved my heart, and caused

me to shed many tears, not from any untrue statements contained in my letters, but that such things should take place at all. Were the time to come over again, I would rather suffer the loss of everything I had than enter into such dispute, which has caused me so much pain ever since; and further, you know, sir, if I have fallen short of fulfilling my duty and obligations to the Society, the rest must be miserably deficient.

Mr. Marsden then informed me that he would hold a special committee on Wednesday, the 6th inst., to read certain resolutions from the Society, and other business.

I remained on board all night, and in the morning offered my services, my boat, and men, to take the missionaries on shore. As I had the most room, I offered to take into my house the Rev. Mr. Williams and family, to make them welcome and as comfortable as we could, until they should be provided for at their own station, wherever it might be.

I then conveyed such of them to Range Hoo as were going to that settlement (being about five miles off), and then returned to the ship and took Mrs. Williams and the children to my house at Kiddee Kiddee, being seven miles the other way.

On Wednesday, the day appointed for special business, all the brethren met at my house to hold the committee, and they dined with us.

After dinner, Mr. Wm. Hall took me aside into our paddock and related to me a conversation which took place between him and Mr. Marsden at Range Hoo.

Mr Marsden, having landed with the missionaries, they went to Mr. Hall's, and after some refreshment, Mr. Marsden called him down to the beach to inquire of him concerning the Mission and the missionaries. Mr. Hall informed me that the first man he inquired after was me, asking how I was going on. Mr. Hall answered, "Mr. Butler is a very zealous, and very industrious man, and a man of great exertion." "Oh," said Mr. Marsden, "I have an order to remove him and Mr. Kendall likewise."

Mr. Marsden then asked how Mr. Kemp was going on; Mr. Hall said, he believed, pretty well. "How," said he, "does Shepherd get on?" Mr. Hall replied, "He is living at Kiddee Kiddee, but he is idle and doing nothing for the general good of the Mission."

“ How does Mr. King go on? ” He replied, “ Mr. King has turned his attention lately to the instruction of the natives, etc., etc.” This is taken verbatim from Mr. Hall at Kiddee Kidee.

Mr. Hall informed me also that Mr. Marsden was very hard upon me, and spoke in severe terms. I afterwards found this to be the case, as he left no means untried to find out some fault or other against me, whereby he might lay hold of me to get me away. However, as Mr. Williams was just come, and wanted to form a new settlement, and my men and myself were much wanted to assist in the business, things went on very smoothly for some time. I rendered all the assistance in my power at the new station, belonging to Mr. Williams, and lay many nights on the cold ground. My boat and men also were constantly employed in going from place to place, and Mrs. Butler had to provide and cook for the whole, in going out and coming in; so that our house was scarcely still night or day, and Mrs. Butler was much worn down by fatigue.

After the “Brampton” was wrecked, I ventured my life to save Mr. Marsden’s and Mr. Leigh’s luggage; and Mr. Leigh who was very ill, and Mrs. Leigh returned to and remained at our house, and Mr. Marsden’s at Mr. Kemp’s, until we embarked on board the “Dragon.”

During this interval of about eight weeks, Mr. Marsden got several strange notions in his head, and for no other purpose than serving himself.

Mr. Marsden now began to take against my son, who was at this time, with his wife, doing his utmost for the good of the cause in establishing another settlement at the head of north harbour, called the Tee, belonging to a chief named Tarayha, a man of extraordinary size, as his name imports. Mr. Marsden began by finding fault with the plan of his house, which was an L house, of three fourteen feet rooms with a veranda. This plan had passed through the committee and been approved of, three rooms being quite little enough, with two pantries taken out of the veranda, for a family in New Zealand, where everything wants keeping out of sight, as well as locking up from the natives.

Mr. Marsden spoke to me, saying he would enter a protest against it to the Committee at home, if it went on on the present plan, the ground plates being then laid, and the best that ever I saw put down in New Zealand. The veranda, he

said, should be cut off. Samuel told Mr. Marsden if he would let him have the veranda, it being so comfortable in New Zealand, he would be glad to pay the additional expense. But no; it must be cut off, and this was accordingly done.

A few days after Mr. Marsden wrote me a letter saying that the plan of Samuel's house must be altered altogether, and the three rooms put in one range, and the house removed into another spot; the end room was accordingly cut off, and the whole removed to a place pointed out by Mr. Marsden, and again laid down according to his directions. Not long after he wrote me again, saying one of the front rooms must be cut off and two skillions formed at the back, one for a bedroom, and another for a kitchen.

At length Samuel got angry and grieved, and well he might; a missionary surely is not a post, he must certainly feel, and he did feel very much. Yet he said nothing to anyone but me. Is this sort of treatment according to the Gospel or mind of the blessed Jesus? and to those who have left their native land and all that an Englishman holds dear, for the great cause of Missions?

Mr. Marsden next made some observations on the expense of it; but I find it would not have cost more than £150, and the building would have been the most substantial little cottage belonging to the Society in New Zealand.

From these and many other circumstances which I could mention, I began to see Mr. Marsden's determination to get some pretext for removing Samuel as well as me. Tayrayha, the chief, and his son, Okeeda, and indeed all the natives, were particularly fond of Samuel and his wife. The young chief's wife lived in the house along with Samuel's wife, and a young girl, the daughter of another chief. They acted as servants, and were learning to sew and other household work, and their prayers in the native language, and came on very fast. Indeed, the married woman is one of the finest, quietest, and best behaved women I ever met with in New Zealand.

Samuel's rush house, which he had built to live in while his other was erecting, would have made a good school house for the natives, which was intended, it being fenced in, with a garden around it. He also had two sawpits, and two pair of native sawyers at work, besides four others employed in general work. In short, everything was going on in the most encouraging manner, and there was every prospect of success; but nothing can stand before envy and revenge.

When I informed the natives that I would come and preach to them every other Sunday in their own language and sing hymns, they said it was very good, and promised to attend, and when I gave notice on the Saturday that I would preach on the morrow—being Sunday—they came punctually in the time, some of them four miles distance; behaved exceedingly well, and wanted to begin building a rush house of any size I thought proper for a church for me to preach in. I must say I felt great encouragement, and blessed God for allowing me to witness a spirit of inquiry among these poor heathens.

And is it not wrong, exceeding wrong, with such views, with such prospects, and without any cause whatever, to give up this infant station? It puts me in mind of the passage of Holy Scripture which saith, “The children are brought to the birth, and there is not strength to bring forth.”

When I informed them that Samuel Butler was about to leave them, they seemed quite in a maze; sent for their friends immediately, and began to enquire what was the reason, and wherein they had offended?

I replied, “You have not offended in anything; you have been very kind to me and to Mr. Samuel and his wife. But he must go away for a little while, and then he will return.” They replied: “No more tiki tiki; we shall not see him again, nor you Nomadia; remain quiet, or where you are.”

They then sat down and wept aloud for a long time; and after they had given vent to their feelings, I endeavoured to console them as well as I could. This tribe had been trying to get my son amongst them for two years past; and to part with him, almost as soon as having received him, seemed a great trial to them. However, Tayrayha said, “If it must be so, now I desire that you render Mr. Samuel every assistance and not steal anything belonging to him.” This desire was strictly fulfilled, for they rendered all the assistance in their power, and did not steal anything from him. But I must drop this, lest I tire your patience, or else I could say much more on this subject.

I have already hinted that Mr. Marsden brought down again with him the notorious John —, who had been before sent back by the order of the whole committee for base conduct; and as the Revd. Mr. Williams and family were at our house, — of course came backwards and forwards to them. This certainly hurt my feelings, and my wife’s like-

wise; to have this man brought into our house who had formerly threatened to knock out our eyes, and one who lived in every sort of open wickedness—committing fornication first with one girl and then with another without shame.

I spoke to Mr. Marsden about him, and told him I thought it was wrong to bring him, as he knew (if he was not converted); he would swear, and thereby learn the natives to swear, and commit fornication among them. But in so doing, I found I was only giving offence to him. I spoke to Mr. Williams about him, who thought I was too officious, and said ——— was under his charge now, and he would look after him.

This fellow is engaged at £30 per annum and his ration, the same as a missionary, making him quite equal to my son who was secretary to the Mission, as well as performing his other engagements in the cause with anxiety and care. My son has several times expressed his dislike to be put on a level with such a character. It proved to little purpose, however, for Mr. Marsden and Mr. Williams to justify such a man; for the very night (say November 13th, 1823), that I and my family embarked on board the “Dragon,” this ——— was caught having in bed with him the carpenter’s servant girl, and Mr. Marsden was sent to witness it with his own eyes. The news was sent to me on board the next morning, with all particulars. I again spoke to Mr. Marsden, and asked him: “Sir, well, what do you think of ——— now?” “Oh,” said he, “I have given orders for him to be sent back by the first ship.” But is it not wrong to give people trouble, and put the Society to the expense of feeding and transporting such fellows backwards and forwards? These are the men who being employed bring more scandal on the Mission, the Society and the cause than all the labours and integrity of the Society’s faithful servants are able to eradicate. I have often wished that New Zealand was as near London as Madeira is, that some of its members might come over and see with their own eyes how things go on; they would then judge who does their duty, and who does not.

I must now speak about ———, the servant girl that Mr. Williams brought down with him to look after his children, etc., etc. Mrs. Williams I greatly pity; that she should be so unfortunate as to be troubled with such a servant, because I consider her an excellent woman, so far as my short acquaintance goes. This girl began to steal soon after she entered our house; the first thing that we found out was that she had

stolen some essence of peppermint, and in the following manner: she gave a small portion of it to one of our native servants, a chief's wife and relation to Shunghee. The young woman was almost distracted, and came to me with her tongue out, saying, the koateero, Mrs. Williams, had killed her. I immediately sent for the girl, and enquired what she had done; but she stiffly denied giving her anything; but, by and by, the peppermint bottle was found either on her person, or hid by her; and then she confessed her faults to her mistress; and Mrs. W. insisted on her being brought before me as a magistrate. I spoke roughly to her, and she cried, and promised to do so no more. The next thing we found out was that she had got the itch. This was a great trouble to all parties; but my family escaped without injury, tho' we were grieved to have such a disease brought into our house.

The time arrived for Mr. Williams to take his family to the station, and this girl contrived to steal from the drawers in the parlour some English print, a silver knife, and some silver moneys—keepsakes of my children. The print and knife we got back, but moneys we did not. This being the case, Mr. Williams determined to send her back, and she was put on board the "Brampton;" but when that ship was wrecked, Mr. Marsden would have nothing to do with her, and she was left on board till Mr. Cowell, out of pity, took her along with him to Range Hoo, and for his kindness she stole from him six dollars, but we got them again. From Mrs. Kendall she stole moneys and trinkets, etc., etc., most of which were got back.

Mr. Williams was remonstrated with about turning the girl adrift, however bad, after bringing her into a heathen land, and he sent for her to his station; and as neither Mr. Marsden nor anyone else would take the charge of her, she remains at the settlement, a disgrace to all belonging to it. Mr. Marsden told me over and over, that he had done all he could to persuade him not to take her; but he would not hearken.

While things were thus passing on, Mr. Marsden was at every house inquiring into and prying after every part of my conduct. He sent me letters to give an account of every article of trade that I had expended or given away among these poor heathen for two years past. I had already given in a regular return at the quarterly committees. However, this was no trouble to me, as I always keep a regular account for my own satisfaction, and I gave him a copy. He wanted to see if there was any appearance of neglect or dishonesty in me from

this quarter, but he found none. He then charged me with not doing my utmost in establishing a public school, but happily for me, as false an assertion as ever was made. I have, and I again repeat it, taught more natives in the principles of religion than all the missionaries put together. No man can deny this. My grief has been that I could not get a school erected sooner. However, I had natives in the wood at Pookatoutarra falling timber, both for a school and a church, although I well knew that a great part of the heaviest labour would fall upon me, and also upon my wife, as we should have all the native workmen to feed, and she would have to cook for them all. But we should have a good school-room at the end of the stores, the two rooms which I formerly lived in, had not Mr. Marsden sent Mr. X to live in them, who is an idle man, and one who has committed fornication among the natives, and with more than one, beyond all doubt. If ever I see the Committee in London, and they should wish to know the particulars, I would give them, but I have no wish but to bury such things in everlasting oblivion.

Mr. Marsden came over to the house one day, and we went into the garden and sat down, and talked a good deal about the Mission, about right and wrong, about injuries and forgiving of injuries, and I again brought up our former grievances, and told him I was sorry they had ever taken place, and I was determined by the help of the Lord not to have words with any man again, but rather suffer anything for the sake of peace, except the sacrificing of my conscience, and that I could not nor would I do. Mr. Marsden said if any man endeavoured to wound his moral character, he would never forgive that man; "No!" said he again, "I would never forgive him!" and he illustrated his assertion by an example, saying, "There is a man in Port Jackson now, who endeavoured to injure me sixteen years ago, and I have not forgiven him, and I never will forgive him. When I meet him, I pass him, but I never speak to him, and I never will."

"Well," thinks I to myself, "this is a pretty good hint for me."

We also had some talk about my going with Mr. Leigh to establish a Wesleyan Mission Station, and about Mr. Shepherd's going with us.

[Mr. Marsden was no doubt annoyed that the Wesleyans had taken their station at Wangaroa. His biographers ap-

plaud his assistance to the Wesleyans, extracted, of course, as usual, from his own letters. We are told he wrote to Mr. Butterworth, M.P., "I stood by him (Leigh) when the highest authority in the land would have banished him from the country, and will do it again if necessary." No! Mr. Marsden, not quite. Leigh's journal, of which this extract has been lately printed, describes the incident—Macquarie speaking: "If you will take office under the government, I will find you a situation in which you may become rich, and one in which you will be much more comfortable, than in going about preaching in such a colony as this." (New South Wales). But upon Mr. Leigh persisting in his determination to remain a Wesleyan missionary, Macquarie said, "If these be your objects, they are certainly of the first importance, and if you will endeavour to compass them, by the means you have specified, I cannot but wish you all the success you can reasonably expect or desire; call at the Surveyor-General's office, present my compliments, and say that I wish him to afford you every facility in his power in travelling from one township to another." And now let us turn to the astute Mr. Marsden upon this subject ("Historical Records of N.Z." Page 563.)

Marsden to Butterworth, Wesleyan Mission House.

PARRAMATTA,

July 21st, 1821.

Honoured Sir,

I have learned that it is the intention of the Committee of the Wesleyan Missionary Society to send one missionary to New Zealand. . .

As there are three great Missionary Societies in London, the C.M. Society, The London, and the Wesleyan Societies, it appears to me that it would be a wise and prudent measure for each Society to select their separate fields for their missionaries to labour in New Zealand for the C.M.S.; the Friendly Islands for the Wesleyans; and the Society Islands for the London M.S."

And then follow general remarks as to the suitability of the Friendly Islands, etc. The brightest aspect of the effort in New Zealand is the friendly companionship of Butler, Leigh and White, in the trials and vicissitudes, and the heroic labours of their respective wives.]

I told him I thought it was wrong for Mr. Shepherd to take away his wife and family altogether, and leave the Tee station to go with Mr. Leigh, and more especially as Mr. Leigh did not ask him.

Mr. Marsden said Mr. Shepherd had instruction from him to go to Wangaroa, as he intended to settle Mr. Williams there had not the ground been previously occupied by the Wesleyans.

I said, "Sir, I have a letter fully to disprove that, from Shepherd himself at the time, wherein he declares that he has no instruction from you; but took those steps of his own accord, and would remain with Mr. Leigh until you came down." "Well," he said, "I gave instructions to Mr. Hall to go to Wangaroa to procure timber, and to have it ready, and Shepherd was to go with him." I said, "Sir, I had the pleasure of seeing Mr. Wm. Hall's letter, and Mr. Shepherd's name is not so much as mentioned; and the reason Mr. Hall did not go was because he was fully aware that he could not obtain what you wanted without muskets and powder; and moreover," said I, "when we started from the Bay of Islands we went to Wangaree, seventy miles the other way, and had no intention to go to Wangaroa. It was necessity alone that took us there."

"Well," said Mr. Marsden, "I have been given to understand by Mr. Leigh that he did not ask you to go with them." I answered, "I cannot conceive how Mr. Leigh could inform you so, since I have his letter requesting me to accompany him." Mr. Marsden said he doubted my having such a letter. I assured him I had, with letters of thanks for what I had done. Mr. Marsden then said he did not see any harm of any one's going to assist Mr. Leigh. I told him "No," nor did I. But if anyone had left his station altogether as Mr. Shepherd did, and whom he was unfavourable to, I felt persuaded he would have taken the advantage of keeping him out of the Mission altogether.

Mr. Shepherd took a quantity of trade with him, and boards, etc., etc., for his use, belonging to the Society; all of which were lost, as you see by his own letter, which accompanies these papers; and the store at Kiddee Kidde was in consequence robbed of a large quantity of axes, hoes, etc., etc., for had he kept his place, it was next to impossible for the store to be robbed without his knowledge, as he lived in part of the store, and immediately under that part which was broken open above.

When I next saw Mr. Leigh, I asked him if he had said to Mr. Marsden that he never requested me to go with him to Wangaree to form their settlement. Mr. Leigh looked very

hard, and said, "You have my letter if anyone doubts the matter." I replied, "Yes, sir, I have."

Mr. Marsden next charged me with making light of sin, and a sin which I hate and abominate. Being at our house one evening, he informed me he wished me to take him in the morning to the wreck, to give some instructions to Revd. Mr. Kendall and Mr. Cowell about getting things on shore, etc., etc.

When we were about starting, —— came up to us, and he, being an old captain of a ship, Mr. Marsden wished him to go with us, and steer the boat. —— accordingly jumped into the boat, and we went. When we came to Moturoa, an island within about a mile of the ship, there being a strong breeze and a good deal of sea on, Mr. Marsden wished to be landed on the island, and gave his orders to me, and I went forward and delivered them. But while I was transacting business with the captain, —— went below and got very drunk; when I went out on deck I was quite surprised, as he was just come up, and the natives had got him, making sport of him. I got him into the boat, and immediately set off to Mr. Marsden at the island. When Mr. Marsden saw him he was very angry, but I assured him I did not know from where he had gotten it.

Mr. Marsden then got into the boat, and I undertook to steer, and —— went to sleep.

As we went along, Mr. Marsden said, "This is too bad, Mr. Butler." I said, "Sir, this is nothing." So after we got home, Mr. Marsden said to me: "Mr. Butler, you seem to thing light of ——'s drunkenness;" and I said, "No, sir, far from that; but I again repeat it is nothing in comparison to what I have known when he had liquor from the store formerly; he has nearly killed himself, and his wife the same, and able to do scarcely any work while it lasted, and my wife and myself have often been called up at midnight, supposing them to be a-dying. But, sir," said I, "you hired this man and his wife, knowing them to be complete sots; for the very words you made use of when I went with you to engage him were these: 'I am come to take you away to New Zealand, ——, for if you stop here you will be in prison again ere another month.'"

Next morning, —— got a reproof for his conduct from Mr. Marsden, and sent to his work at Tee. ——, finding himself in the background, and knowing Mr. Marsden had a

pique against me, he endeavoured to get into favour with Mr. Marsden by slandering me and my son behind our backs; and is it not wonderful that Mr. Marsden should listen to such a man? Yet so it was. For, not many days after, he found means to accuse Samuel to Mr. Marsden, telling him that Samuel was so angry at having his house cut and mangled in such a manner, that he declared he would do no more at it, nor fetch any more timber, nor lend the boat to go after any, with many other aggravating things. It ought to be remembered that the boat was my son's private property, and bought by me for £20, Mr. Marsden having first objected to purchase one for the use of the station, although he knew the business of the settlement could not be carried on without one, as there was no going from one settlement to another but by boat.

He had, of course, enough to make him a little nettled, all things taken into consideration, to make him as a young man speak unadvisedly with his lips; he considered himself unkindly treated, and without knowing why or wherefore.

However, Samuel went to Mr. Marsden and fully cleared up his point as soon as he knew of ——'s calumnies. Previous to this, Mr. Marsden had requested me to draw out the deeds for the estate at Samuel's place, which I had prepared, and the morning when this accusation was made by ——, I was going by Mr. Marsden's appointment to pay the chief, Tarayha, and his son, for the land, and to take Mr. Shepherd with me as a third man, to witness the transaction.

I arose at five o'clock in the morning, in order to get away as soon as possible, as we had fourteen miles to go by sea. After breakfast and prayers in the family and with the natives, I got the trade and went into the boat, and sent for Mr. Shepherd

As we were upon the point of starting, Mr. Marsden sent for me out of the boat into Mr. Kemp's parlour; when I entered he bade me sit down, which I did. I said also, "Sir, I hope you will not detain me long, as we have a long way to go." He said, "Never mind; I have something to say." "Well, sir," said I, "go on." "——," said he, "his informed me that Samuel says he will no longer assist in building his house, nor lend his boat to fetch timber." I said, "Sir, I do not believe it, for everyone knows and will say he is a very industrious lad, and has lain out more nights in the cold air and fetched more timber for the Society's purpose than any

other servant of the Society ever did." Mr. Marsden said, "Perhaps so, but you know, and you know;" and I said, "Sir, one thing I know; you want me and mine out of the Mission, and I now plainly tell you if you employ such a man as —— to be your eye at New Zealand, I will have no more to do with the Mission." I said, moreover, "Sir, I am not angry, but my heart is fairly broken, and my strength gone, in endeavouring to bear up under such accumulated and protracted wrongs."

Having said this I was obliged to go out and sit down and weep. My men observing this, went quickly to our house and informed Mrs. Butler, who came over immediately, and kindly asked Mr. Marsden what was the matter. Mr. Marsden said there was nothing the matter, but that —— had been making complaint against Samuel about not lending his aid to build his house.

Mrs. Butler said, "Sir, if you pay attention to the tattle of such a man as that, you will indeed have enough to do. You can be assured of my son's industry from his work, and that should be your guide."

I forgot to say that —— was present with me and Mr. Marsden at Mr. Kemp's, and said in his presence, and in my presence, that I had spoken to Mr. Marsden about his drunkenness, and he would tell Mr. Marsden everything about me that lay in his power.

Mr. Marsden sat and heard this, but did not rebuke his audacity or say anything to him.

Let me ask, with the meekness and gentleness of Christ, if such things, combined with all our local difficulties and hardships, if such things are not enough to drive a wise man out of his senses, and make him commit things which he would not?

Mrs. Butler, seeing my agitation of mind, and knowing my nervous habit of constitution, determined to go and put on proper things and go with me, leaving the house in charge of Mrs. Leigh. I waited, therefore, for Mrs. Butler, and as soon as she was ready, we started for Mongo Newee—to the Tee. After we had got about half way, the wind sprang up against us, and we had much to do in conflicting with the wind and waves. On our arrival at my son's, it being about eleven o'clock, we took some bread and meat and a small glass of spirits and water each for a refreshment.

After our refreshment I told Samuel what —— had been saying to Mr. Marsden, and Samuel said, "Father, it's false and very wrong, and I will go to Mr. Marsden to the Kiddee Kiddee this day and convince him of it."

After our refreshment, we took a walk over some parts of the estate, and consulted together as to the quantity of trade we should put up for it.

Tarayha was not at the settlement, but gone down to the brig "Dragon" with hogs for a musket.

We dined together at two o'clock, and after dinner, Tarayha not returning, we went first to pray for divine guidance in this important undertaking, and then to business, setting apart such articles of barter as we intended to put away. When we had done this, we waited until five o'clock for Tarayha, but he did not return. Mrs. Butler said to me, "Father, I must return home to-night, on account of our natives and the stock, etc., and as it is now between five and six in the evening, and we have fourteen miles to go on the water, we must set off immediately, and you had better stay and pay for the land." To this we all agreed, and Mr. Shepherd and Mr. Saml. Butler signed their names to the deeds and left me to finish the business. But as it was uncertain when Tarayha would return, it became necessary for me to go to the vessel after him, then lying in the harbour, seven miles off. As the vessel was lying in the road to Kiddee Kiddee, we set off with two boats.

My son took his own boat and crew, and his mother and Mr. Shepherd as passengers to go to the Kiddee Kiddee, and I went off with them to go on board the "Dragon," after Tarayha.

When we came within about a mile of the vessel, I wished them good evening, and went on board after the chief. Captain Walker met me on the deck, and I informed him of my business, and he replied, "Tarayha has gone to the opposite shore, but his son is below. Be so good as to go down and speak to him." I went down accordingly, and saw the steward (who is a Chinaman) handing muskets to A Keedo (Kira), for him to choose one in payment of hogs delivered to Capt. Walker.

This young chief seemed very hard to please, and Walker (who is one of the most foul-mouthed men I ever met with) out with an oath at the chief, and then begged I would speak to him and show him a good gun. Akeedo also called me to choose a gun for him, which I did.

Captn. Walker and Captn. Moore then began to tell what they had been doing during the day. They had been to Kiddee Kiddee to see Mr. Marsden about taking up the vessel, to take him and such of the Society's servants as were going with him, to Sydney. Moore said he had offered £400, and Mr. Marsden £300, making £700 between them, but Walker said he should have to unload his vessel, and leave many things in New Zealand, besides a great deal of other work, to prepare the vessel for the reception of such a number of persons, etc., and he did not like the thought of going unless he had £1000. While this conversation was passing, Capt. Walker begged me to take a glass of Hollands and water with him and Capt. Moore; I did so. I took one small glass of Hollands and water with them, and stopped about three-quarters of an hour on board and returned, it being now quite dark, Tarayha's son assuring me that his father and himself would be at my son's by six in the morning, which promise was punctually fulfilled.

We arrived about nine o'clock and took (as we had had none) some tea for supper, then prayers and to rest. Next morning Tarayha came at six, and I immediately went to business, and satisfied them with respect to the payment before breakfast.

After breakfast and prayer, I proceeded to get the signatures of the chiefs and to complete the thing. The chiefs having signed the deeds in their usual way, I felt anxious to return, as I had many things to do, and especially as I expected to leave New Zealand in the "Dragon." The thought of leaving the natives at this time, when I was likely to be most useful to them, preyed upon my spirits and very much agitated my mind, but I bore up as well as I could, and having obtained help of God, I continue unto this day.

About two o'clock we started, and arrived safe in the evening at Te Kiddee Kiddee, all well.

A few days after, Mr. Marsden, who had gone to Pyhea, came to Kiddee Kiddee and wrote me a note from Mr. Kemp's saying I was charged with going on board the "Dragon" in a state of intemperance. I immediately begged Mr. Marsden to bring my accuser to face, but that he would not do, saying that time must be taken for inquiry, etc., etc. Being conscious of my innocence I gave myself no further trouble, but sent for James Spencer, who was with me the whole day, my wife, son, and Shepherd also, who, if Mr. Marsden would have given up his author, could have cleared me on the spot.

But no, Mr. Marsden determined to make the best handle of the matter he could. He therefore went down to the vessel with Capt. Moore in his boat, and from this time Mr. Marsden treated Capt. Moore as a bosom friend, and during the day he was almost constantly in his company; altho' no man formerly inveighed against Moore with so much bitterness as Mr. Marsden, and certainly with too much reason, as assuredly he is a man of a most base character, and is treated as such by the respectable part of society in this colony.

Mr. Marsden then wrote me a very specious letter, whereby he would make it appear that he was willing to give me every chance to clear myself; but he had already got the captains to assure him that they would come forward and swear they knew not what, nor cared not what, because they both had an end to obtain thereby. Captn. Moore was afraid Mr. Marsden should maintain against him what he roundly asserted, when he returned from the wreck at Kiddee Kiddee, viz., that the "Brampton" was lost by obstinacy and neglect; "For when the natives," said he, "who were on board going to Sydney, told him there was no water ahead, he would not put the ship about, but threatened to throw them overboard if they did not hold their tongues, and cursed them."

A change, therefore, in Mr. Marsden's sentiments was of consequence to Moore; and such a base fellow would do anything to obtain it.

Walker wanted to get a few hundreds out of the Society's purse by taking Mr. Marsden to Port Jackson.

It is no wonder, therefore, that men of such base character should say and swear anything about a poor missionary, when it would serve their interest and they could do it, not only with impunity, but get applause for it. Being thus encouraged, they did not fail to take Mr. Kendall's part against the whole Mission, and represented his case as a very hard one, and more especially as they considered him as good a man as any in the Mission. But here, mind again, Mr. Kendall laid out £100 with Moore for boat and stores after the "Brampton" was wrecked; and Walker was going to put the stores in his vessel under Mr. Kendall's charge until he returned from Port Jackson.

I have heard this Moore call Mr. Wm. Hall a d——d scoundrel, and one who ought not to be employed in any Mission. Yes, I have heard him call the whole body of missionaries in N.Zd. a set of cut-throats altogether.

Mr. Leigh being at our house, very ill, I related the whole circumstances unto him, and he said, "Brother Butler, do you feel particularly innocent?" To whom I replied, "Yes, sir, I do." "Then," said he, "if you must suffer, suffer patiently. I would go at the time appointed, and hear what they had to say, but I would not have anything to say to them."

I did so. I heard all they had to say, but I asked them no questions; not because I was not able to contradict the lies they told, but from my knowledge of the whole plan to get me away with some disgrace at last, if possible.

When we arrived at Pyhea, Mr. Williams's man informed James Spencer that Mr. Marsden had had the captains there early in the morning, and that I was tried and condemned before I arrived.

After all was over, these infamous men were asked to dinner at Mr. Williams's, and they sat down in company with Mr. Marsden and the missionaries, Mrs. Williams being at the head of the table, which was under a canopy out doors. These men took wine with Mr. Marsden, and Mr. Williams and part of the company besides. But my mind became so full of, I trust, righteous indignation at seeing such things, that I could not eat. But as I have to speak more particularly about this business in another place, I shall drop the subject for the present.

Having got our trunks, etc., on board, we embarked on board the "Dragon" on Thursday, November 13th, 1823.

On Friday morning the vessel sailed, and on Sunday fortnight, about eight o'clock in the morning, we came to an anchor in Sydney Cove.

I must now make a few remarks on what passed during our voyage.

Mrs. Butler, myself, and our little daughter, had only our sofa widened by boxes for us all to rest upon during our voyage, and a bit of old canvas nailed up before us to keep us from the sight of all belonging to the cabin table, stewards, etc., etc.

Where we sat to eat, there we were obliged to sit and dress and undress, etc. But even this Mrs. Butler and myself would not complain of for a moment, were it not coupled with other things of a more serious nature.

Captain ———, as I have said before, is a man of reprobate character; he had on board a woman who personated his lawful wife, who is now living in Sydney.

Mr. Marsden well knew this before he took up the vessel. He therefore never came to table during the voyage lest he should be defiled; nor did Mr. Leigh or Mrs. Leigh, as they had a cabin provided for them by Mr. Marsden. But where could the rest all go, but to the cabin table, since we had no other place? This was a matter of great affliction to myself, but more especially to Mrs. Butler. But what could she do? She had no cabin, nor any place to sit down but on the table bench, and my little daughter at death's door at the same time. But is this Christian feeling to bring us into such a place? Is this Christian kindness to those who have left their native land and friends? for what! to spend their strength in a savage land for the salvation of a race of cannibals?

I would wish the Society to remember that Mrs. Butler is not at present (blessed be God) company for ———, altho' by Mr. Marsden's arrangements she was obliged to be so, as well as Mrs. Samuel Butler for a season. It may be asked, what could Mr. Marsden do in this case? Why, he could almost effectually have prevented the evil by speaking to ———; but when I spoke to him on the subject, he refused to take any part in the matter, and saying, moreover, that he did not feel himself annoyed by it. And for why? Because ——— had served his turn in N.Zd.

Rev. Mr. White felt himself so much annoyed the first few days that he withdrew from the table, got his food on deck, and never came to it again during the voyage. But as a man he could do what a woman could not do.

My wife had a sick child to look after, and Mrs. Samuel Butler was ill herself during the whole voyage; and when the weather was fine, the vessel was so cumbered on deck with things belonging to the "Brampton," and about a hundred souls besides, that it was almost impossible to get out of the way anywhere, but by lying down in your berth. But this was not all; the most abominable and filthy conversation was continually going at table. Capt. Moore used to come to table frequently with his red cap on, and once or twice sat down with his hat on; and because I would not drink with them at table, they used to go on in a very disgusting manner about all the parsons, as they called them; but we never made any reply, as it could do no good, but make them worse.

One day however, Moore in giving a bone of mutton to the steward, said unto him: "Here, take this devil to Hell to one of my imps, and tell him to roast it and bring it back."

Mrs. Butler and my daughter had not been accustomed to hear such language, and were quite ashamed; and I felt so much indignation at it that I said to him, "Capt. Moore, if the Bible be true, as it certainly is, and there be a Hell to be endured, without repentance, into that Hell you will go, and be tormented for ever and ever."

He made some frivolous reply, and then went on deck.

In this manner we were living for sixteen days, when the vessel let go her anchor in Sydney Cove. Mr. Marsden seemed in haste to get on shore, and I said to him, "Sir, will you be so good as to give us some instructions what you would have us do?" He said, "Do as you like; you know Sydney as well as I do."

But how could this be? as we knew but few folks in it. And moreover, we considered ourselves as under Mr. Marsden's protection, and expected he would provide for us. But away he went, and we were left behind. A boat soon came for Mr. and Mrs. Leigh, and all the passengers left but Mrs. Butler and me and my little daughter. Mrs. Butler was so affected by this treatment, and the thought of being left on board all day on Sunday in the company of ——— that she sat down and wept sore.

On Monday he came on board, and brought Revd. Richd. Hill with him; and he thus began to address me: "What do you mean to do?" I said, "Sir, I do not understand the question, but we must get on shore somewhere before we can do anything."

"But," said he, "I want to know what you mean to do on shore?" "Indeed, sir," said I, "I cannot tell, but you seem to me to be forestalling things in general. I mean to act as a Christian ought to do, both toward myself and the Society to which I belong."

"I wish to know," said he, "how you mean to act? as I shall then know what to do. I mean," said he, "to have the advice of all my friends, and shew these papers to the Governor."

"You are at liberty, Sir," said I, "to do as you please; I care not to whom you shew them, only let me have an opportunity of facing them with such evidence as I shall bring, and then the falsehood will soon be manifest. I am in a British colony now, and shall have justice done me."

But Mr. Marsden has not brought me before his friends as he threatened, though I know he has had his lawyer's and Judge Field's advice. And what is the reason? Why, because they are false.

Mr. Marsden, however, does not appear to have much influence with the Governor, as he is turned out of all his public offices, as treasurer, etc., etc., etc., for the three public institutions in this colony, viz., the Male Orphan School at Sydney, and the Female Orphan School at Parramatta, and the Native Institution for the Blacks. But Mr. Marsden is not the only one who is put out of office, but the whole of the old Committee and officers are dispensed with. How far this is right or wrong in Government, I will not pretend to say. Politics are not my object, and I will only say that such is the case.

We are at this time living in a little house at Parramatta, near Mr. Marsden.

I must now speak a little in commendation of Captn. Beveridge, of the "St. Michael," who has lately returned from Tongataboo, and has brought back my much esteemed friend, Revd. Mr. Lawrey and family. His ship was lying near the "Dragon," and he knew Mrs. Butler and me in New Zealand, and knew our uncomfortable situation in the "Dragon." He came to us, and in the most friendly manner offered to take Mrs. Butler and daughter on board the "St. Michael," and our luggage, and there to stay with him and Mrs. Beveridge until we got a place to go to. "And as the ship is laid up for a time, and the men discharged, you will," said he, "find yourselves comfortable."

We could not but bless God, our heavenly Father, Who has thus provided for us at the very moment the very friend we needed. As Captn. Beveridge is decidedly a religious character, we the more readily embraced his kind offer, and went on board the "St. Michael," and remained on board, I think, nine days, and we received every kindness and attention, both from Captn. Beveridge and his wife, without money and without price, and enjoyed the comfort of family worship morning and evening, which we had not enjoyed since we left New Zealand. We feel thankful to our gracious God, and to our friends, and we pray the Lord to reward them sevenfold into their own bosoms for all their kindness shown.

We have also received much kindness from many religious and respectable families, so that amidst all our troubles

we have much to be thankful for; and I trust we are thankful, and do consider these things as a token for good, but we must wait the Lord's leisure, until He plead our cause; He hath delivered us; He doth deliver us, and we trust will deliver us from every evil work, and preserve us unto His heavenly kingdom.

When we were coming over in the vessel, Mr. Marsden took out of his pocket letters and resolutions of the missionaries in New Zealand, and gave them into the hands of Capt'n. Walker and Capt'n. Moore to read, who from Mr. Marsden's comments on them laughed much, and ridiculed them. But let me in meekness ask: What end could this serve but a bad one? If, in case there was anything wrong, or any errors in them, would these wicked men mend or correct them? No, it would only serve for them to laugh and talk about, in the company they came into, and add perhaps, tenfold unto them, and thus the poor missionaries are made the sport of the wicked, and the song of the drunkards; these things ought not so to be.

There is one thing more I must be allowed to mention, and it is this: In my correspondence with Mr. Marsden, he has not strictly adhered to truth; missionaries are, while they maintain their proper character as the servants of Xt, men of truth; they must be men of truth; they must be men of integrity, too, and I will never give up my integrity, but with my life.

I well know a plan, which if I had acted upon it, I should have been at this time in the very highest estimation with Mr. Marsden, and consequently with the Society; but my conscience, blessed by God, is not quite so callous at present as to let me act a double part; I am quite sensible of the danger which I have exposed myself to, in opposing what I conceived to be wrong; and this has brought on me the invective of all whom I have opposed. But be it so, "the time is short" to light, and "then shall every man receive according to his works."

I now beg leave to make a few remarks relative to James Spencer. He was, as has already been observed, at our house for some months, and conducted himself with much propriety. This man Mr. Marsden wished to engage to look after the cattle in New Zealand, and spoke to me concerning him. He also spoke to the man himself. Spencer said to me and Mr. Marsden that he would stop in New Zealand and look after

the cattle for £30 for one year; and then if he was satisfied with his job he would stop longer; but Mr. Marsden did not give him an answer at that time.

When James Spencer appeared on my behalf at Pyhea, and fully contradicted what the captains asserted, Mr. Marsden immediately turned his back on this man, and called him a vagabond, because what he said tended to overthrow his designs; and he informed the captains of all that this man had said, and that I threatened to bring them to account at Port Jackson.

Two days before the ship sailed, Jas. Spencer went down with my boxes to the brig "Dragon," and he then asked Capt. Walker to give him ship room to Sydney, telling him how he had been ship-wrecked and lost all that he had. He further told Captn. Walker that he would bring plenty of provisions for the voyage, and all that he wanted was permission to be on board; but Captn. Walker said, "No, I have no room for you."

Spencer then said, "Sir, the men will find me room with them, if you will give permission;" but he said, "No," and gave orders to the chief officer, saying, "Take care that this man does not come on board."

Spencer did not return with the natives to my house, but remained on shore near the vessel. In the night, however, before we sailed, James Spencer got alongside, and the sailors took him on board and hid him in their cabin.

Some days after we had got to sea, Revd. Mr. Marsden said to me, "Mr. Butler, I am afraid Vagabond Jem is on board." I said, "Sir, I cannot tell whether he is on board or not (nor could I tell, as I did not know it at this time), but as to his being a vagabond, Sir, I have never seen anything that can apply to him as such; his behaviour in New Zealand has been quite the contrary."

Some days after this the matter was talked of at table, and Walker determined to have the vessel searched, and sent his chief officer forward to enquire after James Spencer, who as soon as his name was called for by the chief officer, came upon deck and came aft. Captn. Walker and Captn. Moore then began upon him in a very outrageous manner, but the man answered them never a word, save only that he told them what they already knew, that he was a ship-wrecked mariner in distress.

Walker and Moore then said, "I will have you put into prison, sir, as soon as you reach Sydney."

"I cannot help it," replied the man.

They then turned round upon me, and said, "He is your man, Mr. Butler, and I will," said Walker, "charge you £25 for his passage."

"Do your utmost," said I to Walker, "I am not afraid of what you may do, or can do: you know that you are stating wilful falsehoods: you know, and so does Moore, that he is a distressed ship-wrecked mariner, and Moore received him on board the "Brampton" as such, to give him a passage to Sydney, and he was again wrecked and cast on shore in New Zealand, and as the man had met with good usage at my house before, he returned to his old quarters."

Moore said, "He is a bad fellow, and Mr. Marsden says so."

I answered, "It is but very lately that Mr. Marsden has harboured the opinion, for a little before he came from New Zealand he wished to engage him as stock-keeper to the Mission, but he would not stay under £30 per annum."

Mr. Marsden did not understand me, and said, "Mr. Butler, I did not offer James £30 per annum."

"I know that sir; I did not say you did, but that you had spoken to him, and commissioned Mr. Kemp, as well as myself, to speak to him about staying, but he would not without having £30 per annum for his stipend."

"Yes," said Mr. Marsden, "but I saw more of him afterwards, and then I gave contrary orders."

"That's very strange, sir," said I, "since it was on the day we returned from the meeting at Pyhea, and only a few days before we started, that Mr. Kemp, as we were returning in my boat, asked him in your name if he was willing to stop, and he said, 'Yes, for £30, but not less.' Now, sir, I verily believe you never saw the man afterwards, until you saw him to-day on this ship's deck."

When we arrived at Sydney, however, they thought better than to meddle with the man; for he went on shore in a few hours after the ship had been at anchor, in the presence of the chief officer, with part of the "Brampton" crew, and no one opened his lips against him. This I am **sure** of, because

I was an eye-witness. The whole of this business must be clear and evident to every unbiassed mind, that they did all in their power to keep him back, lest he should appear as an evidence against them in the court at Sydney.

It may well be asked: How can these things be? But so they are. I have been since informed by a professional gentleman that if these things were brought before the court, Capt'n. Walker, as master of the ship, would get a severe reprimand for his conduct in this affair; and Moore also for saying things about him, for which he had not the least foundation or shadow of proof. How long will the ungodly triumph?

Dear Sir,

The following is a true narrative of facts relative to the papers now in your possession:—

On Monday morning, October 27th, 1823, I arose at five o'clock in the morning, and prepared myself and men as early as possible to go to the Tee (the station of my son—fourteen miles distant from my own), according to Mr. Marsden's appointment, to pay the chief and his son for the land chosen for that station. I had previously drawn up the deeds for this purpose, and got everything ready which was necessary for this business; and Mr. Shepherd, one of my colleagues, was appointed to go with me to witness the transaction.

After breakfast, all things being ready, we got into my whale-boat, having for my crew four of my native workmen and a young man named James Spencer, who formerly belonged to the American schooner "Cossack," which was wrecked at the heads of the river Shukeanga, and who was living at my house, waiting an opportunity to get away out of the island.

Just as we were starting, Revd. Mr. Marsden sent for me out of the boat, to the house of Mr. Kemp, that the carpenter, whose name is ———, had been laying certain charges against my son, saying he would not lend his boat for the Society's purpose, to fetch timber, etc., etc. Altho' every man has a just right to do what he will with his own, I felt confident that my son would do no such thing, altho' Mr. Marsden had done to him that which no honourable man would do. I did, of course, feel myself much exasperated at this intelligence, and told Mr. Marsden I knew it to be false; and it was proved so in the end. I moreover told Mr. Marsden if he intended to keep such a dissolute character as ——— in the Mission, to pry into and scrutinize my actions, and those of my son, it was time for me to leave the Mission altogether, and this I certainly would do.

My natives seeing me much agitated, went and informed Mrs. Butler, who came over and asked Mr. Marsden what was the matter, and he had nothing to say. Mrs. Butler did not like to see me thus harassed and distressed, and she therefore determined to go with me and leave our house in the charge of Revd. Mr. and Mrs. Leigh, who were living at our house at this time.

As soon as Mrs. Butler was ready, we set off, and we had a strong wind and a heavy sea against us a great part of the way. When we arrived at our place of destination, we stood in need of some refresh-

ment, which my son furnished for us. After which, the chief and his son being gone down to the brig "Dragon" to barter hogs for a musket and powder, we went and examined that part of the estate where the buildings were to be erected, and the garden planted, which occupied our time until dinner was ready.

We sat down to dinner—Mrs. Butler and myself, my son and his wife, and Mr. Shepherd; our beverage at dinner was water from the spring, and at the close we each took a small quantity of spirits in the bottom of the glass, and filled it up with water and drank it.

Dinner being over, and the chiefs having not returned, we first went to prayers, and then set out as much trade as we intended to give for the land, and then Mr. Shepherd and my son signed the deeds, as I was likely to have the finishing stroke, viz., to the chief's signature by myself; as unless he returned very shortly they would have to return to my station without seeing him, as everyone must be at his own place at night. However, they waited until between five and six o'clock in the evening, and as Tarayha, the chief, did not return, my son agreed to take his mother and Mr. Shepherd home to Kiddee Kiddee, and leave me at his place to settle for the land.

Now Sir, this is all the foundation that those wicked men have for the falsehoods contained in those papers. I was never out of the company of the persons above named; nor did I eat or drink anything but in their presence, and at the time they both ate and drank. The fact is this: I was, as before stated, in much agitation of mind, but as for drinking, I had not what might be deemed necessary, much less to make me in a state of inebriety considering the fatigue I had had during the day.

When I got on board I was met on the deck by Captain Walker and Capt'n. Moore, to whom I said, "Gentlemen, I wish to be informed if the chief Tarayha is on board." They answered, "No, Sir, he is gone to the opposite shore to get his food, but his son is below looking at a musket; be so good as to step below in the cabin;" which I did, and as they could not speak the language, they wished me to speak to the young chief, and look out a gun for him, which I did. Capt'n. Walker then ordered some Hollands on the table, which was done immediately by his steward, a Chinaman. Capt'ns. Moore and Walker then helped themselves to a glass of Hollands and water each, and begged me to take a little, observing I had a great way to go on the water, and at night. At their request, therefore, I took a little Hollands in the bottom of a half-pint tumbler—I am sure not more than half a quarter—and poured water into it from an earthen vessel which they had in the cabin, filling it up to the brim. I stopped with them about half an hour, talking about Mr. Moore and Mr. Marsden taking up the vessel to bring away the crew of the "Brampton," and Mr. Marsden and such other passengers as were coming away with him. I then wished them good-night, got into my boat, and returned to the Tee to my son's, and arrived about nine o'clock; I then took some tea with my supper, and retired to rest—perfectly sober.

This is the simple truth concerning those papers, and the statements contained in them, and this is for your guidance in your animadversion upon them.

And am, very respectfully,
Your obt. servant,
JOHN BUTLER.

Rev. S. Marsden to Rev. J. Pratt.

KIDDEE KIDDEE,

November 10th, 1823.

Revd. Sir,

I wrote you in September last, in hopes that some vessel might touch at New Zealand for Europe, but none has done so yet. As I am now just on the point of embarking this morning, I thought it proper to add a few more lines. Several circumstances have occurred since the loss of the "Brampton," which could not be foreseen at the time. A small brig has come into the harbour, on her way to Otaheite, which the master of the "Brampton," in conjunction with myself, have taken up to convey us to New South Wales. I must return to my public duty as soon as possible, as my leave of absence has expired some time. Mr. Kendall gave me reason to believe he would accompany me to Port Jackson, as I did not take up the brig until he informed me that he would follow my direction, when I applied to him to know what his intentions were. After I had engaged a passage for him and his family, he then informed me he was determined to remain in New Zealand. I am therefore constrained to leave him. Several circumstances have happened which have rendered the Rev. J. Butler's removal necessary. I shall communicate the particulars to you on my arrival in New South Wales.

Mrs. B. accompanies me as well as his son. . . . I am happy to say the natives behave well; there is nothing to be apprehended from them.

I remain, etc.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.



CHAPTER X.

Rev. S. Marsden to Rev. J. Pratt.

PARRAMATTA,
January 13th, 1824.

Revd. Sir,

I have this day suspended the Revd. J. Butler from all connection with the C.M. Society, until the pleasure of the Committee is known at home. It was intention to have sent him to England, if I could have prevailed upon him to have gone, as I did not know what step to take excepting this. When I received your letters on the 10th inst., I was much relieved; I then saw my way clear. I had an interview with Mr. Butler this morning, after I had written my letter to suspend him, a copy of which I have forwarded to you. . . . I have informed Mr. Butler . . . that as he was now suspended from all connection with the Society, he was at liberty to act as he thought proper until his case was laid before the parent Committee; that I would hire him myself if he would quietly retire into the interior, and put the New Zealanders under his care. He consented to my terms.

Idem. February 21st, 1824.

Writing to proposal to build a seminary at Parramatta for native youths and the missionary children, he concludes:—

The workmen are now at work and will continue until it is finished. I have six New Zealanders with me now, who are much rejoiced to see the foundation marked out; they are all young men of family. The Revd. J. Butler has charge of them under my directions.

I remain, etc.,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

The “copy” referred to is not among Butler’s effects. The “Hocken” Library, Dunedin, possesses a copy taken by Marsden, and sent to someone by him, no doubt written with careful circumspection, after two months’ ruminating, in order to make his footing good with the C.M.S., in his quarrel with Butler. To the Library we are indebted for their kindness in supplying this copy.

Rev. S. Marsden to Rev. J. Butler.

PARRAMATTA,
January 13th, 1824.

Revd. Sir,

Previous to my leaving New Zealand, and ever since, I have been greatly embarrassed in my own mind to know what to do in your case.

The unhappy differences between you and Mr. Kendall, united with other causes, rendered your removal from New Zealand no longer a matter of choice, but of necessity. After you had been accused of inebriety on board the "Dragon," and I had received the opinion of your colleagues upon that charge, my embarrassment was increased. Tho' I do not think you are addicted to that sin, yet I do think that in moments of great vexation and passion, you are liable to fall into it.

From the state of mind you were in on that day when you left Kidee Kidde for the Tees, it has ever been impressed upon my mind that you were overcome, whether you drank little or much.

(Butler had told Marsden that he was tired of such falsehoods being propagated and would leave the Mission and go Home.)

From maturely considering all that occurred in New Zealand, I thought it would be more for your interest and honour, and for the interests of the Mission, for you quietly to retire to Europe, and stated this to you both verbally and by letter. I have repeatedly mentioned the subject since our arrival in New South Wales. You always seemed unwilling to return to England, at present. I told you a few days ago that my responsibility was great, and that if we could not come to some final determination relative to your return, I should take the opinion of Mr. Justice Field and some of his colleagues, when you might attend our meeting and hear what their sentiments were.

On Saturday evening, the 10th inst., I received despatches from the secretary of the C.M. Society, the Rev. J. Pratt, which supercedes the necessity of my calling a meeting, as the only question I had to submit to them was relative to your return to England. From the instructions I have received, I shall not feel myself authorised to furnish you with a passage home until I hear from the parent Committee again. The only question now to be decided is, what am I to do in the meantime? Had I suspended you from all connection with the Society, at the time I received the opinion of your colleagues on the charge against you for inebriety, I should have been fully justified in doing so, and the Society may now disapprove of my conduct in not having done this. However, this was a measure too painful for me to adopt at that time. I also thought it was more probable that you would never return again to New Zealand, and that if you quietly retired to England, the members of the parent Committee, with their united wisdom, and you might settle your concerns better than I could do, and bring less discredit upon the Mission, and be less injurious to yourself. As the parent Committee does not authorize me to furnish you with a passage to England, I am brought to the same difficult and painful point again, viz., either to suspend you from all official connection with the Society until your case is submitted to the consideration of the Committee, or to continue you in the service of the Mission. As I cannot send you home, I have only one line of conduct to adopt, under the circumstances you are placed, in order to do impartial justice(?) to save the credit of the Society and myself from any unjust censure, and that is to suspend you from the service of the Society as a missionary belonging to it, and therefore you must consider yourself suspended from this time. At the same time, until the whole case is submitted to the parent Committee, and answers received, I will employ you as I would any other individual on my own responsibility, in instructing the New Zealanders who are now at Parramatta, or may hereafter come. If you approve

of my proposition, it must be under the express condition that you put yourself wholly under my direction, and devote your attention to the improvement of the New Zealanders, and live in a retired manner. I shall rejoice if you can retrace your steps, if you can subdue your stubborn and unruly temper. Pride, passion, jealousy, and a worldly spirit have been the bane of the Mission. If these can be put off, and the missionaries become clothed with humility, God will bless their labours. Let your past experience make you more cautious, more watchful, and more lowly.

If you can only learn of Jesus the lesson which He hath taught His followers, viz., to be meek and lowly in heart, you may still redeem your missionary character, and be useful in the great cause, and happy in your own soul; but you never can in any other way. I must now leave what I have said to your consideration, and judge for yourself what you ought to do.

I am, Rev. Sir,

Your most obedient, humble servant,

(Signed) SAMUEL MARSDEN.

[Quite a nice accommodating and gentle letter, gracious in texture and structure, and eminently suitable for submission to the "united wisdom" of the parent Committee to whom this was sent. Herein Marsden omits to state that his letter to Butler suggesting he should leave N.Z., was written on November 1st, whereas the accusation was not made until later on, and that what he was to do with Butler must have been contemplated before the charge arose.]

RULES AND REGULATIONS OF THE NEW ZEALAND MISSION COMMUNICATED BY MR. MARSDEN TO COMMISSIONER BIGGE.

First.—It is ordered that no person engaged in this Mission shall be allowed, upon any account or pretence, to acquire or hold any private or individual property, real, landed or personal, in New Zealand, or with any ship or person touching there, but only for the general account of the Mission.

Eighth.—That the Reverend John Butler, Superintendent of the Mission, appointed by the Committee of the Society, shall superintend, direct, order, and manage all and every matter and thing whatsoever, and of every kind, nature and degree belonging to, affecting or concerning the Mission in New Zealand; and that all and every person engaged in it, and attached to the Mission shall be subject to and obey his orders and directions, according to their several offices, trades and calling.

Tenth.—That the Superintendent shall keep a regular journal of all the transactions of the Society, and its several members, including himself, a copy of which shall be forwarded quarterly to the agent in New South Wales, and the Committee in London.

[Verily the road to “Avernus” is paved with good intentions.]

When Mr. Marsden laid down Rule No. 10, he hardly anticipated that Mr. Butler would so assiduously fulfil it, and naturally, some of the entries forwarded for his perusal, and for the Committee in London, were not calculated to “keep the noiseless tenor of their way.” Such constant attacks were being made upon his commercial activities in Australia (which culminated in his being—perhaps over-harshly), dismissed from his office as a magistrate), that he could not tolerate any more being raised by Butler. What was applicable in Mr. Kendall’s bearing to Butler, was equally so towards the other missionaries (or should we read settlers), as Mr. Williams was the only ordained missionary among them.

We must search deeper than this letter for the intention at the base of Mr. Marsden’s mind.

Butler, as Superintendent in New Zealand, was amenable to the C.M. Society, but not to their agent; but once removed from New Zealand and from his position, he was within Mr. Marsden’s coils.

The differences between Butler and Kendall were purely secular, as Mr. Kendall had already ceased to be connected with the Mission.

Mr. Marsden’s distress over the whole circumstance is “buncum;” it was his usual method of writing, and as such on a former occasion, drew from a letter, Lachlan Macquarie to Lord Sidmouth (“Essays of Rev. Sydney Smith on Botany Bay,” page 412), the following:—

“As to Mr. Marsden’s troubles of mind, and pathetic display of sensibility, and humanity, they must be so deeply seated, and so far removed from the surface, as to escape all possible observation. His habits are those of a man forever engaged in some active animated pursuit; no man travels more from town to town, or from house to house. His deportment is at all times that of a person the most gay and happy. Where his hours of sorrow are spent, it is hard to

divine, for the variety of his pursuits, both in his own concerns, and in those of others, is so excessive, in farming, grazing, manufactories and transactions, that with his clerical duties, he seems, to use a common phrase, "to have his handsful" of work. And the particular subject to which he imputes this extreme depression of mind is, besides, one for which few people here will give him credit."

FROM MARSDEN'S "LIFE OF MARSDEN."

"Firm as he (Marsden) was, and lion-hearted when danger was to be met, his nature was very gentle [Yes! Very!] and his affections both deep and warm. And he had now to rebuke some of the missionaries whom he loved [To rebuke?] as his own soul, and even to dismiss one of them. . . . Several chiefs, among whom was Tooi, warmly took up the cause of the missionary who had been dismissed. . . . After some further explanations, the chiefs were satisfied that Mr. ——— had violated our laws, and brought all this distress upon himself."

The accusation against Butler, one would naturally conclude, would have been sifted forthwith, and he immediately asks that such be done, and upon the ground where his defence lies. Not so, this would not suit Mr. Marsden, whose intention had been to obliterate Butler; and it is not until January 13th, 1824—long after they had left New Zealand—that Marsden writes to the Rev. J. Pratt, Church Missionary House:—

"I have this day suspended the Rev. J. Butler from all connection with the C.M. Society. It was my intention to have sent him to England, if I could have prevailed upon him to have gone," etc. (Page 616, "Historical Records," McNab.)

Well! Well! Butler wanted to go, and would not have required much pressing, especially as he would be sent, and his fares therefore paid. Why, therefore, did Butler go at his own expense shortly afterwards?

Again, "Brett's New Zealand":—"It has been found requisite to separate from the Society two members for conduct disgraceful to their profession. Marsden says, 'I had many a battle to fight for years with some of the early settlers, who turned out to be unprincipled men.'"

The same old tune, characteristic of the man, always decrying the wickedness of the Mission settlers. Read this (written on his voyage out):—"I am surrounded," he says, "with evil-disposed persons, thieves, adulterers and blasphemers. May God keep me from evil, that I may not be tainted with the evil practices of those among whom I live."

Who were these unprincipled men? Mr. Wm. Hall and Francis Hall, both honest missionaries? James Kemp, King, Gordon, Carlisle? No fault can be found with these. There remain Kendall, Cowell, and Butler. Kendall's work will always be a monument to him, and up to the period of his leaving for England, 1820, little fault, and that secular, has been found with him. He was suspended by Marsden, July 22nd, 1822.

James Shepherd went to New Zealand in March, 1821, and Cowell in January, 1822 (the latter left with Butler in 1823).

Page 245 "Brett's N.Z."—"Mr. King," Nicholas states, "was in receipt of £400 per year, which his business produced him in the settlement (New South Wales), and Mr. Hall was probably equally profitably engaged, and going to New Zealand, would, even in Port Jackson, be considered the high road to wealth."

Careful consideration leads one to the conclusion that the whole undertaking was a commercial one; of which the spiritual part was paid for by the Church Missionary Society, and the commercial—a side-line of Mr. Marsden's—in which the two became inextricably confused. When the private trading interfered with the "side-line," it became necessary to place a limit on the operations, a five per cent. commission. "I spoke to the settlers upon the subject, and told them my opinion, and that I could not allow them to have any private trade whatever." (Page 247, "Brett's N.Z.")

Where here is the highroad to wealth? The settlers henceforward dealt privately with the whalers; and although the "Active" certainly collected cargoes, the results were not satisfactory to Mr. Marsden.

When Mr. Butler arrived upon the scene, this had to end. What happened after Mr. Butler left is no concern of ours, except this, that with the falling years, the scriptural side of Mr. Marsden became strongly pronounced, and upon his death, in 1837, it is recorded: "And thus the man, honoured

in his death, whose life had been one long conflict with obloquy and slander. With few exceptions his enemies had died away, been gradually led to abandon their prejudices, and now many of them loved and revered the man whom they had once hated and despised." (Marsden's "Life of Marsden.")

Alexander Strachan, in his "Life of Samuel Leigh," page 200, viewing the subject from another angle, is more generous to the New Zealand missionaries than Mr. Marsden, whose strictures remind one of that little adage about an unclean bird and its own nest.

Strachan, in referring to the statement (published in the "Church Missionary Intelligencer," and suspiciously like the emanation of Dr. Lang), "The missionaries landed on the shore of the Bay of Islands in December, 1814. Not till the year 1825 was a first convert given them, and a second in 1827." Strachan rejoinders, "Let it be observed:—

1. That from 1814 to 1822 (1819?), the Society was represented by a few mechanics who had no authority to form a church, nor even to preach.
2. After the arrival of the first clergyman, the Rev. John Butler, the secular and spiritual systems were perpetuated, which contemplated civilization first, and conversion as an ulterior object.
3. Yet, notwithstanding the imperfections of the system, . . . much spiritual good has been done.

"We are bound, in justice to those early labourers, to vindicate them from the implied censure. Possessing, as we do, manuscript journals of their proceedings, written upon their own establishment by disinterested parties, we are able to assure the contributors to the Church Missionary Society that the preceding statement is not in accordance with ascertained facts. . . . We regret to witness the attempt that is being made to depreciate the labour of these men, and to attribute the good that has been done in New Zealand to the appointment of a bishop, and the establishment of an ecclesiastical hierarchy.

"We advance no claim on behalf of the first missionary agents that is not absolutely due to candour and truth. They served their generation according to the will of God, and, with one exception, left the world without personally making any demands upon the gratitude of posterity. Yet, we affirm

that they laid the foundation of those measures that have issued in the commercial elevation of New Zealand. In their heroism and teaching originated the noble collegiate and educational institutions that now adorn the country. The statesman may smile, but they were the pioneers who won those beautiful islands for the British crown. What company of commercial speculators ever thought of establishing themselves in New Zealand, for the purpose of testing the quality of the soil, or of ascertaining its mineral resources, until the artisans of Marsden, and the missionaries, Butler and Leigh, had demonstrated to modern scepticism that, under the guardianship of the God of Daniel, good men could live among lions? Up to that time the mariner whose ship was stranded upon its shores yielded to despondency, and felt that his days were numbered. Like a lighthouse in the midst of surrounding darkness and desolation, the first missionaries repelled the waves of savage violence, and maintained their position. Their coadjutors and successors have been subjected to the misrepresentation of colonizing companies, whose cupidity they checked, and the insinuations of vacillating local government, against which they were obliged to appeal; yet have they done more to consolidate the peace of the country, to promote public confidence (without which there can be no permanent prosperity in any state), and to improve the social condition of the people, than all the civil enactments, the military establishments, and fiscal regulations of the politician."

JAMES SPENCER deposes that he formerly belonged to AMERICAN SCHOONER "COSSACK," and that he was wrecked in the said vessel at the HEADS of the RIVER SHUKIANGAH on SUNDAY, APRIL 27th, 1823, and on the 5th MAY following he came to the house of the REVD. JOHN BUTLER in a distressed state, having lost all he had in the vessel, and was kindly taken by the REVD. JOHN BUTLER, and that he remained at the house of MR. BUTLER some months waiting an opportunity to get away from NEW ZEALAND, and was treated in every respect with kindness and attention. That during that period he had the opportunity of witnessing the indefatigable industry of MR. AND MRS. BUTLER in the work of the MISSION and the good of the NATIVES. That in his house he never beheld anything but order and propriety, coupled with unvaried attention to the comfort and instruction of the many natives he employed, and those who were daily going to and fro from his house.

He further states that during his residence at MR. BUTLER'S, he generally made one of MR. BUTLER'S boat's crew, in going up and down the HARBOUR, on the business of the MISSION, and that he was one of the boat's crew

the day MR. BUTLER went to pay for the land at the TEE, A SETTLEMENT belonging to a CHIEF named TARAYHA and his son OKEEDA, that he was with MR. BUTLER the whole day. That he went with MR. BUTLER on board the brig "DRAGON," to seek after the chief and his son. That MR. BUTLER was perfectly sober when he went on board the brig "DRAGON," and so when he returned to the TEE, and that his former statements in NEW ZEALAND are the truth and nothing but the truth.

(Signed) JAMES SPENCER.

Affidavits were sworn before Jno. Wilde, Judge Adv. N.S.W., on January 29th, 1824, by Samuel Butler and Ann Butler, son and daughter-in-law, both of Parramatta, to the effect that while resident at a place called the Tee in New Zealand, the Revd. John Butler had been at their house on the morning of 27th October, 1823; that at six in the evening he took a boat and went down the river, and returned about nine o'clock in the evening. That he, the said John Butler, never took sufficient spirits to make any man in health the least inebriated; that he was perfectly sober when he left the house, and that he was perfectly sober when he returned.

THE DEPOSITION OF MR. SAMUEL BUTLER.

Mr. Samuel Butler deposeth, that on October 27th, 1823, that his father and mother and Mr. James Shepherd came to the Tee, the station under his care and charge; that the object of his father's coming, and bringing Mr. Shepherd with him, was to pay for the land chosen for the station.

That when they arrived, having been several hours upon the water, and come fourteen miles in a heavy sea, he took them into his house (or rush hut), when Mrs. Butler, Jnr., set such refreshment before them as she had.

Afterwards, the chief Tarayha and his son, not being at the station but were gone to the brig "Dragon," to sell hogs for muskets and powder, that his father, Mr. James Shepherd, and himself, went about the estate, making some observations as they passed along, and thus continued until dinner was ready, which was about two o'clock or something later; that they all dined together in his hut, after which, they again took a walk, and waited for the chief until about five o'clock in the evening, but they did not return. Having therefore, in conjunction with his father and Mr. Shepherd, set apart the trade to be given for the land, and having made every other necessary arrangements, he prepared his boat as fast as possible, in order to take his mother and Mr. Shepherd to the Kiddee Kiddee, and in order to speak to Mr. Marsden about what had passed between Mr. Marsden and his father in the morning, and which had given his father much anxiety of mind, and to convince Mr. Marsden of the falsehood of those reports.

Further, that as the chiefs were gone to the "Dragon," and uncertain when they might return, his father, who was to be left to finish the business in hand, determined to go to the vessel after the chief, and accordingly manned his boat and we set off together, and kept in company for some miles, as we had to pass the vessel on our way to Kiddee Kiddee.

Mr. Samuel Butler further declares that he was in his father's company the whole time from the arrival at his station; that he neither ate nor drank but in his presence, and that his father was perfectly sober when he left to go on board the "Dragon;" that he had made every inquiry about his return, and both the native servants, as well as Mrs. Butler, declared to him that his father returned in the same sober state as when I left him.

(Signed) SAMUEL BUTLER.

KIDDEE KIDDEE,

November 8th, 1823.

Messrs. Butler, Hall, King, Kemp, and Shepherd.

Gentlemen,

As I am about to leave New Zealand for a time at least, and scandalous reports have been raised of me, I deem it necessary for the justification of my character, to put the following questions, in order that you may speak according to your knowledge of me, and have no reason to speak differently after my departure.

QUESTIONS

1st.—Have I ever lived in any known sin such as drunkenness, adultery, or any other crime since you have had an opportunity of knowing me?

2nd.—Do I live in open sin, and am I worthy of censure?

ANSWERS.

Rev. J. Butler	No!
Mr. Wm. Hall	No!
Mr. J. King	No!
Mr. J. Shepherd—I believe he lived before he was married in disobedience to his parents.	

(Butler was born 1781 married 1798.)

Mr. J. Kemp	No!
Rev. J. Butler	No!
Mr. Wm. Hall	No!
Mr. J. King	No!
Mr. J. Shepherd	No!
Mr. J. Kemp	No!

These questions were asked in the presence of the Revd. Mr. Marsden and the Revd. Mr. Leigh.

(Signed) JOHN BUTLER.

AFFIDAVIT OF MR. E. S. HALL. (Copy from the "Hocken" Collection.)

Edward Smith Hall, of Sydney, in the territory of New South Wales, gentleman, being duly sworn upon the evangelists of Almighty God, solemnly maketh oath and saith that he is acquainted with Samuel More, master mariner, and late com-

mander of the merchant ship "Brampton," some time since wrecked at the Bay of Islands, New Zealand, and that he, this deponent, verily believes the said Captain More to be an active intrepid man in his profession or calling as a master mariner, but at the same time knows him to be extremely lewd and profane in his ordinary discourse. *

"See "Life of Turner," page 35. They endured eleven days at sea with one of the most profane captains they ever knew.

And this deponent further saith that in consequence of such shameful and profane remarks of the said Samuel More, he verily believes the said Samuel More would take pleasure in exposing and exaggerating the infirmities, and in misrepresenting the manners and conversation of any man making a profession of religion. And this deponent further saith that he hath known the Reverend John Butler ever since his arrival in New South Wales, and from his own knowledge and the intelligence he, this deponent, has from time to time learned from visitants at New Zealand, he verily believes the said John Butler to be by far the most active, zealous, pious, moral, and useful missionary in the Church Mission established in the said Island.

E. S. HALL.

Sworn at my office in
Macquarie Place, in Sydney,
in the Territory of New South
Wales (where no stamps are used)
this thirtieth day of
January, 1824.

Before me,

JNO. WYLDE,

Judge Adv. N.S.W.

MEMORANDUM OF REV. W. WHITE AS TO REV. J. BUTLER'S
CHARACTER. (Now in the "Hoeken" Collection.)

Wm. White, of the Wesleyan Missionary Society, having been in New Zealand for several months, and having had frequent intercourse with the brethren of the Church Missionary Society, and especially with the Rev. John Butler, to whose kindness and assistance in the establishment of our Mission in New Zealand we owe much; and whose moral conduct is now called in question, begs to state that he never saw anything in Mr. Butler's conduct as a Christian and a minister of Jesus Christ which could possibly be construed into a blot on his moral character; nor does he hesitate to say that he believes the present reports in circulation to be the invention of wicked and designing men.

WM. WHITE.

REV. WALTER LAWRY TO REV. J. BUTLER. (In the possession of the "Hocken" Library.)

PARRAMATTA,

January 9th, 1824.

My very Dear Sir,

If by contributing my humble testimony to your missionary and Christian career, since I have had the honour of your acquaintance and friendship, I can in the smallest degree serve you, it will afford me no inconsiderable happiness.

On my arrival in New Zealand in 1822, I was highly gratified and delighted to find the missionaries in a state of peace and activity, which I considered bespoke their piety, and encouraged blooming hopes of success.

But allow me, my dear Sir, the liberty of saying that your docile, humble, and pious conversation made a deep impression on my mind. It did me good. While in the colony, your mind had been greatly tried; the conduct of your brethren toward you, I considered far from pleasant, or proper toward you. The Society's agent more especially grieved you.

But when I saw your spirit and conduct at New Zealand, and witnessed the maturity and wisdom of your plans, together with your unwearied, unremitted industry in promoting the noble objects of the Society, and compared them with the sweet, condescending and affectionate manner in which both yourself and Mrs. Butler were pleased to welcome and care for Mrs. Lawry and myself, I was at a loss to express the grateful feelings of my heart. It was then my opinion, and the opinion of those who were with me, that you were the most calculated for extensive usefulness of any man among all the excellent brethren of that Mission; this is still my opinion.

As to the vile and wicked slanders which certain persons have maliciously propagated concerning you, no one will believe them save those who wish to do so. I believe that those who know your proceeding in your Mission, and are unbiassed by party feelings, are forward to allow you to be an eminently pious and useful minister of Jesus Christ. I hope you will see your way clear to return to New Zealand, and that God will then bless you with all blessings in your suffering, misrepresented, and yet hopeful Mission.

Please to accept, Rev. and dear Sir, my grateful tribute of thanks for the Christian kindness which I have witnessed at your hands.

I am, your aff. brother,

WALTER LAWRY,

Wesleyan Missionary.

Rev. J. Butler.

J. Dunmore Lang, M.D., to Right Hon. Lord Durham, 1839.

The Mission was originally established, and for a long time systematically conducted, on the principle of first civilizing, and then Christianizing the natives. Reversing the Apostolic plan, the missionary

carpenter, the missionary boat-builder, the missionary ploughman, the missionary rope-spinners, were all set to work at their various occupations, and the natives were expected forthwith to imitate their example; in fact, the Mission settlement in New Zealand was for a long time a complete lumber yard, or factory, in which all sorts of labour were going on; but the proper labour of the missionary—the very clergyman, for there was only one on the island—being in no respect different from a common agricultural labourer, except that he mounted a pulpit and read prayers in a surplice every Sunday.

That clergyman, the Rev. Mr. Butler, told me himself in the year 1824—the year he left the New Zealand Mission and returned to England—that during the previous season he had ploughed and sown eleven acres of land for wheat at the Mission settlement on the Kidi Kidi River, with his own hands, having previously, with the assistance of his son Samuel, who was afterwards drowned in New Zealand, grubbed up the whole of the ground, which had been originally overgrown with tall fern.

Fortunately, indeed, a laborious occupation of this kind was more congenial to the taste and habits of Mr. B. than labour of a more intellectual or missionary character, for, previous to his ordination to foreign parts, and his appointment to the office of Superintendent of the Church of England Mission in New Zealand, and Justice of the Peace in that island, under the government of New South Wales, he had merely been the out-of-door clerk, or foreman, of a large London establishment, for forwarding goods by common carriers and canal boats.

For some time the missionary settlement with its workshops, its bell to ring the people in and out, etc., was an exact copy of the lumber yard in Sydney, and some of the natives were quick-sighted enough to see the difference, and to act accordingly. For when the stout missionary ploughman, who was the only ordained missionary on the island, at the time I allude to, arrayed himself in his canonicals and read prayers on Sunday, the natives shrewdly observed that he was the only rangitira or gentleman among them, and that the rest were only “cookeys,” or slaves.

Brett, in his “Early History of New Zealand,” remarks: “Butler was eminently an agriculturist, and offended the ‘unco guid’ in New South Wales by his bucolic tastes.”

Be that as it may, it was a case of produce or starve, and when Rev. Saml. Leigh, the Wesleyan, came to Keri Keri, the location of Butler, Hall and Kemp, he writes:—

“It resembles a neat little country village, with a good school-house lately erected in the centre. When standing on an eminence near, we can see cattle, sheep, goats, pigs and horses, houses, fields covered with wheat, oats and barley, and gardens richly filled with all kinds of vegetables, fruit trees, and a variety of useful productions. In the yards may be seen geese, ducks and turkeys; and in the evening, cows returning to the Mission families, by which they were supplied with good milk and butter. The settlement forms a most pleasing object.”

Samuel Marsden himself wrote a justification of his own farming propensities, page 19, "Life of Marsden," by Rev. J. B. Marsden. "His farming was on a much more extensive scale however, for when he went to England in 1807, he owned twelve acres of wheat, ten acres barley, six acres oats, half an acre in peas and beans, eight acres in potatoes, seven acres in orchard and garden, five hundred acres fallow, and two thousand, three hundred and twelve acres in pasturage—in all, two thousand eight hundred and fifty-five and a half acres, with besides, goats, hogs, and cattle, one thousand one hundred and eighty-two sheep.

An Agreement between THOMAS HANSEN and the REVD. SAML. MARSDEN on behalf of the CHURCH MISSIONARY SOCIETY at 10/- per week and rations, commencing AUGUST 21st, 1819.

Such sum will be paid to him on the SOCIETY'S account as long as the REVD. MR. BUTLER shall find his services necessary for the general benefit of the SETTLEMENT. He the said THOMAS HANSEN is willing to continue in the employ of the CHURCH MISSIONARY SOCIETY.

JAMES BOYLE, Saltmaker, MANAWAURA, was paid £9 5s for goods stolen from him by natives, January 7th, 1820.

GEORGE HARRISON commenced 9th March, 1820.

SETTLERS ON THE MISSION STORE LIST KEPT BY
BUTLER.

Wm. Hall, Snr.
Wm. Bean.
W. Puckey.
Wm. Fairburn.
Geo. Gordon and family, L. 9/11/19.
Jas. Kemp.
John King.
Francis Hall.
Hannah Hansen.
Thomas Hansen and son.
Mrs. Hansen.
James Boyle.
Richard Russell.

Geo. (the brickmaker) a native.
 Geo. Harrison.
 ——— Johnson.
 John Lee.
 ——— Carlisle and family, left 9/11/19.
 Wm. Hall (Jun.), left 9/11/19.
 Saml. Butler, left 9/11/19.

THE FOLLOWING CHILDREN OF ENGLISH PARENTAGE
 WERE BORN IN NEW ZEALAND BEFORE AND
 DURING THE REV. JOHN BUTLER'S
 RESIDENCE THEREIN UP TO 1823.

Bean, George Thomas	Born	Oct., 1819.
Bean, ——— ———	Christened	May 15th, 1821.
Hall (girl, Dinah?)	Born	May 28th, 1815.
Hall, ——— ———	"	before 1818.
Hall, ——— ———	Christened	Mar. 7th, 1821.
Hansen, William Brend	"	June 30th, 1823.
Fairburn, Elizabeth	"	Aug. 29th, 1821.
Kemp, Henry	"	Feb. 11th, 1821.
Kemp, Elizabeth	"	Mar. 3rd, 1823.
King, Holloway	Born	Feb. 21st, 1815.
King, William Spence	Christened	Feb. 27th, 1820.
King, J—— W——	"	1816.
King, Samuel Lee	"	Mar. 16th, 1822.
King, Joseph	"	Nov. 1st, 1823.
Kendall	(somewhere about six children)	
Shepherd (boy)	Born	July 26th, 1823.
Christened by Marsden Aug. 17th, 1823 (Strachan)		

The "Active," on her first trip, December 22nd, 1814, carried thirty-five passengers, among whom were (excluding natives), the Rev. Samuel Marsden and his friend John Liddiard Nicholas as visitors, and as permanent resident lay-men missionaries and assistants, Messrs. Wm. Hall and his wife Dinah, their son Willie, aged three (through ill-health all returned to Sydney in 1826), Thomas Kendall (who was eventually drowned off the Australian coast), his wife Jane, and his three sons, Thomas, Henry and William. John King, his wife Hannah and son Philip, who was a baby in arms, and not aged fifteen as records state, Mrs. Hannah Hansen (wife of Capt. Hansen of the "Active"), and her son Thomas; also three ticket-of-leave men, Walter Hall, Patrick Shaffery, and Richard Stockwell.

On August 28th, 1816, John Shergold, Sarah Mackenzie, and Joseph Rogers and wife are listed as arriving, and for the Mission, 1817, Messrs. Carlisle, wife and child, and Charles Gordon, wife and child. Butler enters the name George Gordon (not Charles) in the account books. Therein also appear John Kendall, Joseph Kendall and Susannah Kendall; these must have come with their parents in 1814.

Thos. Hansen (sen.) and his son's wife were also in New Zealand about this time.

On August 12th, 1819, James Kemp and wife, Francis Hall (who left in 1822), Rev. John Butler and wife, Hannah, son Samuel, and daughter Hannah, Rev. Marsden, also probably James Boyle, saltmaker, William Bean, carpenter, his son (who died the following year aged three), and William Fairburn, wife and family; the total arriving, including chiefs returning, being twenty-two persons.

In February, 1820, there arrived John Lee (sent back at a later date by the committee), and James Shepherd, also Thomas Foster, George Harrison, and Richard Russell, and George, a native brickmaker, who had learnt his trade at Parramatta. About this date, W. G. Puckey, wife and daughter were in New Zealand (probably arrived August 12th, 1819).

On February 2nd, 1822, Rev. Leigh and wife, and Mr. William White of the Methodist Society, arrived, also Mr. Cowell and wife. [Was this the Cowell who helped Te Rau-paraha to snare Te Maiharanui at Kaiapoi in 1830?] Other names appear in Luke Wade, and James Spencer.

Mr. Stack came in February, 1823, and on August 3rd, 1823, there arrived the Rev. Henry Williams, Mrs. Williams, and three children, several domestics, together with Rev. S. Marsden; and for the Methodist Mission, Mr. and Mrs. Turner and Mr. Hobbs.

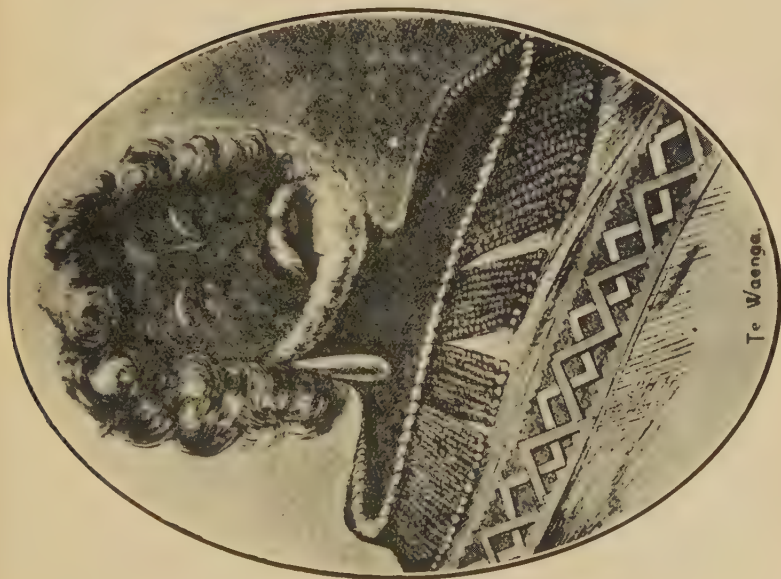
IN THE BAY OF ISLANDS.
NAMES OF THE PRINCIPAL CHIEFS.

NAME:	KNOWN AS:	RESIDENCE:
(1) Ko Heehec-o-Tottay	Tote Hihi-o-totahi Hihi (Williams) Te Ihi (P. Smith)	Te Keddee Keddee (Kerikeri)
(2) Ko Heenau	Hinau (Drummond)	Wedee Nakkee (Whirinaki)
(3) Ko Heevee	Evee (Cruise) Iwi Tahī	Tyhomī (Taiaimai)
(4) Ko Hengi (Killed Korora-reka 1830)	Hengi (Williams)	Mongonewee (Takou?) (Mongonui)
(5) Ko Hoodoo-roa	Ehoodoo (Cruise) Ururoa (W'ms and Smith) Ahuoodoo (Leigh) Ahududu (Turner)	Te Keddee Keddee (Wangaroa?) (Kerikeri)
(6) Ko Keera	Okeeda (Cruise) Pakeeda (Hall) Okita (Drummond) Kira (P. Smith) Son of Tareha	Mattowdee (Matauri) (Cavalles?)
(7) Ko Kookoopā	Kukupā (P. Smith)	Wypou
(8) Ko Kyhoo		Weedee Nakkee (Whirinaki)
(9) Ko Kynga-dooa	Not Hongi's brother who died 1815 Kaingarua (C. Kemp)	Koohoodē-annake (Kohuruānaki)
(10) Ko Kytarra	Kaiterra (Cruise) Kaitara Son of Pomare (P. Smith)	Tyhamī (Taiaimai)
(11) Ko Mattangee	Matangi (P. Smith) Chief of Waima Son of Whare-Maru Matenga (C. Kemp)	Okaka (Oraka) (Upper Waihou)
(12) Ko Mattayheeka		Wytangee (Waitangi)
(13) Ko Moka	Moka (W'ms and Smith) Alias Kainga Mata Brother of Whare Rahi and Rewa	Te Keddee Keddee (Kerikeri)
(14) Ko Motoee	Matohee	Pyhea (Paihia)
(15) Ko Moroo		Wanga-tawha-tea



TAMATI WAKA NENE, Chief of Ngapuhi.

NAME:	KNOWN AS:	RESIDENCE:
(16) Ko Moodeewenōa	Muriwhenua Mowhena of Hoki- anga (Cruise)	Rangee-hoo (Rangihoua)
(17) Ko Moodeewye	Moodewye (Earle) Muriwai (Smith) Moodooi (Cruise) (Died from wounds 1828)	Hootakoora (Utakura)
(18) Ko Moodoo- pynga	Murupaenga (P. Smith) Born about 1760 (Killed 1826)	Kyparra (Kaipara)
(19) Ko Nay-nay	Nene (Earle) Whaka-nene (Wil- liams) Died 1871	Te Pappa (Te Papa)
(20) Ko Ngawday	Ngaure (P. Smith) Killed at sea, White Island, 1831.	Kyhechee (Kaihiki)
(21) Ko Pattoohonay	Patuone (Earle, Smith & W'sms) Eruera Maihi Patuone Died 1872, aged 108 (P. Smith)	Te Pappa (Te Papa)
(22) Ko Pomarree	Pomare (Williams) Pomarree (Cruise) Whetoi (P. Smith) Killed about 1826 at Waikato	Mattawee (Matawi)
(23) Ko Po-roa	Poru (Cruise) Paru (Yate) died of phthisis, 1829 Parore-Te-Awha (?) (P. Smith) Younger brother of Hihi-o-Totahi	Wangatawhatea (Ngaitewaki Tribe?)
(24) Ko Ra	Ti Raha (?) (P. Smith) Son of Papa who was massacred at Roto- rua, 1822 Rawa (Leigh) Hara, chief of Ohai- awai	Wanga-roa
(25) Ko Rewha	Rowa (Cruise) Rivers (Earle) Rewa (Williams) Riwhi or Manu (P. Smith) Not Rewha Rewha of Waikato, who was killed in 1826	Te Keddee Keddee (Kerikeri)



Te Waenga.



Patuene.

High Priest of Hokianga River entrance.

NAME:	KNOWN AS:	RESIDENCE:
(26) Ko Rookoo-rookoo	Ruky Ruky (Earle)	Knucklepoint Adoodoo (Oruru)
(27) Ko Shawrakkee	Hauraki Our ally, killed at Waikare, 1845 (?)	Pyatye (Kerikeri) (Paiatai)
(28) Ko Shongee-Heeka	Hongi-hika Hongi (Cruise, Earle and Williams) Born 1777 (Gudgeon) Died from wounds, 1828	Te Keddee Keddee (Kerikeri)
(29) Ko Shopay		Tahkoo (Takou)
(30) Ko Shottay	Akaeigh (Earle) Hotaiwa of Manga- kahia (?)	Pookaynewee (Pakanae) (Pukenui)
(31) Ko Toh'kee	Hiki (of Williams) Te Heke (of P. Smith)	Tyhami (Tai-a-mai)
(32) Ko Toh'oho	Taoho (P. Smith)	Kyparra-Roroa (Kaipara)
(33) Ko Toh'rayha	Tarrea (Cruise) Tarcha (Williams) Tariah (Earle) Tareha-Ngakuti (Smith) (An enormous man)	Mango-Newee (Born 1780) and of Kaihu
(34) Ko Tawywye	Tawaewae (P. Smith)	Mattowee (Matowi)
(35) Ko Tangee-to-doodoo	Tangi-te-ruru	Wykatto (Waikato)
(36) Ko Taweero	Te Waero (?) (P. Smith) (Killed at Mototawa, 1822)	Tyhami (Taiaimai)
(37) Ko Tawtaddee		Te Kooa Kooa (Kawa Kawa)
(38) Ko Toenga	Te Waenga (?) (High Priest)	Weedea (Wiria)
(39) Ko Toreetoonooa	Toretumua (P. Smith)	Toh'wy-mattee (North Waimate)
(40) Ko Towuhee	Tohi Tapu (Williams) of Paihia Towi (Cruise)	Te Weddee Wedee
(41) Ko Warree-mo-kiki	Wharetomakia (?) (P. Smith) Wharemokiki (Killed at sea, 1831)	Rangeehoo
(42) Ko Wohwee		Mootooroa (Mouturoa)
(43) Ko Warree-pork	Wharepork (Earle) Wharepoaka (Smith & Wms.)	Rangee Hoo

NAME:	KNOWN AS:	RESIDENCE:
(44) Ko Wettohee	Whetoi or Pomare (Probably son of Pomare)	Mattawee (Matawi)
(45) Ko Weeteedooa	Witirua	North Cape
(46) Ko Weeveea	Wevere (Cruise) Weveah (Hall) Whiwhia (P. Smith) Waitea (Drummond) (Elder brother of Tetoro)	Wykaddee (Waikare)
(47) Ko Wydooa	Wairua (P. Smith) (Nephew of Hongi)	Rangehoo (Rangihoo)
(48) Ko Wydooa	Waidua (Cruise)	Mattowdee (Matauri)
(49) Ko Te Ahhee	Hae Hae (Leigh) Ahee Ahee (C.M.S.) (Died 1832)	Pyhea (Paihia)
(50) Ko Te Ahheetoo	E'I'Too (Leigh)	Weedeca (Wiria)
(51) Ko Te Hay		Tyhami (Taiaimai)
(52) Ko Te Hoodde-o-kunna	Gunna (Cruise) Anodeo Gunna (Leigh) Turi-o-kuna (P. Smith)	Te Uriti (?) Rangehoo (Pookay-howda)
(53) Ko Te Hoohoo		Pukenui (Pakanae)
(54) Ko Te Kannawha	Te Kanawa (P. Smith) Killed by Hongi	Wykatto (Waikato)
(55) Ko Te Kahwekka	Te Kaweka	(Monga-mooka) Te Waittee
(56) Ko Te Kayha	Te Kaiha	Mangakahea
(57) Ko Te Kokekoe	Te Koikoi (Williams) (Died 1829) (Smith)	Kiddee-Kokay
(58) Ko Te Kokee	Tekokee (Cruise) Te Koki (P. Smith) De Kookie (Earle) (Died 1829)	Pyhea (Paihia)
(59) Ko Te Kopiddee	.	Te Waraw
(60) Ko Te Korra-korra	Kro Kro (Cruise) Koro Koro (Williams) Karo Karo (P. Smith) (Born about 1760, killed 1823)	Wangaroa (Wangaroa)
(61) Ko Te Koa-shoa	A northern chief of the name was slain at Kaiapoi, S.I., in 1828 with Te Pehi	Weddee Nakee (Whirinaki)

and many others.

NAME:	KNOWN AS:	RESIDENCE:
(62) Ko Te Kykoomoo	Kaikumu	Te Keddee Keddee (Kerikeri)
(63) Ko Te Ky-whiwah	Kaipiha (?) of Whangarei (Smith)	Wytangee (Waitangi)
(64) Ko Te Mongitee	Son of Hengi Te Manga (?) aged 90 in 1877 Mango (Williams)	Mownganewee (Monganui)
(65) Ko Te Moko	Moco (Hall)	Wytangee (Waitangi)
(66) Ko Te Morenga	Timoranga (Cruise) Tomorenga (Wil- liams) Chief of Taiamai Brother of Perihika, who died 1820.	Okoorā (Okura)
(67) Ko Te Nana	Tinana of Kapua (?) Tenaana (Williams) Te Nana (Nicholas)	Te Kiddee Kiddee (Kerikeri)
(68) Ko Te Payree	Te Pari (P. Smith) Chief of Ngatipo Tepperre (Cruise)	Wanga-roa (Wangaroa)
(69) Ko Te Pohee	Tepuhi (P. Smith) Tippooi (Cruise)	Wanga-roa (Wangaroa)
(70) Ko Te Rakow	Nephew of Whareumu	Range-hoo (Rangi-Hou)
(71) Ko Te Rangee	Te Rangi (Brother of Koro- koro)	Paroa
(72) Ko Te Ta-onewee	Te Taunui, Chief of Otakura (Brett 382) Tetony (Cruise) (Our ally in 1845)	Shoke Anga (Oraka) (Hokianga)
(73) Ko Te Ta-onga		Weedeea (Wiria)
(74) Ko Te Tawha- mahooay		Korora-reka (Koro Rareka)
(75) Ko Te Arra	Te Ara Tara (P. Smith) (Died Dec., 1825) George Ahera (Turner)	Wanga-roa (Wangaroa) (Kaimimi River)
(76) Ko Te Toddoo	Born about 1775 (P. Smith) Te Toru (brother of Whiwhia Tetoro (Cruise and Earle)	Wykaddi (Waikare)



TITORE, a Bay of Islands Chief.

NAME:	KNOWN AS:	RESIDENCE:
(77) Ko Te Toolay"	Titore (Williams) Titore or Takiri (P. Smith) (Killed 1838)	Korora-rekka (Koro Rareka)
(78) Ko Te Wahha		Weedeenakkee (Whirinaki)
(79) Ko Te Warreow- nownee	Whareoneone	Manga-kohoa
(80) Ko Te Warree- hoomoo	King George (Cruise) Whareumu (W'ms & Smith) Shulitea (Earle) (Killed 1828) (Brother of Kinikini)	Kororareka
(81) Ko Te Warre- newee	Wharenui (Rewarded by committee in N.Z. for humane treatment of prisoners)	Te Keddee Keddee
(82) Ko Te Warre- pappa	Ngapuhi leader Wharepapa (P. Smith)	Te Takou (Takou)
(83) Ko Te Watta	Wata (Yate)	Te Akau (Takau)
(84) Ko Te Werra	Kaiteke (P. Smith) Te Wera (P. Smith) Shourakkee (Marsden)	Pyatye (near Keri Keri) (Went to East Coast to live, Gisborne)
(85) Ko Te Wyro	Henry Waru (?) (P. Smith) or Te Waero of Ngapuhi [Killed at Rotorua, 1822 (?)]	Te Keddee Keddee (Kerikeri)

A large number of these names appear in works dealing with the natives of that period, and can be traced. It is difficult to understand the omission of others who were personally well known to Mr. Butler. Possibly they were of inferior rank, for some called chiefs by one writer are called servants by another. This list was evidently compiled soon after his arrival in England, either from memory or from notes in his possession.

Yates refers to Paitaro of Manga Kaua Kaua, Kaheke of Kaikohe, and Atua Haere of the same locality.

Earle in his 1827 visit to New Zealand, mentions Kiney Kiney as brother of King George (Whareumu), Punga Punga and Arangy Tooker; the last two being referred to as Pango and Rangitukia by Williams.

Atoi of Matowe, related to George (otherwise Te Ara chief of Wangaroa); perhaps he was Whetoi, alias Pomare.

Te Kukihi of Kawa Kawa, who may be Tekoki of Paihia.

Wharerahi, chief of Paroa, re-christened Hori Kingi.

Kekeao, chief of Ahuahu.

Moetara, chief of Pakanae.

Rev. W. Williams, "Christianity Among the New Zealanders," among others, names:—

Kaha Kaha (son of Hengi), Pana Kareao, Waharoa, Paerata, Tama, and Poti, Whaare, Ripi (son of Hongi), aged 15 in 1820, called Repero by Cruise, and Ripiro by P. Smith.

Mr. Percy Smith has several names of fighting chiefs who, unless they possess the not infrequent alias, partly the result of an unwritten language, are unmentioned in this list.

Perehico (Cruise), brother of Evee, died in 1820, discarded his name and took an island name.

Wyacaddy (Cruise), youngest brother of Koro Koro.

Benny (Cruise), or Kaipō, uncle to Koro Koro, born about 1750, killed in action 1823.

Cruise mentions Tooi (alias Tupaea, died October 17th, 1824.)

Keevee Keevee (known as Kivy Kivy by Earle), Shungie of North Cape, Cowerapopo, Towretta, Tetatta and Hinaki; last three names of Thames.

From this latter district, Williams mentions:—

Terohou, Rukuata, Tekupenga; and from Waikato:—

Te Whero Whero and his brother, Te Kati; Whare Kawa.

The following are possibly Butler's first translations.—

THE LORD'S PRAYER.

- (1) A karra! A Pa! e dunga, e te rangee,
Toa Ingoa wyscho ke a tabboo,
- (2) Hiree Mi quoi tou rangitiera tanga, hiree mi,
- (3) Kea rongo attoo te wenooa nei ke tou mayhanga mi,
paynei me te rangee ka rongo;
- (4) Mo taynei Ra, to matou tinno oranga mo matou,
- (5) (a) Wakka warree warree quoi to matou nei mahhee
keeno, paynei okei ke to matou warree warree nga ke te
mahhee keeno o ratou, kea matou.
- (6) Kawa matou a wanga ke te keeno; wayhaya matou i te
keeno. Na! He a quoi te Rangateera tanga, ke a quoi
te kahha; ke a quoi te wakka pipi, I heenei a ——— po
noa. Kea pono.

TA CREED.

Ka waka pono ow na ke ta Atua ko ta matua taboo waka ara ara oke, nanu i anga ta Rangi, ma te wenooa.

Ka waka pono Au na ke a Jesus Christ, ta tamaete nake nake o te Atua, na, ko to tato Atua;

Kooa to ra oke ea e ta Wydooa Atua, Ka Wānau ia Mary a Wyine taka kau, kooa maroo ea Pontius Pilate, Kooa crucified, a; ka mate;

Kooa ote ta tangoo, kooa ake ea kedaro ke ta po; na, kooa ara ea e ta mate, e ta ra toroo oke; na, kooa kake ra oke ke roonga ki ta Range.

A, a noho ano ia ki ta renga renga matou e ta Atua, ta matau teboo waka ara ara;

No reda oki ea a aere myae, a waka wa ki nga maa ora, ke nga maa mate;

Kawaka pono au na ke ta Wydooa Atua.

Ki ta anga gnatu o nga tangata ka toa ke ta Atua;

Ke ta py o nga tangata ka anga (atu) ke ta Atua, ke ta o ke anga my o ta rongo ke nga tangata shara, ke ta aranga ka toa tonga o ta tangata, ke ta orange ka toa tanga oke, ake, ake, ake. Amen.

A hoonga, no ta Tamaete no ta Atua. A to mato matooa teboo, a noho ana ki ta range; ke a taboo to ingoa ra Ma waka mau ta rongo o nga tangata katoa ia koe, ma waka rete oke ta anga o nga tangata o ta wanooa ke to wakaro, ma ta range ka rete.

Ma omy ano aena, a ty orange ma mato.

A shea my ra ta rongo ke a mato, ma mato ano oke o ohea ana ta rongo ke nga tangata, a keno ana ke a mato.

Ka ara ae na mato ke ta waka pake pakenga o ta Wydooa keno, waka ora ra mato e ta keno; nau ano oke ta tangata katoa, ma ta kaha, ma ta he he, amooa a;

Ake, ake, ake,

Amen.

A PRAYER.

(1) A Jehovah! A Atua newee quoi, na 'au te mahhinga katoa tanga ke dunga ke te rangee, ke darro ke te wenooa.

(2) A Atua pi quoi ke te tangata. Na' au ra okee e waka-tupoo ai te tangata, na' au ra okee tona teenana, me tona wydooa.

- (3) Na au ra okee te ki, na' au ra okee te wye, na' au ra okee te maya whakka kahoo.
- (4) Na au ra okee to matou Toopoonā, A tangata pi ra okee Hea, e tana whakka—toopoonā ya quoi a ngakau pi ra okee tona ngakau, a ngakau rangee madeeay.
- (5) Away! koa warree warree ra oke to matou Toopoonā ke te pi, koa keeno, koa keeno tona ngakau ke a quoi, koa mahooay tona keeno ke roto ke tona hoo-dee, kohea ra oke to matou nei keeno ke te ngakau, kohea to matou hayhanga.
- (6) Whakka pi mi quoi ke a matou. Hoo-dee mi tou Wydooa a whakka mannawha tanga mo matou, ke a kahha ai matou ke te mahhe pi. Whakka rerree attoo matou te ngakau pohoo-dee; tongowea mi te ngakau maramma, whakka rerree attoo te ngakau keeno: tongo mea mi te wakaro pi; whakka rerree attoo te korayro keeno, tongo wea mi te korayro pi, whakka rerree attoo te mahhee kenno, tongo wea mi te mahinga pi, kia pi tonoo ai to matou nei wakaro, me te korayro okee, me te mahhinga oke Kia Ora.
- (7) Teehakkee mi quoi kia matou ke to po, ke to ao. Whakka rongo attoo matou ke to mahhanga mi, ke roto ke a Jesus Christ taynei Heenoe tanga, kia pono.

Whakka rerree attoo te korayro keeno tonga wea mi te korayro pi, whakka rerree attoo te mahhee keeno tonga wea mi te mahhinga pi ke a pi.

Tanga kea pono.

A PRAYER TO BE USED BEFORE REPEATING THE TEN COMMANDMENTS.

A Atooa neu newee! A kittay mi enna ra okee quoi ke roto ke te ngakau, ki te Heengangarro o nga tangata katoa; oreerewha a tahhee maya e ngarro ya quoi, Hoo-dee mi quoi tou Wydooa, a wakka inannowha-tanga mo matou, ke a pi ai te wakkaro o matou nei ngakau kia tikka ai, kia tikka tonoo to matou nei arroha ke a quoi; ki a wakka pai tonoo attoo matou ke tou Ingoa tabboo. Ke roto kea Jesus Christ taynei Heenoe tanga, ke a pono.

THE TEN COMMANDMENTS.

Na Jehovah aynei tononga e tono mi ai ki te Tangata.

- (1) Na, awa a attooa kay mo'ou ko au annake tou Atua. A Jehovah, arroha mi quoi ke a matou, kea pi ai to matou nei ngakau, ke a rongo attoo matou ke tou tononga mi nei.
- (2) Awa ra okee quoi a wakiro ke te pappa a deetenga Atua. A deetenga ra okee ke tay tahhe maya ki dunga ke te rangee, ke darro ke wenooa okee, ke darro ke te moana e kou te wenoo. Awa ra okee quoi a titteero attoo, a tangee (puremoo) attoo ke aynei maya. Ko'au ra okee ko tou Atua okee, ko te Atua too poto ra okee au.
- Ka whakka too atoo au tokoo diddee ke nga tammaneekee e te kieno a nga Madua ti noa attoo ke nga hoodee o nga tangata whakka keenoo ke au. Na! a pi enna ra okee au ke te manno o nga tangata ka roha ka rongo.
- (3) Awa ra okee quoi a tonga tonga noa ke tou rayo te ingoa o tou Atua. Aquorree te Atua a payna, a pi Hea ke te tangata tonga noa ke tona ingoa.
- (4) Kea mahayra ra okee quoi ke te whakka pi ke te Ra Tabbo. A honna nga Ra a mahhee ai quoi kea otee ai tou mohhinga katoa tonga. A Ra Tabboo ra okee te Ra Wittoo, na tou Atua ra okee, Awa ra okee quoi a mahhee e taynei ra—Ko quoi, ko tou-tamitee, ko tou tammaheenee, ko tou pononga tane, ko tou pononga waheenee, me 'ou karaddee okee, me te tangata kay okee, a nohho anno ke roto ke tou kahinga. Na! A honno nga Ra e te mahhinga katoa tanga o te rangee, o te wenooa, o te moana, me nga maya katoa e tay Atua. A nohho madeeay anno ra oke Hea e te ra Wittoo, kohea te ra Wittoo, nana e pi ai, e tabboo ai.
- (5) Kea pi attoo quoi ke tou madua, ke tou madua waheenee ke a whakka newee ai, mo te roa ra okee o tou nohhowanga ke te wenooa nei, na te Atua e tookoo mai ke ya quoi.
- (6) Awa ra okee quoi a pattoo noa ke te tangata.
- (7) Awa ra okee quoi a pooremoo kai.
- (8) Awa ra okee quoi a tyhi. ,
- (9) Awa ra okee quoi a whakka tekka noa, te korayro. ra nei, te mahhinga ra nei, o to shoa.
- (10) Awa ra okee quoi a heehanga ke te warree o tou shoa, awa ra okee quoi a heehanga ke te waheenee o tou shoa, ke tona pononga tane ra nei ke tona pononga waheenee, ra nei, ke tana karaddee wawahhea ra nei, ke tona karaddee ma tanganga ra nei ke ana maya katoa.

THE TEN COMMANDMENTS as printed at Paihia, New Zealand in 1840, showing the alteration from the phonetics to present orthography:—

Turi 1. Aua ra ki a koe etahi Atua ke atu ki mua i a hau.

Ture 2. Aua hoki koe e hanga i tetahi wakapakoko mou, i tetahi ritenga o tera i runga i te rangi, i raro i te wenua, i roto i te wai i raro o te wenua. Aua hoki koe e koropiko ki a ratou; aua i mahi mo ratou; na, ko a hau a Ihowa ko tou Atua, he Atua tupato, a e wai ana i nga hara a nga matua ki nga tamariki ki te toru ki te wa o nga wakatupuranga o ratou e kino ana ki au: a ka atawaitia e au nga mano e aroha ana ki au, e wakarite ana i aku ture.

Ture 3. Aua hoki te Ingoa o Ihowa tou Atua e waka huatia noatia; ekore hoki e meinga e Ihowa he tangata tika te tangata e wakahua noa ana i tona Ingoa.

Ture 4. Kia mahara ki te ra hapati, kia tapu; eono nga ra e mahi ai koe, a mahia katoatia tau mahi; na, ko te ra witu te hapati o Ihowa tou Atua. Aua ra e mahia tetahi mahi i taua ra, e koe, e tou tamaiti, e tou tamahine e tou pononga tane me tou pononga wahine, e ou kararehe me tou manuwiri i roto i au tatau. Eono hoki nga ra i hanga ai e Ihowa, te rangi, te wenua, te moana me nga mea katoa o roto; a okioki ana i te ra witu; na reira i waka-paingia ai te ra hapati e Ihowa, a wakatapua ana.

Ture 5. E rongo ra koe ki tou matua tane, ki tou matua wahine, kia roa ai tou noho i te wenua e ho mai ana ki a koe e Ihowa tou Atua.

Ture 6. Aua koe e patu.

Ture 7. Aua koe e puremu.

Ture 8. Aua koe e tahae.

Ture 9. Aua tou hoa e korerotia tekatia.

Ture 10. Aua koe e hiahia ki te ware o tou hoa; aua ano hoki koe e hiahia ki te wahine o tou hoa, ki tona pononga tane, ki tona pononga wahine, ki tona okiha, ki tona kaihe, ki tetahi ranei o nga mea o tou hoa.

CHAPTER XI.

MARCH 3rd, 1824.—Sent to Mr. Marsden, as under, for New Zealand:—

Nine reports, fourteen halves.
One box, Rev. H. Williams.
One parcel, ditto.
Two parcels, Mr. John King.
One parcel, Mr. William Hall.
Two for Rangi Hoo.
Two for Kiddee Kiddee.

MARCH 12th:—

Revd. Rd. Hill, 170lbs potatoes.
Mr. Samuel Butler, 112lbs „

N.S.W.—REMARKS BY JOHN BUTLER. 1824.

THURSDAY, FEBRUARY 5th.—Mr. Marsden sent for me this morning to converse about the natives, and giving me advice, etc., etc.

Took the New Zealanders wholly under my charge this day, to instruct them. Heard them read, pray, and exercised them by way of question and answer.

FRIDAY, 6th. — Writing and teaching the New Zealanders.

SATURDAY, 7th.—Teaching the natives in the morning; in the afternoon, went to look at a piece of land belonging to Revd. Mr. Marsden, for the purpose of erecting the native institution, and for the instruction of missionaries' children.

SUNDAY, 8th. — Attended Sunday School morning and evening. Divine Service in the evening with the natives.

MONDAY, 9th.—This morning Mr. Marsden sent for me to his house, and gave me instructions concerning the clearing of the land for the Institution. Went with the natives over to the land, and set them to work.

10th and 11th.—At work with the natives felling trees and brushwood, etc., etc.

12th.—At home, learning native language.

13th and 14th.—At work with the natives, clearing land, etc., etc.

15th. — Attended Sunday School morning and evening. Divine Service with the natives.

16th, 17th, 18th.—At the farm with the natives.

19th.—Went up to Mr. Marsden's in the morning about natives' clothing. Writing native language, and hearing lessons.

Remainder of the week writing and attending to the natives.

SUNDAY, FEBRUARY 22nd. — Attended the Sunday School, and Divine Service home.

FEBRUARY 23rd, 24th, 25th, 26th, 27th.—At the farm belonging to the Institution. Went with Mr. Marsden to Hawkesbury Farm, to South Creek, etc., etc.

28th.—Teaching the natives, etc., etc.

SUNDAY, 29th.—Divine Service and Sunday School.

MONDAY, MARCH 1st, 2nd, 3rd.—Working the ground for potatoes at the Institution. Bought seven cwts., three quarters potatoes for eating, and planting, at 4/9 per cwt.

FRIDAY, 5th.—This morning, Tywanga came to bid us good-bye. He is returning to N.Zd. in company with Mr. Clark and Mrs. Clark, in a French ship named "La Coquille." I made him a present of the following articles: one grindstone, one hammer, one handkerchief, one comb, a quantity of fish-hooks, soap, one bag, one waistcoat, one coat, one saw, and two hoes. He cried very much when he left our house.

I have been with the natives planting potatoes these two days past, and sowing beans, etc., etc., on the ground belonging to the Institution.

SATURDAY, 6th.—Employed at home.

SUNDAY, 7th. — Attended the Sunday School morning and afternoon.

8th.—Went down to Sydney on business, and returned in the evening.

9th.—Went over to the Institution, and set out the fence between the factory wall and the ditch.

10th. — Attended to native instruction in the morning; afternoon, at the Institution, fencing.

MARCH 11th. — This morning, Mr. Jackson, the stonemason, came to my house to give me an account of lime, etc., etc. Mr. Jackson is the person employed by Mr. Marsden to do the stone work of the Institution for the New Zealanders. He informed me this morning, in the language of surprise, that Mr. Marsden had given the carpenter's work to a man named Charles ———, one of the most drunken, and in other respects the most detestable character in this colony. Mr. Jackson, who is a very sober, steady man, expressed his feeling in the following manner:

“ Mr. Butler,” said he, “ I am surprised that Mr. Marsden should engage such a man as that to do the carpenter's work of this building. I am at a loss to assign a reason for his thus acting. I have recommended good men, and several respectable, honest tradesmen have applied for the job, and how he can prefer this Sabbath-breaker, this profane wretch, is really wonderful. If I was called before a magistrate this day, I would, yes, I would, say that this man is one of the most drunken blackguards in this country, and is now at a public house below, dead drunk.”

I told Mr. Jackson that Mr. Marsden did not consult me in any of his plans or operations, and therefore I could do nothing.

He answered, “ If I had anything to do in it, or were I Mr. Marsden, I should have looked out for, and given the erection of such a building to a steady, respectable man, and not to one who will, as soon as he gets the money, not only get drunk, swear and fight, but entice all, or as many of the work-people as he can, to be partakers with him in his evil deeds! ! ! ”

This being the Fair Day at Parramatta, there are many people drunk, up and down the streets.

Mr. Marsden was at Walker's, the publican, almost all the forepart of the day, and caused the New Zealanders to dance for the diversion of the gentlemen. The Society will, of course, consider this a very worthy deed for so great a character to perform.

In the afternoon I went to Balkham Hill, six miles from Parramatta, to visit a gentleman who has been ill some time; spent about an hour with him in the best manner. Took my little daughter with me, and she was much delighted with ride, etc., etc.

SUNDAY, MARCH 14th.—Attended Divine Service morning and evening, etc., etc.

15th.—Went to Government House to see His Excellency Sir Thos. Brisbane, and was most kindly received by His Excellency.

16th.—Went to Sydney to see Major Goulbourn to ask for a grant of land for my son, Saml. Butler; was kindly received, and ordered to write to him on the subject.

17th.—Went to the Native Institution with the natives in the morning; afternoon, writing.

THURSDAY, 18th.—Went to Sydney with Mr. Lawry to see Mr. Thompson about my cabin, and to make a memorial to Frederick Goulbourn, Esq., for a grant for Samuel Butler; returned in the evening.

FRIDAY, MARCH 19th.—Instructed the natives in their lessons, and then went with them to the Institution to burn off the timber, etc., etc.

SATURDAY, 20th.—Instructing the natives in the morning; writing in the afternoon.

I am truly sorry to hear from Mr. Jackson that Mr. Marsden (according to his statement) employed the worst of characters to do the carpenter's work of the Institution.

This morning the bell announced the death of Mr. McDougale, the gentleman I went to visit last week. He was very serious about eternal things, and I hope he has entered that rest which remaineth for the people of God.

APRIL 3rd, SATURDAY. — During the last fortnight, Mrs. Butler has been very ill, insomuch that her life was despaired of several days; but blessed be God she is now pronounced out of danger, and I hope will soon be perfectly restored.

The native boys under my care go on exceeding well, and attend to instruction as much as can be expected.

MONDAY, APRIL 5th.—This morning Mr. Jackson, the stone mason, came to our house complaining of Mr. Marsden's hard usage to him. He had been to Mr. Marsden to get some

money to assist him in carrying forward the building of the New Zealand Institution, he being a poor man, and not being able to complete such an undertaking without receiving part of the money as work was carried on. Mr. Marsden, he said, brought him a paper to sign whereon it was required that he, Mr. Jackson, should take half of the sum for the erection of the Institution in meat, to be forwarded by Mr. Marsden out of his own herd. To this Mr. Jackson would not agree, at which Mr. Marsden was very angry, and told Jackson that he should leave off, and that he would settle with him for what he had done, and get someone else to finish it.

Jackson complained of this (and I think very justly) as a hardship, because he had laid out all the ready money he had, and put himself to great expense in the purchase of a pair of bullocks, harness and cart, together with other things especially for this purpose; "But," said he, "to attempt to reason with Mr. Marsden is like attempting to plead with a mad bull.

This is the language of all his domestics (at least all that I have conversed with).

Mr. Marsden's clerk, Mr. Kenyon, who it appears has served Mr. Marsden faithfully for these nine years last past, came to my place to tell me his grief concerning his family affairs, and Mr. Marsden's general carriage toward him. He also complained of Mr. Marsden's growing more and more oppressive every year. "I am afraid, totally afraid," said he, "to speak to him upon any subject. And when I am compelled to go to him in a way of duty, or to give him any information respecting matters concerning the church, he is ready to snap my nose off. Not long ago," said he, "my master married a couple, and the bridegroom gave me a five pound note for a present, and the sexton a present of four dollars; and the last Sacrament Sunday, Mr. Marsden quarrelled with me in the vestry just before Divine Service, about it, and used very hard language, and demanded three pounds out of the five given to me at the wedding, alluded to above, as his fees; but I refused," said Kenyon, "to give it up till I had written to the parties to know if his statements were correct. At this Mr. Marsden got into a great passion, and told me to write at my peril about any such thing. When church was over, I consulted my friend about it, and he advised me by all means to write, and know the truth as soon as possible. This I accordingly did, and found to my satisfaction that what I received was intended for me. Mr. Mars-

den has since found out that I wrote, and he has given me a good scolding for so doing. But," said he, " Mr. Butler, what could I do? Was there not a cause? "

APRIL 7th.—Went down to Sydney on business, and returned in the evening.

APRIL 8th.—At home attending to my affairs.

FRIDAY, 9th.—At home preparing for my voyage.

10th.—Employed in writing a sermon.

SUNDAY, 11th.—This morning Revd. Mr. Marsden sent an invitation for me and Mrs. B. and child to dine with the family. After Divine Service we went to Mr. Marsden's, partook of a family dinner, and returned to church. After service, we went back to Mr. Marsden's to tea, and stopped to family worship in the evening.

MONDAY, 12th.—This morning Mr. Marsden sent for me to know if I was going home. I informed him I was.

Afternoon, I went to the Institution to see how the carpenters got on with their work.

13th and 14th.—Employed in instructing the natives, etc., etc.

15th.—This morning I went to Government House and took Samuel with me. His Excellency received us very kindly, and gave Samuel the occupation of three hundred acres of land, and further promised him his countenance and support. I thanked His Excellency very kindly, and we returned.

GOOD FRIDAY, 16th. — Attended Divine Service at church in the morning; Wesleyan Chapel in the evening.

17th.—Went to Sydney on business, and returned in the evening.

EASTER DAY, 18th.—Attended Divine Service and the Holy Sacrament.

19th.—Instructing the natives, etc., etc. I was quite surprised to find a box of medicines and several letters from our friends in England, sent down from Mr. Marsden's. These letters must have been in his possession more than two years. Is not this another proof of Mr. Marsden's negligence?

20th, 21st.—At home instructing the natives, and other business.

2nd.—Spent the fore part of the day at home. Went to dine with Revd. Mr. Lawry.

23rd.—Went to Sydney on business, and returned on Saturday morning.

SUNDAY, 25th.—Attended Divine Service morning and evening.

26th.—Writing New Zealand language.

27th. — Mr. and Mrs. Hayward, Tabeitean missionaries, dined at our house.

28th.—Mr. and Mrs. Carvosso dined at our house.

29th.—Mr. Hayward came to spend an hour or two in missionary conversation, etc., etc. Mr. H. informed me that it is his intention to return to Tahiti by the first opportunity.

30th.—At home writing the native language.

SATURDAY, MAY 1st. — At home writing native language.

SUNDAY, 2nd.—Attended Divine Service morning and evening.

MONDAY, 3rd.—At home all the day. Went to Government House in the morning; took with me Madu and Shou. His Excellency was much pleased with their behaviour, and promised to give them a suit of clothes each. His Excellency also informed me that he was about to issue a proclamation, to prevent the outrages committed by the whalers and other ships touching their shores.

TUESDAY, 4th.—Went to Sydney on business, and returned in the evening.

I saw at Sydney Capt. Anderson, of the “*Harriett*,” whaler, who touched at Bay of Islands in December last. He has four New Zealanders on board as seamen. He also gave me some desultory account of the settlement at the Bay.

WEDNESDAY, MAY 5th.—This morning I went over to the Institution to see how they were getting on with the building. Mr. Jackson, the architect, informed me that he had been very ill used by Mr. Marsden on Monday morning, and in this wise: Mr. Marsden last week killed a bullock, and Mr. Jackson took the half of it to oblige Mr. Marsden, who again sent for him on Monday morning, saying he was going to kill another this week, and wanted him to take the half as before.

Mr. Jackson said he was quite willing to take it, but wished to be informed the price of what he had had.

Mr. Marsden ordered him to go to Jones's, the butcher, and inquire the price he charged. "And whatever Jones charges," said he, "you must pay me."

To this Jackson objected, saying that he was to have what meat he took from him at the store price, which was known to all men, being put in the paper weekly. Moreover, Jackson stated to Mr. Marsden that Mr. Lawson, a gentleman for whom he had done a great deal of work, never thought of charging him more than the store price, as stated in the paper.

"This, Sir," said he, "is a just price, and I am not willing to pay any more." Jackson further said to Mr. Marsden, "Sir, had I known how you would have served me, I would never have had anything to do with the building. I expected to be treated with kindness and justice by you, as a Divine, but I was never treated so ill by a man of the world as I have been by you; and I have reason to be sorry for having to do with you or your concerns. I am an honest man, and wish to bring my family up in honesty, and the fear of God; but you would hinder me from this by keeping back what is my due. I never was shuffled about in this sort of way by any other man, much more a clergyman."

But Mr. Marsden would not hearken to anything, and told Jackson he would have no more of his meat.

"Now, when I consider these things," said Jackson, "what am I, Mr. Butler, to think of his preaching?"

I would here observe that Mr. Marsden informed me that he wished Jackson to take half the value of work in meat at the store price. But in this case, the poor man would be a great loser, much more than if he was to give the retail price charged by the butcher; in this case he would lose one third of the value of the whole.

I must here remark that in consequence of Mr. Marsden's treatment of Jackson, and employing such a drunken character to do the wood work, everything about the building has been done in a shameful manner; the whole of it has been condemned by two artists, and a part of it is to be pulled down. The wood work is done very badly, and a great deal of bad timber put in. It is truly grievous to see how things are carried on. It is a pity, a great pity, that a fund of charity should be thus squandered to no purpose.

THURSDAY, 6th MAY.—At home instructing the natives and writing New Zealand language. In the evening I received

a letter from Mr. Marsden, who laid things to my charge which I knew not.

THURSDAY EVENING.—My natives went up to Mr. Marsden to inform him of their determination to go to England with me. Mr. Marsden was very angry with them, and said they must not go on any account. The natives' reply was, "We love Mr. Butler and mother, and wish to go with them." Mr. Marsden then asked them if they did not like Port Jackson. They replied, "No, this land is no good for the New Zealand men. New Zealand men all die. You bury our countrymen all the same as (karache) a beast; you no cry, nor pray, when you bury New Zealand man! Pakeha die, plenty karakia; New Zealand man die, no karakia!" That is, when white people die, there are many prayers said; but when a New Zealander dies, there is no prayer offered for him, but he is buried like a beast—without ceremony.

"Mr. Butler go back to New Zealand, very good; no Mr. Butler go back New Zealand, very bad. No New Zealand man stop at Port Jackson; go back, go back. . . . By and by Mr. Butler come back to New Zealand, (kapai), good; No Mr. Butler come back, (ka pouri te ngakau) the heart will be distressed for him."

These and many other things the natives said, to express their esteem for us, and their aversions to Mr. Marsden's proceedings.

In the evening went to chapel.

FRIDAY, 7th.—This day I have been at home, writing native language, etc., and this morning I heard of the arrival of the "Brothers," Capt. Moltey. I immediately set off for Sydney, and found Mr. Davis and family all well, also Mr. Charles Davis, by whom also I received several letters. The vessel has had a good passage.

SUNDAY, 9th.—At home all day, reading and writing.

MONDAY, 10th.—Went over to the Institution to see the building, and how the mechanics go on.

TUESDAY, 11th.—Packing up for England, and other business.

WEDNESDAY, 12th.—Left Parramatta to go on board the "Midas," for England; got all our things on board safe. The ship is not likely to sail for a few days, but we are permitted to remain on board.

13th, 14th.—Getting my things put in order, and making my cabin as comfortable as possible.

Copy of Mr. Marsden's letter—verbatim—sent to me on board the "Midas," 17th May, the day we were to sail.

(Note:—The covering gives the date as May 14th.)

Sailed PARRAMATTA,

May 14th, 1824.

Rev. Sir,

Shortly after you left Parramatta on the 12th inst., I was informed that you sent for Daniel Jackson, the stonemason, to your house, who is doing the stone work at the Seminary for me, and questioned him relative to the mode in which I payed him for his labour, and requested him to go down with you to Sydney, and to state in the secretary's office a conversation you had had with him on the same subject some time before. Jackson refused to accompany you well knowing that he had nothing to allege against me. You then laid a quantity of papers before him, which you wished him to sign. He requested you to read what you wanted him to sign before he put his name to the papers. When you had read what you thought proper, Jackson objected to sign the documents, being convinced you wanted those papers signed by him for the purpose of doing me an injury. I may here observe, if your intention had been fair and honest, and you only wished to know how I did pay Jackson, to prevent the Society from being cheated, you had no occasion to have asked him, because I had told you repeatedly that I was to pay Jackson in dollars; but as money was very scarce at the present time, I had spoken to Jackson and wished him to take from Jones, the butcher's, what animal food he wanted for his own private use, and for which he would be charged the price paid by the commissary, which is fourpence per pound, and the butchers' price is sixpence per pound, which would be a saving to Jackson of twopence per pound, and at the same time an accommodation to me, as Jones the butcher generally took what sheep I could spare, and I could settle Jackson's account with Jones. As to my paying Jackson in anything but dollars and animal food, nothing of the kind was ever proposed by me; as a proof of this assertion, he received nothing but dollars from me, and animal food from Jones. I have paid him two hundred dollars on account, and he may have received about £6 in meat from the butcher.

The buildings are only about four feet high as yet, so I think he has been pretty well paid for his work as far as he has gone. I had told you that Jackson was a rogue, and required to be well looked after. Tho' he is a rogue, he is too wise to be taken in by a stranger. From the character I had given him, you might think he might answer your purpose, but you never were more mistaken. I do most sincerely regret that you should so far forget what is due to your rank in society as to tamper with convicts, and trust your character in their keeping. I may ask you, not as a minister of the Gospel, not as a Christian, but as an honest man, what your private action was in asking Jackson to accompany you to the secretary's office to make statements there, and when he declined, to urge him to sign papers privately in your own house, with a view to defame my reputation?

When I determined upon building the Seminary, (as it was then mutually agreed between us that you should remain at Parramatta until communications were received from home), I informed you what agreement I had made with the different mechanics, viz., the carpenter was to receive £90 in dollars for his work, the lime-burner sevenpence per bushel for lime in dollars, and account of which you kept yourself, and what the timber was to be per hundred feet, etc., etc. I should have said nothing to you about those subjects had I not believed that you would give an eye to these men as soon as you could have been accommodated with the school room, which was to be completed first on your account.

I only mention these things to show that you did not send for Jackson to your house and question him to gain honest information. Because that I had given you without asking for, but for purposes I need not mention. Do not suppose that I am under any apprehension that either you or the whole colony can injure me in any serious way. If you or five hundred convicts were to swear that I had committed murder, their oaths would not convict me of this crime, if no murder had been committed; nor will the Society believe that I have cheated them, until I call upon them for the payment of the buildings, and I am sure I shall not call upon the Committee for a shilling until the buildings are completed; and therefore there is no occasion for you to anticipate a crime that may never be committed. Allow me to ask you whom I have defrauded? Have I defrauded you, or have I defrauded any other of the missionaries or the Society in any one thing? You know well I can have no intention to do this.

COPY OF MR. MARSDEN'S LETTER TO J. BUTLER.

The copy taken by Butler ends here, as this was all that Butler intended to deal with in the affidavits which follow. Again we have been fortunate, per kindness of the "Hocken" Library, in obtaining Marsden's version of the continuation, taken by himself for the purpose of sending it somewhere, as the postscript leads us to draw the inference. Butler took the little Maori half-caste to England with him, and this may have misled Capt. Thompson.

According to Mr. Marsden's copy, the letter continues as follows:—

Let me recall to your recollection a few past events which ought to have taught you a useful lesson for the remainder of your days, and made you more cautious in what you did and said. When you visited N.S. Wales in the "Westmorland," you offered to me the greatest personal insults in the presence of several gentlemen in Mr. Campbell's office, as the Society's agent, and you wrote to me at that time the most scandalous letters. How did I act on the receipt of those letters? (*He paid up!*) Did I not earnestly advise you to withdraw them, as they were public letters (?) and would injure you and not me? That I did not want to take any advantage of what you had done? You spurned my advice, and told me you would send them home to the Society. You did so, and the consequence was the Society authorised me to remove you from the Mission.

Did I exercise that authority? No! on the contrary, I informed you it was my wish to bury in oblivion all that had passed. Many unpleasant differences took place between us both before and the last time I was at New Zealand, relative to the concerns of the Mission, from your obstinate determination to follow your own way, whatever the consequences might be. (*Butler was sent out as Superintendent!*)

These differences were very painful to me, as well as to your colleagues, but I could not remedy them without removing you from the Island—a measure I was unwilling to resort to, unless dire necessity compelled me. When you were accused of drunkenness on board the “Dragon,” I advised you to retire quietly from the Mission, and not urge an investigation into your conduct. I was convinced in my own mind from the state I saw you in the last time you were on board the “Brampton,” before she was wrecked, that your guilt would be proved, which would only tend to injure you more in the public opinion.

You rejected this advice and demanded an inquiry, when the charge was proved to the satisfaction of your colleagues. I had now only one line of conduct which I could pursue, which was to remove you from New Zealand. (*Once again, please note—Butler was leaving New Zealand before the charge was made!*) On our arrival in N. S. Wales, I advised you to be retired, and avoid all the rocks upon which you had formerly struck. You assured me you would, but I soon found that you had fallen into your former errors and were taking steps to ruin yourself more and more in the opinion of your superiors, and tho’ I never saw what you wrote to the Society, yet from what I heard, I am satisfied you will have done yourself no good. When I heard that you were consulting with the gentlemen of the law, I recommended you not to take this step, for you could obtain no relief from them. Your case was too plain and clear; no legal argument could make it any better. Still you persevered, and you will see what the end will be. When you had made up your mind to return to England, I was informed you meant to take one of the New Zealanders with you, and that you had engaged a passage for him; this I could not allow, and asked you if you had taken a passage for one. You replied you had not. I was not quite satisfied until I had seen Capt. Thompson, who informed me you had. I informed you what Capt. Thompson said. You still wished to convince me you had no such intention. About three weeks after, I was informed that you had taken passage for two. I then wrote to you. You still persisted that you had not. I wrote to Capt. Thompson on this subject, and afterwards saw him in Sydney, and he told me you had. Either you or Capt. Thompson must be wilfully incorrect. The two young New Zealanders told me they were going with you, and I have a very good opinion of their veracity. I told them that they could not go, with which they will be satisfied if left to themselves. I hope you will reflect on what I have said, and not rush headlong into more trouble and disgrace.

With respect to you, as agent of the Society, I must readily admit I have erred, but it has not been on the side of severity. Be assured if I am condemned by the Society when you arrive in London, I shall be condemned for not removing you from the Mission before this period; and for this I deserve to be condemned, for I have not done my duty. I wish you may see into your errors, and be duly affected by them, before you go too far; if you have any friends, take care and keep them, because you have occasion for them all. If you have any

charges to allege against me, let me have them before you leave the colony, for they can be much better settled here than in London. If we could not settle them all, we might some, so you and your mutual friends might have less trouble.

I am, Reverend Sir,

Your most obedt., humble servant,

SAMUEL MARSDEN.

P.S.—I should not have deemed it necessary to have sent you this letter, if Mr. Butler had made that use of it I intended, which was to caution him against his improper conduct. If he is quiet, you may burn it.

Is this a letter replete with humility, “ meek and lowly in heart,” devoid of “ unruly temper, pride, passion, jealousy ” ? The postscript explains the letter. Butler is going to England, Dr. Lang and Rev. Lawry are going with him.

Lawry, who has known Butler both in New Zealand and New South Wales, and Lang, who wrote, referring to Marsden’s love of the “ cat,” and the brutality of his floggings:

“ In some countries the clergy are often accused of taking the fleece, but New South Wales is the only country I have heard of in which they are openly allowed under a Royal Commission to take the hide also, or flay the flock alive.”

Butler denies the whole circumstance, and having no authority to book passages for two Maoris, would be unlikely to do so at his own expense. Marsden, knowing the sentiment of the C.M.S. expressed concerning the visit of Hongi and Waikato, appears to be putting in a “shot” at Butler under cover of this, and “ burn it.”

“ CUMBERLAND.”

(To wit)

JOHN BUTLER of PARRAMATTA in the TERRITORY of NEW SOUTH WALES, CLERK, maketh oath and saith that one DANIEL JACKSON of PARRAMATTA, stonemason, who this deponent hath been informed is a PRISONER of the CROWN, on the nineteenth day of May inst. appeared before DONALD McLEAN, ESQUIRE, one of HIS MAJESTY’S JUSTICES’ ASSIGNEES to keep the peace in and for the TERRITORY of NEW SOUTH WALES, and then and therefore his corporal oath which he then and there took upon the HOLY EVANGELISTS of ALMIGHTY GOD deposed and swore: THAT he this DEPONENT either on the morning of the tenth, eleventh, or twelfth, before eight o’clock on one of these mornings, the said DANIEL JACKSON having been sent for, as the aforesaid DANIEL JACKSON deposed on the

evening previous to one of those days by this deponent or by his son SAMUEL BUTLER, attended at this deponent's house, that he this deponent did then and there produce before the said DANIEL JACKSON a quantity of papers which this deponent requested the said DANIEL JACKSON to sign and that he the said DANIEL JACKSON swore he this deponent read part of the contents thereof, which were said to be relating to a contract between him the said DANIEL JACKSON and the REVEREND SAMUEL MARSDEN for the erection of an institution for the CHURCH MISSIONARY SOCIETY, and as to the mode of payment for such erection, the manner of which payment the said JACKSON swore to me, one half in DOLLARS and the remaining part in property or to that effect. That he the said DANIEL JACKSON saw in the papers which this deponent produced to him (as he deposed) that he the said SAMUEL MARSDEN was employing very improper characters in the MISSION at NEW ZEALAND and this deponent saith that that part of the letter written to him by the said SAMUEL MARSDEN which states that after this deponent had left Parramatta he was informed that this DEPONENT had sent for the said DANIEL JACKSON to this DEPONENT'S HOUSE and questioned him relative to the mode in which he the said SAMUEL MARSDEN paid him for his labour, and requested him the said DANIEL JACKSON to go down with this DEPONENT to SYDNEY to the SECRETARY'S office there, and make statements tending to injure the character of the said SAMUEL MARSDEN, and that this DEPONENT then laid a quantity of papers before the said DANIEL JACKSON tending also to injure and defame the said SAMUEL MARSDEN in his character and reputation, which he this DEPONENT requested the said DANIEL JACKSON to SIGN, is false, and this DEPONENT saith that in confirmation thereof, he the said DANIEL JACKSON was never in his house on either the mornings of the tenth, eleventh or twelfth instants at the hour before mentioned, nor at any other hour of those days, save in the evening of TUESDAY the eleventh, when he came there to deliver a letter to this DEPONENT, which he requested him to take to ENGLAND with him, which letter was delivered to this DEPONENT, in the presence of MR. BEAN, MR. TUCKWELL and MR. WILLIAM SHELLEY, and immediately after delivering the same, he retired saying that he should have another to deliver to this DEPONENT before he left PARRAMATTA, which second letter was delivered to this DEPONENT in the PUBLIC STREET of PARRAMATTA on WEDNESDAY morning; and this DEPONENT further saith, that on MONDAY morning the tenth inst., he this DEPONENT received a message from the said SAMUEL MARSDEN requesting his attendance at his house, which this DEPONENT accordingly obeyed, and this DEPONENT was in company with the said SAMUEL MARSDEN till EIGHT O'CLOCK on that morning, and this DEPONENT saith that on the morning of the ELEVENTH instant he occupied his bed having on the previous day taken medicine, till nearly ten o'clock in the morning and that on WEDNESDAY morning this DEPONENT was in bed until called upon MR. BEAN and his apprentice, about the hour of half-past six o'clock, who both came for the purpose of

assisting this DEPONENT in packing, loading and removing his goods to SYDNEY, which occupied till near NINE O'CLOCK and that several other persons were also in this DEPONENT'S presence and company during the whole time, and this DEPONENT saith, that the room in which the said DANIEL JACKSON has sworn the papers were produced and read to him was occupied by a Mr. Charles during the whole night of TUESDAY the eleventh inst., and this DEPONENT further saith that he never did produce before the said DANIEL JACKSON, a quantity of, or any papers whatever, either on the morning of the tenth, eleventh, or twelfth instants, nor on any other morning nor at any other time, and this DEPONENT lastly saith, that being about to proceed to England all and every, his BOOKS, papers and writings were packed up on the morning of the eighth inst., and that they have never up to this time been unpacked.

SWORN AT PARRAMATTA

this 22nd day of May, 1824

“ CUMBERLAND.”

(To wit)

Hannah Butler of Parramatta in the Territory of New South Wales wife of the Reverend John Butler clerk, maketh oath and saith, that she knows Daniel Jackson a stone mason, and who as this deponent has been informed is a prisoner of the Crown, that she this deponent was at the residence in Parramatta during the whole of the days of Sunday, Monday, Tuesday, and up to the hour of nearly ten o'clock on Wednesday morning, the ninth, tenth, eleventh, and twelfth instants, that the said Daniel Jackson was not at Mr. Butler's house during any part of those days, save in the evening of Tuesday the eleventh instant, when he came there to deliver a letter into his Mr. Butler's charge for England but immediately went away. And this deponent saith that from the circumstance of this deponent not leaving the house at any time during the above days, except on the Wednesday as aforesaid, it would be impossible for the said Daniel Jackson to have been there without her knowledge.

SWORN AT PARRAMATTA

the 22nd day of May, 1824.

SATURDAY, 15th.—Remained on board, writing, etc., etc.

16th. — Went to Sydney Church and heard Revd. Mr. Cooper; in the evening I went to the Wesleyan Chapel.

MONDAY, 17th.—Went on shore to dine with Revd. Mr. Leigh.

SATURDAY, JULY 10th. — This morning our anchors were weighed, and we set sail for Old England. The “Midas” fired a royal salute and was answered by one of the vessels

lying in the harbour. We left the heads precisely at twelve noon, with a fine breeze, which continued until evening.

During our eight weeks' stay at Sydney, we have been exercised by various trials, but none have been more poignant than the repeated promises made by the owners that the "Midas" should sail on a given day; but when the time came, it was put off again and again; and after Mr. Leely purchased the ship and cargo, he ordered the cargo to be taken out and examined, which took three weeks to accomplish; and after the cargo was replaced, several days were appointed, and put off, to the great annoyance of the passengers; but to none more so than ourselves, as we were without any settled lodgings. Nevertheless, we have to bless God for the many favours which we received from pious friends, but from Mr. and Mrs. Hyndes in particular. We lodged in their house upwards of three weeks, and they treated us with every possible mark of attention, and on our departure they accompanied us to the vessel, and came twice to see us after we had embarked for England.

SUNDAY, JULY 11th, 1824.—Mrs. Butler and self very poorly; our little daughter very ill indeed. Prayers on deck performed by Revd. Mr. Lawry.

MONDAY, JULY 12th.—Little Hannah very ill; myself rather better; Mrs. Butler much better. Fair wind.

TUESDAY, 13th.—This morning about four o'clock, the wind came on to blow from the southward by westward, the course we wanted to steer. (We left Sydney 10th July).

The wind gradually increased the whole of Wednesday, and in the evening the mighty billows rolled with awful grandeur, the howling tempest thundered through the rigging, and our straining vessel, sometimes ascending the rolling mountains, at others dreadfully plunging into the gulf below, was at times covered with foaming waters; this frightful scene brought painful forebodings to my mind of some misfortune and disaster near at hand. Unto Him, therefore, Who "holdeth the winds in His fist" and the seas "in the hollow of His hand," Who saith to the raging elements, "Be still!" and a calm immediately ensues, I turned mine eyes and said: "O Almighty Eternal Lord God! wisdom and goodness, mercy and truth are Thine; Thou hast directed us in Thy holy Word to call upon Thee in the time of trouble, promising to hear the prayers of Thy people, and to deliver them out of their distress; O hear the prayer of Thy servant

and send us help from Thy holy place; the floods go over our heads, and the stormy billows compass us about; my soul fainteth for very trouble, yet do I turn my eyes toward the mercy seat of Thy holy temple. O stretch out Thine omnipotent arm to save us, lest the deep swallow us up, and we sink like lead in the mighty waters; be merciful unto us, O Lord, pardon all our sins through Christ, and increase our faith in Thy promised help in this our time of need; and give us perfect resignation to Thy holy will. If we die, O receive us into the mansions of the blessed, where storms and tempests can no more assail; and if we are spared, may the remainder of our days be devoted to Thy service, in showing forth Thy praise, in speaking of Thy marvellous acts, and in telling out Thy wondrous works with gladness. O Lord hear, O Lord answer my prayer, for Thy mercy endureth for ever. Amen."

I spent the night in reading, meditation, and ejaculatory prayer. The tempest continued to rage with increased fury, and during the night many heavy seas passed over our decks; indeed, the waves were continually breaking over one part or other of the vessel, and the water frequently ran through my cabin in streams.

About half past four in the morning, as I was sitting reading my Bible, a tremendous sea struck the ship on the weather bow, and placed her nearly on her beam ends, carried away her bulwarks on both sides down to the deck, broke away the cable chain stopper, carried away the lower studding sail booms, washed overboard twenty-three hogs, drowned twenty-four sheep in the long boat, two goats, one kangaroo, one emu; one case belonging to Revd. Mr. Lawry, many casks of water and other things were swept into the billowing deep. The boat also that was covered over the sheep was stove in at the same time.

Down below the confusion may be better conceived than expressed. The candle by which I was reading (which was fastened very securely) was put out; my table and other things gave way; the bulk head was broken in, the sea came pouring down, so that I scarcely knew whether I was in the sea or not.

At this instant the second officer came flying down below, praying the chief officer to go on deck instantly, as he believed the vessel would go down except something could instantly be done. At this time the waters were pouring down into the cabins; boxes, chairs and other things rolling from



From a painting by John Butler, depicting the storm at sea.

side to side; as for the steward's pantry, I never saw worse breakage: dishes, spoons, cups, saucers, pots, kettles and everything were thrown down and driven into the great cabin, and kept knocking about under foot. Added to this, it was with the greatest difficulty that any light could be kept in for any purpose.

However, by the mercy of God and the prompt measures of the captain, officers and crew, in starting all the water casks on deck, thereby easing the labour of the ship, and otherwise using their utmost skill, we were graciously preserved from a watery grave.

The captain ordered the vessel before the wind, and we were carried onward by the raging tempest amidst the mighty waters. In a few hours the gale abated, but the vessel had received so much damage, that it became necessary to return to Sydney for repairs and supplies. No lives were lost, as the vessel was lying to, and the watch on deck were aft.

The wind being fair, we now made rapid progress toward the place from whence we put out.

THURSDAY AND FRIDAY.—We made tolerable progress, and at half-past nine on the evening of Friday, the light-house on the south head appeared in sight, and we made the heads about twelve. There was a strong breeze blowing out of the harbour, and the vessel was obliged to work in; the pilot performed this part of the business in a masterly style, and we came to an anchor in Sydney Cove at nine o'clock on Saturday morning, July 17th, 1824.

Our clothes and bedding received so much damage in the storm that it became necessary to take everything on shore to wash, dry, etc., etc.

SUNDAY, 18th.—Went to the Asylum at nine in the morning to preach to the inmates. Returned home and went to chapel. Afternoon, went to the hospital to visit the sick, and to chapel in the evening.

MONDAY, JULY 19th, 1824.—Getting the remainder of my goods on shore, and examined them as to damage. I found them very wet with sea water, and they would inevitably have spoiled had we continued our voyage.

TUESDAY, 20th.—Occupied in getting my things a little in order.

WEDNESDAY, 21st.—This morning I was sent for by Mr. Marsden, to go on board the ship “Pocklington” to obtain the names of several sailors who were witness to an act of cruelty committed upon a New Zealander named Kotaha, by Mr. Brown, the chief officer of the said vessel. This cruelty was performed by beating the native with a rope, and striking him upon the head with a large stick. The men readily consented to appear in court to testify as to what they had seen relative to the outrage alluded to.

I next attended the police magistrate, D. Wentworth, Esq., accompanied by the native and Revd. Saml. Leigh.

Mr. Marsden, who alleged the complaint, did not attend in time to have the matter investigated, and it was put off till to-morrow.

THURSDAY, 22nd.—Attended the court as interpreter for the New Zealander, Kotaha. The magistrate patiently heard all that he had to allege against the officer of the “Pocklington,” but they one and all took the part of the officer, and the magistrate was obliged to dismiss the complaint.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—Occupied in preparing my things for embarkation.

SUNDAY, JULY 25th.—Attended Divine Service, morning and afternoon. Mrs. Butler and I partook of the Holy Sacrament. In the evening went to chapel.

26th. — Wrote to Messrs. White, Hall, King, Kemp, and Shepherd, New Zealand.

SATURDAY, 31st.—Employed chiefly at home in reading, etc., etc.

SUNDAY, AUGUST 1st. — Attended Divine Service, morning and evening.

2nd, MONDAY MORNING.—Went to the vessel to see if it was nearly ready for sea.

Attended the monthly missionary prayer meeting, Princess Street Chapel.

3rd, TUESDAY. — Attended prayer meeting at Mr. Hynde’s.

4th, WEDNESDAY.—Went on board the “Midas” to prepare my cabin.

5th, THURSDAY.—Employed at home, etc.

6th, FRIDAY:—Attended the Criminal Court, to hear a trial between the crown and five of Mr. Hassell's men, for shooting three women, aborigines of New South Wales. It lasted the greater part of the day; but they were at length acquitted.

7th.—At home airing my clothes, etc.

8th, SUNDAY.—Attended Divine Service, morning and evening. Partook of the Holy Sacrament; found it a time of refreshing from the Lord.

MONDAY, AUGUST 9th.—This morning I went on board the "Midas" to learn when she would be ready for sea. Afternoon, at home; spent my time in reading, etc.

TUESDAY, 10th.—This morning I set off with Mr. Davis to Botany Bay. The country which we rode through was barren and sandy, yet in the barren wilderness we found sufficient to delight the eye and regale the fancy, so infinitely diversified are the works of nature, and calculated so exquisitely to please. We arrived at the top of the bay about eleven a.m., and we were not a little gratified with the beautiful prospect which presented itself to view. We were near the mouth of Cook's River, which meanders through the valleys, and empties itself into the bay. We also saw the spot where Capt'n. Cook first landed on these shores, and also George River, which is navigable for many miles for small craft.

There were many aborigines gathering oysters and catching fish. I asked one of the women who was cooking on the beach if she would roast me a few oysters, and she readily complied, and made them very nice. When I had eaten sufficient, I gave her some pence and a little piece of tobacco (of which they are very fond); she thanked me, and we left them.

The next thing we went to see was Mr. Lord's Blanket Factory, situated on the banks of the bay. Almost the whole routine of this business is performed by machinery, as also the grinding of grain into meal; at the same time, and after having gone through the building, etc., etc., we returned highly pleased with our journey.

In the evening myself and family attended prayer meeting at Mr. Hynde's.

AUGUST 11th.—This morning I went on board the "Midas" to know when she would be ready for sea.

AUGUST 18th, WEDNESDAY.—This morning the “Midas” resumed her voyage, and we got as far as the heads, when the wind became foul, and we came to an anchor within the heads.

AUGUST 19th.—We left the heads this morning at seven o’clock, with a fine breeze and a fine day.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—Fine weather.

SUNDAY, 22nd AUGUST.—The morning being very fine we had Divine Service on deck. Mr. Butler read prayers, Mr. Lang preached.

MONDAY, 23rd AUGUST.—The morning very wet and windy; the whole day continued very rough and stormy.

TUESDAY, 24th AUGUST.—Fine day and fair wind.

WEDNESDAY, 25th AUGUST. — Fine day and fair wind.

26th, 27th, 28th AUGUST.—Fine weather and fair wind.

SUNDAY, 29th.—Divine Service; Mr. Lawry preached, Mr. Butler read prayers.

AUGUST 30th, 31st. — Weather very stormy, but fair wind. Lat. 56-30; lon. 136 south.

WEDNESDAY, SEPTEMBER 1st.—This morning about four o’clock we made Bristow’s Island, lat. 50/30, L. 166. The land along the southern shore is very bold, but entirely barren; several waterfalls are to be seen descending from the mountains, and falling into the sea from considerable heights. I again spoke to Captn. Thompson about the leakage in my cabin, and he told me he would do no more to it, altho’ he knew it to be in a shocking state.

THURSDAY.—I went on shore with Mr. Lawry, and returned in the afternoon. Went up a river and saw Captn. Bristow’s hut, which he built when he discovered the island. I also saw a fine penguin and some wild celery, and the wild cabbage tree. The brushwood is very thick, and the ground spongy.

FRIDAY.—Went on shore and got some walking sticks. The weather came on so bad that I was obliged to remain on shore all night in the sealing gang’s huts. But the hut in which I went was cut off from the ship’s side and cast adrift to the mercy of the sea. We had some pancakes fried in the fat of the mutton-bird, and some albatross and mutton-bird for supper.

Mr. Lawry and a party went on shore, and they lost their boat, and were on the island all night. I sent a boat off in the morning to fetch them on board; they were very glad of such timely assistance.

SUNDAY, SEPTEMBER 5th, 1824.—Divine Service in the cabin. Mr. Butler read prayers; Mr. Lang read a sermon. "Be ye doers of the Word, and not hearers only."

MONDAY.—Attending to Tommy Toki, a New Zealander who was taken very ill. For a time he was quite deranged, but when the medicine began to operate, his senses returned.

TUESDAY, SEPTEMBER 7th, 1824.—This morning the weather abated, and the men began to weigh the anchor about nine o'clock, and in the afternoon we again set out to sea. When we arrived at this island, we met the "Elizabeth and Mary," schooner, going out of the harbour, having on board the seal skins which she came for. Capt. Worth put the schooner about and came into the harbour, and delivered the skins to the "Midas." He informed us that he had lately been at New Zealand, and felt sorry to inform us of the death of Capt. Dawson and his boat's crew, who were killed by the New Zealanders. Capt. Dawson commanded the schooner "Samuel," New South Wales.

FRIDAY MORNING, SEPTEMBER 10th.—The weather has been very stormy since we left the island, with sleet and hail, and cold winds.

The poor New Zealander, Tommy Toki, is somewhat better, but continues much indisposed. Last night a rumour was spread in the cabin that the ship's register was lost.

SATURDAY, SEPTEMBER 11th. — This morning I asked Capt. Thomson what water we were allowed for cabin use, and he informed me that we were out upon an allowance of five pints per day for cooking and drinking and everything, and two and a half for the children; and this information he gave me in a tone which betrayed something of enmity in his mind, for he answered me in a very surly manner. Fine weather and a fair wind.

SUNDAY, SEPTEMBER 12th. — Divine Service in the cabin; Mr. Lawry read prayers; Mr. Butler preached. Divine Service in the evening; Mr. Lang performed.

MONDAY, SEPTEMBER 13th.—This morning our water was served out, five pints to each person in the cabin, and five half-pints to the children. The allowance we find to be ex-

ceeding short, as it is only wine measure; this will readily appear when it is considered that it is intended to serve for washing, and waste, which is often a good deal on board ship, and for cooking meat, puddings and soup, etc. This sort of treatment we thing strange at the first setting of our voyage. If we had been to sea any time, and had experienced contrary winds, we should have been prepared to put up with any difficulties, but thus to set out is certainly too bad.

SEPTEMBER 14th.—This day we had a very short repast indeed for dinner: two poor ducks, and a very small leg of mutton—say about four pounds—for fifteen people, and servants to dine after them; no pudding, pies or soup, nor scarcely any vegetables!! The children find it exceeding hard for them, as their little stomachs are not prepared by age for digesting meat alone, or of being confined to hard biscuit to eat with it; indeed, the whole of the treatment on board this vessel is shameful. The captain suffers the cabin steward to abuse the passengers, and he doth not forbid him. Yesterday he abused Mrs. Butler at table at tea time, because she asked for a little more water in her tea, telling him it was too sweet. He replied: “Why, you think you are in a parlour in Sydney; you must put up with it, or go without.”

Mrs. Butler made no reply.

The little boy, Frank, has been ill for several days past, insomuch that we thought we should lose him; but through mercy he is better.

The weather is very fine, and the wind continues fair.

Tommy Toki, the New Zealander who has been very ill, is much better; we hope he will continue so.

WEDNESDAY, SEPTEMBER 15th.—The weather continues very fine, but the wind is unfavourable.

Frank, the little boy, is much better.

THURSDAY, SEPTEMBER 16th.—The day is very fine, but little wind, yet what is, is fair.

I rejoice that we have commenced evening service in Mr. Lawry's cabin at half past seven o'clock. Mr. Hall and Revd. Mr. Lang attend regularly.

FRIDAY, SEPTEMBER 17th.—The day very fine and the wind fair, tho' but little of it. Evening service; Mr. Hall read, Mr. Lawry prayed. No other passengers or any of the ship's crew attended, but Mr. Hall and Mr. Lang only.

SATURDAY, SEPTEMBER 18th.—Fair wind; fine day.

SUNDAY, 19th.—Divine Service in large cabin, morning and evening. Mr. Butler read prayers in the morning, Mr. Lawry preached. Evening, Mr. Butler preached.

The weather rainy, and strong breeze from the westward.

MONDAY, 20th.—The wind increased during the night, and this morning it blew a strong gale, with dark clouds and much rain.

TUESDAY, 21st.—The whole of yesterday was very uncomfortable indeed. The gale blew strong all the day, and in the evening the sea ran very high. The sea was continually coming over the vessel, in one part or other, all day long. In the evening we had a prayer meeting in my cabin.

In the night the wind suddenly shifted, and on account of the rain and thick darkness, the ship was taken aback, but no accident occurred save the splitting of the main top gallant sail; about midnight the wind blew very hard; the motion of the ship was very violent, the rain heavy, the darkness great, so that the scene became very dismal; but blessed be God for preserving mercy, we were brought to see the morning light in safety, when at the rising of the sun the wind abated, the clouds which had hung over us for several days were dispersed, and about noon the day became clear and a fine steady breeze directly aft.

At dinner I asked the steward for a little spirits and water, and was denied; also for a little wine, and was denied; not even a drop of water to be had.

WEDNESDAY, 22nd SEPTEMBER.—Fine day and fair wind.

THURSDAY, 23rd SEPTEMBER. — Fine day and fair wind.

FRIDAY, 24th SEPTEMBER.—Fine day and fair wind.

SATURDAY, 25th SEPTEMBER. — Fine day and fair wind.

Mrs. Butler has been very poorly for several days past. Mrs. Davis has been very poorly for several days past, and in other respects treated with much neglect by the steward and captain. During this week, one end of the dining table has been laid with a clean cloth, and the other with a very filthy one, the division being in the middle. The end to which the dirty cloth was put is the end where myself, Mrs. Butler

and child sit to eat. Many annoyances of a much worse nature we are obliged to put up with. It is of no use to complain, as the captain is not inclined to redress.

SUNDAY, SEPTEMBER 26th.—Mr. Lang preached in the morning; Mr. Lawry read prayers. In the evening, Mr. Lawry performed Divine Service.

MONDAY, SEPTEMBER 27th. — Foggy weather, light winds, but fair. Mrs. Marr taken very ill.

The steward this day denied me a little spirit for Mrs. Butler, who is very poorly with pain and cold in the bowels; and he behaved in the same way at dinner to all present.

This evening we have had public prayers in the large cabin; many of the sailors attended.

TUESDAY, SEPTEMBER 28th, and 29th and 30th.—The wind has been foul during these last three days, and rather uncomfortable withal. Several quarrels have taken place between the captain and the chief officer and the steward. The steward is perhaps one of the most foul-mouthed men alive! He has been known to say this week that he would make the passengers eat their own dung before they reached the end of the voyage. He has insulted me in every possible way he could. I have complained to the captain, but can get no redress. However, by the general complaint of the passengers and officers, he is at length turned out of his office, to the great satisfaction of all parties, except the captain, who leans to him in a manner unaccountable to anyone but himself and another single individual, whom he particularly favours.

THURSDAY, OCTOBER 1st.—The wind of the heavens to-day is fair, and the weather fine on deck, but below in the cabin it has been very foul. Much altercation has taken place about the steward, and many black looks from the captain have been manifested; we hope all will end well.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY, OCTOBER 2nd and 3rd.—The wind continues fair and the weather fine. I have been much in my cabin these two days preparing for the Sabbath. Notwithstanding all the broils which have taken place during the week, we have been enabled to perform prayers every night in the large cabin.

SUNDAY, OCTOBER 4th.—Fine day and a fair wind. Divine Service in the large cabin. Mr. Butler preached in the morning, Mr. Lang in the evening

MONDAY, OCTOBER 5th.—Fine day and a fair wind.

WEDNESDAY, THURSDAY, FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—I have been very poorly, not able to get out of the cabin. I caught cold, which caused much pain in my limbs. The weather has been very fine the whole of the week; but things in other respects have not been so favourable.

SUNDAY, 10th.—Mr. Lang preached in the morning, Mr. Butler in the evening.

OCTOBER 11th, 12th, 13th.—We had a fine breeze for these last three days. The captain still continues to act exceedingly improper to the passengers. Mr. Sherwin has lost some bottles of brandy out of a case in his cabin, and it is pretty clear that rogue of a steward has been guilty of the foul crime; yet the captain appears determined to justify him in spite of everything.

OCTOBER 14th.—Fine day and a fair wind; myself restored to health.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY, OCTOBER 15th, 16th.—We are now living much on salt provisions. Fine weather and fair wind.

SUNDAY, 17th.—Mr. Butler read prayers in the morning; Mr. Lang preached. Mr. Lawry preached in the evening.

MONDAY, OCTOBER 18th.—Dark day, but a fair wind. Myself and all in good health.

TUESDAY, OCTOBER 19th.—This day our water was again reduced to two quarts a man, and one quart for the children.

This day we had only one little piece of salt pork, and a small piece of salt beef, very lean.

This morning the sailors came aft and complained of their allowance of water. They remonstrated with the captain, but it was to no purpose; he spoke to them in the most surly manner, and ordered them forward, saying they should not have a drop more than two quarts a man a day. I understand their ration of food is also deducted in proportion. The men asked the captain for a greater ration in a very becoming manner, pleading their utter incapability to perform the ship's duty, with so little food and water. The captain then gave one of them a push in the chest, and threat-

ened him severely. The real fact is that the captain uses the crew and officers in a shameful manner.

The weather is very cold, thermometer 40. The wind is fair, and the breeze strong, and we are within about one hundred miles of Cape Horn.

WEDNESDAY, OCTOBER 20th. — This morning we spake the ship “Indispensable,” a whaler, off Cape Horn, lat. 57/40, lon. 66 west; but as we were sailing before a very heavy gale, very few words passed. The night has been exceedingly stormy, with snow and sleet, and which is frozen to the rigging and cordage, and being accompanied by the howling winds and darkened sky, the sea continually breaking over the vessel in one part or another, the rolling billows carrying me up to the heavens, and then rushing headlong into the gulf below, formed a scene awfully terrific and sublime. But this evening we have been enabled to meet and perform prayer in the large cabin; beseeching the God of heaven to hear, and protect on the perilous ocean.

Our cabin is in a very wet condition, and sufficient to give anyone their death of cold, but it is no use to speak about it.

THURSDAY, OCTOBER 21st.—This morning at seven o’clock a sail was espied, and as we were running directly before the wind, we soon came up with her; we found her to be the “Enterprise” of Lynn. She was bound for Valparaiso, but then lying to, on account of foul winds.

This morning Capt. Thompson came to me in a surly manner, charging Mrs. Butler with threatening him with an action to recover damages for maltreatment. We surely ought to have some recompense, as we have been exceedingly ill-used ever since we have been on board.

The weather is more moderate than it was yesterday, and the wind fair.

OCTOBER 22nd. — This morning the weather became very fine, and the wind continuing fair, we have made rapid progress. Thanks be to God for His mercy and goodness.

Things go on in a very curious manner in the vessel; much dissatisfaction prevails; there is much to contend with, and great wisdom is necessary to know how to act.

OCTOBER 23rd. — Moderate weather, but foul wind. Employed in preparing for the Sabbath.

OCTOBER 24th.—Divine Service in the large cabin; Mr. Butler performed in the morning; Mr. Lang in the evening. The weather continues moderate, the wind fair.

25th.—Weather moderate, the day rainy, the wind fair. All the passengers save one (Mr. Linney), and the ship's crew continue to enjoy generally good health, bless God for it.

SATURDAY, 30th OCTOBER. — This week has been a very good one, and we have much to be thankful for, as it respects the wind, weather and other mercies.

SUNDAY, OCTOBER 31st.—Mr. Butler read prayers, and Mr. Lawry preached.

SUNDAY EVENING.—Mr. Butler performed Divine Service. Saw an occasion to make some remarks on the levity manifested by some who should have known better.

NOVEMBER 1st, 2nd, 3rd, MONDAY, TUESDAY, WEDNESDAY.—Fair winds and fine weather. All on board in good health save one, a passenger named Linney. Mr. Hall and Mr. Butler have begun an evening exercise in Psalms only.

THURSDAY AND FRIDAY, 4th and 5th.—These two days have been very favourable, and we have much cause for thankfulness to God for His goodness.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—Fine weather and a fair wind.

WEDNESDAY, 10th.—Fine day and a fair wind. In the evening Mr. Lawry had some conversation with Mr. Iseley about our treatment as passengers. Our treatment has been shameful during the whole of our voyage to the present time; we have little else but salt provisions, and that even in a very short allowance and badly dressed. In the morning we get nothing save a little rum, mouldy biscuit, or a little hard salt beef, wild fowl salted, or a bit of salt pork, all fat, etc. For tea, a little mouldy biscuit and salt provisions.

THURSDAY, 11th. — The morning fine and the wind pretty fair. Mrs. Marr began to abuse Mrs. Lawry and all the clergy this morning at breakfast time, but her son rebuked her, and then she quarrelled with him, etc., etc., etc.

FRIDAY, SATURDAY AND SUNDAY. — Fine weather. Mr. Butler performed Divine Service on Sunday morning; Mr. Lang on Sunday evening.

NOVEMBER 20th, SATURDAY.—This week the weather has been very fine. Passengers and crew continue in good health, Linney and Mrs. Marr excepted.

NOVEMBER 21st, SUNDAY.—Divine Service on deck; Mr. B. read prayers; Mr. Lawry preached. In the evening Mr. Butler performed Divine Service.

MONDAY, TUESDAY, WEDNESDAY AND THURSDAY.—Lat. 22; heat 76 to 81 and 2. The weather very fine and a fair wind.

NOVEMBER 26th, FRIDAY.—Fair wind, fine weather. This afternoon the chief officer beat my little boy Frank. He struck in a savage manner, but the poor little fellow stood it well. He was playing with a small bit of rope which he picked off the deck, and the child was loth to give it up (it was only a strand), as he was amusing himself with it; and he seized it and took it from him, and then struck him.

NOVEMBER 27th.—Fine weather, and fair winds.

SUNDAY, 28th.—This day we altered our Sabbath, our time being twenty-three hours sooner than when we set out. Therefore, we made two Saturdays in this week, or rather two Sundays, so among the passengers: Service in the morning in Mr. Lawry's cabin; in the afternoon in the large cabin.

In the afternoon, as Mr. Wardle was sitting in the dining-room, Frank, poor little fellow, being thirsty, went and asked him for a drink, when, instead of giving the child some water, he gave him strong brandy and water, and the child never spoke afterwards for more than twelve hours. We were much alarmed, and exceedingly vexed, but in the circumstances we were obliged to pass over it without much ado.

NOVEMBER 28th, SUNDAY.—Mr. Butler read prayers on deck; Mr. Lang preached; in the evening, Mr. Lawry.

MONDAY, NOVEMBER 29th.—Fine breeze and a fair wind. In the afternoon we crossed the equinox, and about eight in the evening the god Neptune came on board to inquire after any new voyagers which might be on board, and promised to visit us on the morrow.

TUESDAY, NOVEMBER 30th.—This day we have been much amused by the appearance of Neptune and his retinue. There were several shaved in the usual manner, and much mirth enjoyed by the sailors.

DECEMBER 1st and 2nd. — Fine little breeze, but the weather is very hot. The cabins are very much so when shut up during the night.

FRIDAY AND SATURDAY.—Very hot, and our water being very short, we feel the effect of the weather considerably.

SUNDAY, DECEMBER 5th. — Mr. Butler read and preached in the morning; Mr. Lawry in the evening.

DECEMBER 6th to 18th.—Steady breezes.

19th.—Violent squalls.

DECEMBER 20th.—Made the island of Flores, bearing east eight or nine leagues.

DECEMBER 25th.—Spake the “Ninus,” of Dartmouth, bound to Oporto. Saw a large log of wood.

DECEMBER 27th.—At two p.m. spoke the “Heroe.”



CHAPTER XII.

Copy of a letter sent to the Mission House, January 14th, 1825.

To Danl. Coates, Esq.,

My Dear Sir,

I beg to apologise for not attending to your request sooner. I have been particularly busy for several days past in looking after my things. You desired that I would state in writing the reason of my leaving Parramatta, and also to name the little boy whom we redeemed from destruction, and whom we have brought over with us, and also to state my present views as to my future proceedings.

But before I say a word on either of these points, I cannot help reflecting on all that has passed during my residence in New Zealand.

The state in which I found the Mission on my arrival; the manner in which the missionaries were living, and bartering and trading, instead of doing good to the poor natives; the almost insurmountable difficulties of putting an end to this wicked and long-established practice; the opposition I had to encounter in various ways, both from the natives and Europeans.

When I consider the toils, pains, sufferings, labours, privations, etc., which my dear wife and myself had undergone to promote the objects of the Society, and the everlasting happiness of the heathen, and when I further consider what characters some of the present instruments are, and what the conduct of others has been, ever since they have been connected with the Society, I sometimes think we have been treated unkindly; not from any member of the Committee at home, for from them I have received every attention; but from their agent abroad.

I do sincerely hope and pray that all past differences may be buried in oblivion; may we learn to forgive each other as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven us.

If I have failed in doing all that the Committee have expected me to perform, or if I have offended in thought, word or deed, I earnestly crave forgiveness on the one hand, and on the other hand I beg permission to affirm that in singleness of heart and in persevering fidelity of action, both my wife and myself have done what we could.

With respect to the interesting little boy Frank, I hope the Society will immediately take him and place him in some school. Should the Lord spare his life, he may become an instrument of vast importance, under the divine blessing, to his countrymen in carrying home the glad tidings of salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ.

The epitome of this child's history lies in a few words. In the year 1821, Shungee (Hongi), and all the neighbouring tribes went to war at the River Thames, and cut off many of the people in the district to which this child belongs, among whom was the reputed father of this little boy. His mother was made a prisoner of war, and made a slave

for ever. Her life was spared because she was a fine woman. The chief therefore took her to wife. The child was spared at the earnest entreaties of his mother, and brought the distance of two hundred miles, tied up in a silk handkerchief marked F.H. to Kidi Kidi (Keri Keri), and was presented to Mrs. Butler, who redeemed him for two axes, and this saved the little creature from immediate death. The natives had thirty miles further to go to their residence, and they had determined to kill the infant and eat him for supper, if the missionaries had refused to take him in.

With respect to the New Zealand Institution now erecting at Parramatta, I beg to be silent (May God Almighty prosper the undertaking), yet I am ready to answer any questions the Committee may think proper to put. The native boys which came to Port Jackson with us (all of them except one) had been under my care and living in my family a long time in New Zealand. The inhabitants of Parramatta were much pleased with them, they being so much superior to any who had heretofore come to Port Jackson, in cleanliness and manners, in civil and religious knowledge. Several of them went with me to Government House, and Sir Thos. Brisbane was much pleased with their appearance and behaviour.

During my stay among them I endeavoured to bring them forward to the utmost of my power. Several of them constantly lived with us, and sometimes the whole of them. The most promising youth, Shou (Tiu), was ill some time, and was at length given up. Doctor Cooper said it was of no use to give him any more medicine, for he would die of the complaint. But Mrs. Butler watched over him with unremitting attention night and day, and administered every little comfort she thought would do him good, and by divine blessing he was restored to perfect health. I went to work daily with the natives at the Institution, clearing the brushwood, stumping of trees, etc., etc.; we broke up sixty rods of ground, planted it with potatoes, cabbages, plants and carrawances; the intention of which was to furnish the boys with vegetables, as soon as the building was tenable.

Mr. Marsden promised that I should have a man to fence, and garden, and plough, etc., and Mrs. Butler a woman to assist in cooking for the natives, but when I spoke to him about them, I found that he had altered his mind on this subject. Mr. Marsden also put this question to me, "Mr. Butler, do you not think you could learn the natives to manage a train of bullocks, that with your assistance and direction they might convey the stores from the quarry to the building?"

I answered, "Yes, sir, I think I can." But after Mr. Marsden was gone, I thought thereupon and wept. My health also was much decayed by diarrhoea, a complaint which I am subject to in the hot weather; I felt therefore persuaded in my own mind that if I attempted to remain in so confined a situation I should not live long.

This and many other circumstances press upon me the necessity of leaving this field of action. I praise God to raise up a more able instrument in my stead. I desire to assure the Committee that the cause which they have in hand, lies nearer to my heart than any other object whatsoever, and happy indeed should I be if I might be enabled to pave only one little stone in the universal Temple of Messiah. The cause is the cause of God; your work, the work of the Lord, and rather than attempt to hurt or hinder or injure it, I would suffer my unworthy name and character to be buried under calumny, slander and darkness

all the days of my life. I know "The time is short," the judge standeth at the door, "The Lord will shortly make known the counsels of all hearts. Then shall everyone receive according to his works."

As to my views of future usefulness, I beg to acquaint the Committee. [*The foregoing letter was among Butler's papers, and incomplete; we are therefore again indebted to the "Hocken" Library, viz.:*] that some of my friends advise me to obtain an interview with the Bishop of London, and endeavour to get a chaplainship in Van Dieman's Land.

I am quite sure there is great need of more means of grace. Up the country in N.S.W., I preached to an attentive congregation who had not heard a sermon for two years, [*Where was Marsden, as this was in his district?*] and I am told that in Van Dieman's Land the means are far less. It is my intention, therefore, in humble dependence on the Lord, to endeavour to accomplish this thing. If I succeed, well. If I do not succeed, well. I will wait the kind directing hand of my heavenly Father and say, "It is the Lord, let Him do what seemeth Him good." But should I be successful, I shall ever feel it a pleasure to exert myself in behalf of the Society's object in that ever-increasing colony; and I do think that I might be able to promote their interests, or rather the cause of God, several ways.

I do entreat the Committee, therefore, to put me in the right way of obtaining the object of my wishes.

Praying that the divine blessing may rest upon and prosper all your undertakings.

I remain,

Your faithful and devoted servant,

JOHN BUTLER.

P.S.—I shall feel very thankful if the Committee will settle my small accounts. But I am fearful I shall not have time to write them out, as I am ordered to the London dock by nine o'clock, and it is now past one in the morning, while I am finishing this hasty letter. Please to excuse this spontaneous scrawl, as I am fatigued and very poorly.

To the Revd. Basil Woodd.

No. 61, SNOW HILL,

February 2nd, 1825.

Dear Father Woodd.

In ruminating on all things that have passed in New Zealand and Port Jackson, I am led (like Job) to complain in bitterness of soul; I know it often happens that those are the best people whose characters have been most injured by slanders; as we usually find that to be the sweetest fruit that the birds have been pecking at. Besides what I have stated in my other letters, I could yet go a great length in detailing my grievance, but I will not. I do from my heart forgive everyone, where I have sustained an injury, and pray to be forgiven, where I have done any.

Here I would just observe that I have carefully read over the Society's Rules for their New Zealand Mission, which are both the law and the testimony of the missionary, and I cannot find that I have broken them in any one instance; but on the contrary I have closely

and attentively followed them. It has been the grief of my heart that the Society's Rules should be so little attended to, and their concerns managed in the manner they have been. If the agent of the Society had acted according to the instructions given to us in London, when we were about to embark for New Zealand, things would have been better and their Mission much more prosperous than it has been. I read in the instructions given us at our departure, "The Committee invite you to lay before them without hesitation your difficulties, sorrows, your hopes and your joy.

"They wish to maintain toward you the character of parents, and faithful friends. Be slow to listen to any accusations against your brethren; nor form your opinion of them, from those who are not influenced by religious principle. You know how often all manner of evil is spoken falsely against you; falsely for His Name's sake; and therefore should not act as if this were a new thing. Believe not tale-bearers; the words of tale-bearers are as wounds; a whisper separateth chief friends; remember our Lord's admonition: 'Judge not that ye be not judged.'"

Not doubting but that your Committee will assuredly act toward my family according to those heavenly maxims, I do anticipate a very favourable result from their deliberations. If I might be permitted, I could easily call to their recollection that it was not from any worldly motive, but from a sincere, longing desire for the salvation of the heathen, that I entered into the service of the Society; neither was it a mean situation which I left for this purpose; and which I filled for eight years with credit to myself, and satisfaction to my employers; and am now (blessed be God) as high in their estimation as at any former period.

After all, I wish it to be clearly understood, I do not wish to be continued in the service of the Society, without the assent, and the full consent of the Committee; yet I trust I may humbly presume, that the Committee will pay my passage home, and in their united wisdom and goodness, make some provision for my family, until an opportunity offers for me to obtain a competency in the sacred work unto which I have been set apart.

And now, dear Sir, what can I say more on this subject? I must leave it in your hands, and in the hands of our heavenly Father; praying that all things may work together for good, and unto His holy Name be assigned eternal praise and glory.

Mrs. Butler and our little daughter are quite ill with colds; the little New Zealand boy is quite healthy; they join with me in sincere regards to you and your dear family.

Rev'd. and dear Sir,
Very affectionately yours,
JOHN BUTLER.

3, Winkworth Place,
City Road,
LONDON,

3rd February, 1825.

Rev'd. Sir,

The Rev'd. John Butler wished me to accompany him to your

place to-morrow morning, but I am sorry for his sake that my departure to-morrow for Cornwall will prevent this visit.

I have seen Mr. Butler in Port Jackson, have visited him in his field of labour at the Kiddy Kiddy in New Zealand, and I have sailed with him more than twenty thousand miles; the result of my observations upon the missionary career and Christian conduct of this gentleman is, that he was one of the Society's best missionaries in New Zealand; and that he is most unquestionably a godly man.

Mr. Marsden's taking this missionary away from New Zealand, and allowing to remain there a fallen brother (——), has always appeared to us most strange. It is most people's opinion in New South Wales that the N.Z. Mission can never prosper, while Mr. M. has its management. I am aware that something has been prepared for the press on Mr. M.'s proceedings in that Mission, but I hope the abuses will cease, and that the publication of it will be relinquished.

Mr. B. I am sure has been treated ill. The Revd. Mr. Lang can give you much more valuable information on this subject.

I am, Revd. Sir,

Your most obt. and humble svt.,

(Signed) W. LAWRY, Wes. Miss.

Revd. Basil Woodd.

Date, after 1830.

In an address given to some large assembly in England, Butler states:

“ Our venerable president has informed me that the two New Zealand chiefs, Tooi and Teeteeree, once attended a bible meeting in this place— a circumstance remembered, I think, by many present, and perhaps it would afford a moment's gratification to hear of their subsequent life.

“ I and my colleagues sailed with them from London, England, in the ship “ Baring,” on December 15th, 1818. Our ship ran aground on the break-sand off the north foreland, and we were obliged to put back to Chatham for to repair the injuries sustained; we were there a fortnight, during which time Tooi was very ill, and manifested signs of true repentance.

“ When we arrived in New Zealand, we were obliged to go and reside with a tribe much more powerful than Tooi's or Teeteeree's people; otherwise we should have endangered their safety, and exposed them to immediate peril, to the immediate effects of a dreadful war. This circumstance prevented them from living with us, but we visited them as often as we had opportunity.

“ They often spake with much feeling of the many kindnesses conferred upon them by the good people in England, and with respect to Tooi especially, I think that those impressions were never wholly effaced, but continued in a measure until he died. Tooi has been dead some time.

“ The last time I saw Teeteeree, he was clad in his native costume, and working ground for potatoes. We entered into conversation, and he wept while we were talking over what he had seen and heard and received during his residence in your country. I believe he is still living.

“ With regard to the spot on which we fixed in order to commence our operations, I shall only observe that it was covered with brushwood, fern, etc., which we had to remove and clear away. There were no wells dug, no vineyards planted, no habitations erected, and the labour and difficulty of forming a new settlement, and erecting necessary buildings and habitations by a handful of missionaries in a heathen land, among savages and cannibals, can scarcely be conceived by them who know nothing of these things but by hearing of the ear.

To assist us in this arduous undertaking, we engaged as many native servants as we could supply with food, and during the whole of my residence among them, I seldom had less than fourteen, and generally more, who were clothed and fed, and instructed, and employed in felling timber, and sawing, fencing, agriculture, etc. But while they were thus employed, we had the most favourable opportunities of conveying the most important truths to their minds. And I am happy to learn, that some of them are still in the service of the Mission; but that which is gratifying beyond all is, several of them have embraced the Gospel, have been baptised into the Xtian faith, and are leading a Xtian and godly life.

“ Thus the seed sown in tears, is now growing up for the harvest.

“ While I was with them, we both prayed and sang hymns in the native language; this work has gone on seriatim, and I now hold in my hand a little book containing part chapters of the Old and New Testament, part of the Xtian Service, and Catechism, and some hymns, in New Zealand; so that now they may read in their own tongue the wonderful works of God.”

Butler finally winds up an excellent discourse: “ These works of faith, and labour, and love, shall give a fragrance to

your character, and like the rose send forth a sweet perfume, long after your bodies are laid in the dust."

In another very long peroration occurs: "I frankly acknowledge that I never learned the blessings of civilized life, and civilized society, but by their loss, till I was cooped up in a heathen land, and shut out from the ordinance of God." And again: "Having myself lived among savages and cannibals, it has been my lot to mark destruction painting her steps with gore, and slavery clanking her chains. I have heard the horrid yell of the war-whoop, and seen human beings sally forth, more fierce than the lion from his den, to slaughter each other, and to drink the blood while reeking from the heart of a fellow-creature, and afterwards to feed upon the flesh with a savage sanguinary delight." Again further on, "If you will permit, I shall now make a remark or two relative to the conduct and success of several of your missionaries abroad, with whom I have the happiness to be acquainted, viz.: Mr. Erskine, Mr. Leigh, Carvasso, Turner, White, Hutchinson, and others. I feel a sacred pleasure in bearing humble testimony to the piety, talent and industry and integrity of these servants of God, both in Van Dieman's Land, N.S. Wales and New Zealand; they have been indefatigable in their exertions, and rendered eminently useful work. They have sought the scattered flock in the woods of New Holland, and been as far as human penetration can go."

C.M. HOUSE,

June 25th, 1830.

Daniel Coates to Revd. J. Butler, enclosing £30, the half cost of Philip King's premium for indenture, and £10 9s 8d, amount laid out on his outfit, desiring Butler "to continue acting for Philip King;" stating the indentures are being forwarded, for Mr. Amis, the employer's, execution; that the boy had been to see his grandfather, and that Butler was to procure the lad's clothes, and impress upon him to look after them.

The remaining £30 is sent under cover date 31/1/1831, to be paid to Mr. Amis for apprenticeship of Philip King.

The last communication 10/10/1832, Daniel Coates to Butler, states: "You will be glad to learn that Philip King is quite well. He is at present on a visit to his grandfather in Oxfordshire, preparatory to returning to New Zealand, which

the Committee have thought advisable that he should do so by the earliest eligible opportunity. I enclose a bank post bill for £25 2s 0d. being the balance of your account of money expended in Philip King's behalf, and beg you to accept our cordial thanks for all your kind service on his behalf."

[The official records are evidently incorrect, as instead of Philip King being fifteen when he landed in New Zealand in 1814, his family state he was a baby in arms. He returned to New Zealand and took up land, and became clerk of the Court and interpreter at Waiuku. His son was William J. King, also of Waiuku (in 1901.)]

Earle, 1827, in his nine months' residence in New Zealand, writes:—

"The next day we received a visit from Mr. and Mrs. Butler, English people, who had taken up their residence here, for the purpose of trading, and we returned with them on shore, taking our female passengers with us, and leaving them in charge of Mrs. Butler."

This was at Pakanae, up the Hokianga River, whither Samuel and his wife and children had returned to from Parramatta; and where Samuel was drowned in 1836.

1828.—About this date the Revd. John Butler published through G. R. Gittore, of Bridgenorth, a well-bound edition of Psalms and hymns, "Abridged, arranged and adapted to Public Worship, selected from the best authors."

A few of our present day favourites appear therein.

17-11-1834. Samuel Butler writes to his father from Hokianga, New Zealand, acknowledging a letter just to hand, per the C.M. schooner, "Active." He states that Capt. Kent has settled in New Zealand, but that owing to low prices for flax, and high costs in N.Z. of procuring means of trade, pecuniary results are unsatisfactory.

He says: "What we used to get for an axe or a hoe, will now cost a couple of blankets, or what is equivalent, especially when we have to give £2 for a pair which would cost from 7/ to 10/- in London. . . . Times will not permit bread every day, and drinkables are quite out of the question." He writes warmly of the kindness of Mr. White, Superintendent of the Wesleyan Mission, now of Hokianga, erstwhile of Wan-

garoa. "The natives are so lazy, and having so much trade amongst them, they cannot be induced to exert themselves." He asks for school books for his children, as there are no schools locally, and says he went across to meet Capt. Brind at the Bay of Islands (a trip which takes from eight to nine days) to see if any had been sent out in answer to his last letter, and to his great disappointment found not even a letter.

He mentions having found Capt. Duff a cargo in four months, for a vessel two hundred tons greater than one which took nine months to fill by another agent. On arrival of the latter vessel in England, the ship and cargo were sold to cover expenses.

He records having met Messrs. King and Kemp of the Bay of Islands: that he purchased three hundred to four hundred acres on the Waima, joining the N.Z. Company's land, Herd's Point. He had also been acting as interpreter for a brig, the "Dorothy," Capt. Newbold, from England.

18-13-35. He again writes to his father (who at that time evidently contemplated returning to the colonies). S.B. states that there are now one hundred and twenty Europeans in the Hokianga, and several of them respectable families, and that his holding is about seven hundred acres. Continuing he writes:—

"Baron De Thierry has sent an official letter to New Zealand to say that he intends to bring an armed force to invade the country, and assume the authority of king over it, and has even gone so far as to offer some of the missionaries a salary, to act as magistrates under him. He says he purchased the rights of the country from Shunghie through his agent, Mr. Kendall. You must recollect the time Mr. Kendall came out, of his speaking about purchasing land for Baron De Thierry. Report says that he is bringing an eighty gun ship from the Spanish Main, and himself has arrived at Otaheite, and is waiting there until she arrives. I have received a copy of his letter from Otaheite, sent me by Mr. Busby, our British Resident, or Consul, from the Bay, to inform us of his intention; also he has sent circulars to all the Europeans (he says in his own letter that he intends to bring an armed force, and recommends the settlers to come under his government). There has been a meeting of natives at the British Residency, in the Bay, who have sent a letters requesting him not to come, as they will fight and prevent him landing, and woe be to him if he falls into their hands, for they say that they will

eat him. Mr. Busby has written to Sydney for force to assist the natives, who I suppose you know is acknowledged as a nation, and allies to the British Nation. The British have given them a national flag, which was acknowledged by the "Alligator," man-of-war, and saluted with thirteen guns from her in the name of His Majesty, William 4th, and accepted by the natives, so now all vessels built here carry the New Zealand flag. I should be glad if you can send me the deeds of King George's farm immediately; land is getting valuable, and persons are purchasing land nearly every day; nearly all the Bay is purchased, and also the River H. If I could show the deeds to Mr. Busby, I could then claim our share. I hope you will not fail in sending them. You will recollect it was purchased between yourself and me, Mr. Hall, and Mr. Kemp. It will be of great service to my family. Samuel John is going to Sydney to my brother-in-law, who has kindly offered to teach him his trade. I am sending this letter by a friend, Mr. Sewell, who takes charge of a schooner named the "Industry." This was a vessel which was coming down here for trade, but three or four days before she reached land, the crew deliberately threw the captain overboard. The mate brought the vessel in here merely by chance, although she was bound here, and immediately gave her up to our Assistant British Resident, or Consul, here. The men have been taken prisoners, and heavily ironed, and a prison made on board; the vessel sails this week, and Mr. Sewell has been engaged to take her up, where the men will suffer the penalty of the law, which I think they well deserve. Two settlers and a guard of natives go with them. You will see that we have an Assistant British Resident in this river, Capt. McDonnell. Samuel John has been interpreter for him these last three months."

Mr. D. O. Guiney writes to Butler under date October 18th 1832, acknowledging receipt of tithes from the tenants, and regretting that the harvest has not been good.

At the end of 1834, Butler writes to Revd. Stephenson, remarking upon the bad harvest experienced; that Mr. Brown had sown four bags of beans, for only one waggon load of straw in return, and that he himself had planted six acres with little better success.

Under date 15-1-1835, Mr. Guiney informs Butler that he is coming down to his parish in the spring, and wishes to have his cottage, now occupied by Butler.



THE NEW ZEALAND STANDARD.

Presented by the British Government on March 20th, 1834. Chosen from a selection of three, by the Bay of Islands Chiefs, the voting being 12, 10, 6. Saluted by the "H.M.S. Alligator," and with nine cheers from the 120 Europeans there assembled.

30-4-36. Henry Rose writes to Butler: "I have just received Mr. Guiney's answer to my letter on the subject of his curacies, as follows:—

"In reply to your letter, I can only say that your recommendation of Mr. Butler is so very satisfactory that if I were in want of further assistance, I do not think I would hesitate in closing with him. At present I have no vacancy; should one of my curates leave me, I will write to you under the possibility of Mr. Butler still being disengaged."

3-5-1836. Butler to Ross: "I hope I may succeed with Mr. Gunning; I shall esteem it my greatest happiness, and account it my highest honour and most valued privilege (should it please the Almighty to place me in so great a population) to preach among them the unsearchable riches of Christ. . . ."

Butler's only daughter at this time was dangerously ill, and the constant attention required prevented his seeking any situation.

4-5-1836. Mellor to Butler, acknowledging receipt of Butler's letter in reply to his advertisement, and asking for references, "and also a general idea as to your accustomed style of preaching. My people are mostly poor, many of them accustomed to dissent in former years."

9-5-36. T. W. Mellor of Haddenham, "being happy to find that Butler is still disengaged," asks him to come down and stay for a few days, per the Lynon Coach, and acquaint himself with the circumstantial details of the situation. He followed this with a further letter 14-5-36, stating that having had a reply from the Rev. Mr. Stephenson (Butler's late rector), he would be glad if B. would let him know definitely whether he would undertake his duties for three months.

27-5-36. From High Street, Hampstead, Butler writes to Mr. Henry Rose:—

As you have so kindly interested yourself in our welfare, allow me to lay before you a statement of my present plans and engagements. I am looking forward to going to Wigan to Mr. Gunning by and by, and for this reason I have not sought after any permanent situation.

In the meantime I have undertaken the whole charge of the large and prosperous parish of Haddenham, Isle of Ely, till Michaelmas next, to read and preach three times every Sunday. Mrs. and Miss Butler, who is now recovering from a severe and dangerous illness, will accompany me.

Perhaps you will be kind enough to write to Mr. Gunning, and inform him of what my plans and arrangements are.

By so doing you will confer a still more lasting obligation, for your kindness on,

Your faithful and obedient servant,

(Signed) JOHN BUTLER.

In July, Mr. Mellor writes instructions of service, viz.:—10.30 a.m., 2.30 p.m., and 6.30 p.m.; the morning service running until 12.10 at the latest. Butler is also asked to occasionally visit and superintend the school and distribute the regular supply of tracts. To this Butler replied at length. He writes: "The people are well satisfied, and anxious for me to remain among them." "The Sunday School is on the increase. Miss B. is actively engaged in it." "I make it a special duty to attend the sick and afflicted. I consider this a most important branch of my office."

Mr. Mellor acknowledged this on July 26th, and expresses appreciation of the successful ministrations. On 15th September, near the termination of Butler's engagement, Mellor again wrote offering a three months' engagement with a Revd. Simpson, of Doncaster. Terms: house, furniture, two horses, servant, coals and milk, and "some pecuniary consideration."

17-8-36. In reply to Mr. Mellor as to how the church is faring, he states that the church is well attended, and that he has paid and terminated, as directed, the two school mistresses—one getting 5/- per week, and the other 4/- per week, for their services; school receipts for the seventeen weeks being £2 17s 9d.

On 3rd September, 1836, a petition bearing five hundred and fourteen signatures was presented to the Venerable Archdeacon Brown, M.A., from the inhabitants of Haddenham.

"We, the churchwardens and other inhabitants of the above parish, beg leave to assure you how deeply we feel for the best interests of the church; and knowing your readiness, and believing how much you are concerned for our spiritual and everlasting welfare, do hereby humbly request, that we may be allowed to retain our present esteemed minister, Mr. Butler, whose labours are not only acceptable to all, but likely to be productive of the greatest good.

"He is an elderly man, and a family man, of a kind and affectionate disposition.

“ He is a faithful preacher of the Gospel, and one who has had a great deal of experience in the world, and every way suited as a spiritual pastor to supply the wants of a population like ours, and to secure general peace and tranquillity.

“ Should the Rev. Mr. Mellor resign at Michaelmas, we hope and trust that the Revd. Mr. Butler may become the object of your election.

“ Miss Butler takes an active part in the Sunday School, which is a considerable acquisition.”

(Signed) THOS. DRAGE,
ROBT. AMORY,
Churchwardens.
JOSHUA PHILLIPS,
Schoolmaster.

Number of Petitioners, 514.

The petition was presented by Professor Scholefield, of Cambridge; but the patron had promised the nomination before the requisition was put into his hands.

On December 29th, the same churchwardens again wrote:

“ This is to certify that the Rev. John Butler hath, during his residence in this parish, conducted himself and performed the arduous duties of an Xtian minister in a truly praiseworthy manner, much to our satisfaction, and every way calculated to promote the best interests of the people. We much regret his loss.”

Rev. Mellor had written on September 7th, to say he would probably be resigning the living, but that it might not be before October 11th; he therefore asked Butler to continue until that date at £2 per week.

He again writes on October 5th:—“ I had a visit some few days ago from Mr. Banks, who is nominated as my successor in the living of Haddenham; and I am sorry to learn from him that you had been suffering from indisposition. He informed me, however, that you were still willing to continue your services in that place, and that he had made arrangements for you to do so, subsequently to the 11th inst., when he will become responsible for the services.”

Butler wrote to Banks agreeing to carry on, and submitting his plan of services: Aldreth on Thursday evening, Had-

denham three times on Sunday, a lecture on Wednesday evening, a meeting on Psalmody on Tuesday evening.

Saml. Banks replied on 15th agreeing, and giving instructions. Butler appears to have kept this temporary appointment until Xmas.

Mr. Edwin Daniell, of Stapleford, near Cambridge, wrote to him on the 3rd and 16th January, 1937, offering the position as curate at Stapleford, at £90 per year.

In May, Butler was in London.

In July, the Upper Canada Clergy Society wrote to him, and asking for references from two clergymen; also stating that the salary of their travelling missionaries was £175 per year, and £50 for conveyance from England, and that the appointment was made by the Bishop of Montreal.

The Revd. Mr. M. Caustin stated that Butler had been in his parish for the last five months, and had assisted him.

The Rev. W. R. Stevenson wrote: "You have my best wishes for the plan you mentioned to me. I believe from your experience and habits that the station will be suited for you, and you for the station. I shall at any time testify with great pleasure to the diligence you used during ten years you were my curate at Neenton; the satisfaction I had during the connection, and the attachment of your parishioners, and I am sure Mr. Guiney will do the same for the adjoining parish."

5-7-37. Butler was evidently contemplating formation of a carrying company, as he had been consulting with Messrs. Daniel Beacon and Sons, and estimates the initial expenses at £459 6s 0d.

The last communication is a letter offering him a temporary appointment by a Mr. Ridley, of Herts.

When Bishop Selwyn visited Wellington in 1842, he was presented with an address containing the paragraph, "that having been left so long without regular and authorised administrations and sacrament of the church"

Up to this date, the Rev. John McFarlane had preached the Gospel, and had baptised one hundred and fourteen children, fifty-three being of English parents, fifty of Scotch, four Irish, five natives, one German, one American. He also married

seventy-four couples, of whom forty-eight were English, and thirteen Scotch.

The "Bengal Merchant" arrived at Wellington in the middle of February, 1840, with one hundred and fifty Scotch emigrants from the Clyde, and including Mr. McFarlane. This was the first resident clergyman (Rev. Mr. Bumby had selected a Presbyterian site in 1839, when at Port Nicholson, in May of that year).

On April 20th, the "Bolton" arrived, and on the 21st came to anchor, having on board the two first of the Anglican Clergy, to reside in Wellington. These ministers carried out regular services for over a year. McFarlane returned to Argylshire in 1844, at which date the Rev. James Duncan was attending to the Provincial Presbyterians 433; the Rev. Robert Cole to the 1240 Anglican; Revds. J. P. O'Reilly and M. Le Compte to the 177 Roman Catholics; Rev. Jonas Woodward to the 64 Independents; and the Revd. J. Watkin and S. Ironside to the 300 Wesleyans.

In "Wakefield's Adventure in New Zealand," he says (201):—

"On the 21st another ship, the "Bolton," had arrived from England, bearing among other passengers, the Rev. J. L. Churton, who had been appointed chaplain by a Church Society, in connection with the settlement, and the Rev. J. G. Butler, also a clergyman of the Established Church. The arrival of these two gentlemen had been hailed with much pleasure by the members of the Church of England.

"Previous to this time, the religious duties had been performed by the Rev. John Macfarlane, a minister of the Kirk of Scotland, who had accompanied the colonists from the Clyde in the 'Bengal Merchant,' The arrival of Messrs. Churton and Butler was a great comfort to all parties. Mr. Butler had come to reside in Pitone, close to Col. Wakefield's house. This gentleman had been a member of the Church Mission in the Bay of Islands in former years, and thus held a commission of the peace from a former governor of New South Wales. The Company, thinking that this might prove of use in the enforcement of our young laws, had been eager to secure his services. Although this piece of parchment from an ex-governor had been of no great weight, Mr. Butler's accession to our Society soon became a very valuable acquisition, not only on account of the ministerial functions which he exercised at Pito-one, but on account of his know-

ledge of the customs and language of the natives, and his praiseworthy willingness to employ it so as to win their best affection. The Butler family became quite revered by the Pito-one natives."

Before Butler returned to New Zealand, he appears to have been in communication with the New Zealand Association, and duly drafted out his opinions as hereunder:—

- (1) It will be necessary in order to more effectually promote the objects in view, to send out to N.Z. a preliminary deputation as soon as possible.
- (2) The deputation shall be composed of ———.
- (3) The deputation must be delegated with full power to act according to their judgment, or as circumstances may require.
- (4) It shall be their chief object, after due examination, to purchase such land, or tracts of country, most eligible for carrying into full effect the plans laid down by the Society; and which seem to them to be most secure from the incursion of strange tribes, and for the security of the English and natives that may reside among them.
- (5) In order to effect this desirable object, it will be necessary that the deputation be furnished with all proper articles of barter, for the purchase of such lands, as the natives may be willing to cede into their hands.
- (6) It will be highly expedient that some part of the deputation should remain at N.Z., in order to maintain a friendly intercourse with the natives, and to assure them that their expectations of having a body of Europeans to dwell among them, with a view to their benefit and comfort, will soon be realized.
- (7) It will be of great importance to have a vessel stationed at N.Z. for the purpose of the safety and accommodation of those who may remain, and of extending their knowledge of the local situations, different tribes, and produce of N.Z.
- (8) It will be very advisable to take out two carpenters, who fully understand sawing in all its departments; whose object should principally be to teach the nat-

ives to saw, etc., in order that a large quantity of scantling and boards, etc., may be prepared for the proposed establishment, whensoever that shall take place.

- (9) It is very needful that some person of respectability acquainted with the language, customs, manners, habits and dispositions of the natives, should go out with the deputation, in order to secure the final success of their mission.

Lastly. A person in the capacity of secretary and store-keeper should be sent out with the deputation, who must act on all occasions according to the instructions given him.

When the instructions from the New Zealand Land Company to Colonel Wakefield, a pamphlet of twenty-three pages printed by John W. Parker, London, were given him, the following appears to have been his reply:—

Dear Sir,

I have carefully examined the pamphlet which you were pleased to put into my hands, and after mature consideration, it is my decided opinion that the principles laid down as the basis of the Society's operations are most equitable and just, and only require to be carefully carried into practice, their full meaning and excerpts, by wise and prudent men; and then, after a few difficulties at the commencement, which I trust will soon be surmounted, I doubt not but that the intended settlement in New Zealand will become as flourishing as any that ever belonged to any civilized body, or were added to the British Dominions.

JOURNAL OF A VOYAGE OUT TO NEW ZEALAND, 1840.

JANUARY 1st.—Becalmed about forty-seven degrees off the line.

2nd.—Making about a mile an hour.

3rd.—Drifting backwards. Saw a turtle; lowered a boat and went after it, but was disappointed, it being only a squib fish. Caught a dolphin. A man and boy fell overboard; not hurt, except a good ducking, which they seemed to relish much.

4th.—Went back over ten miles.

5th.—Divine Service held on deck by Mr. Churton. An internal complaint attacking nearly everyone on board.

7th.—A squall, and good breeze all day. A child buried, named Woodham, making the sixth since we left England.

8th.—A little boy named Nash fell overboard just at the cuddy, dinner-time; was saved; caused a great sensation.

11th.—A little disturbance in the single women's cabin.

12th.—Caught a small shark.

13th.—A vessel close by our side, which proved a Dutchman.

16th.—Crossing the line; winds very favourable.

20th.—The ship's butcher fired at a bird which was hovering round.

23rd.—Off the coast of Bahia, South America.

25th.—Spoke an American whaling ship, lat. 18.15, long. 35.40, the "Rochester" by name.

28th.—A large vessel in sight going in the same direction.

29th.—Another child dead, named Nankeville, making five boys and two girls.

31st.—Sea running very high.

FEBRUARY 1st.—Disturbance with the ——— family, young ——— put in irons, for being impudent to the doctor. The emigrants came up to the captain, and said if ——— was not released immediately, they would release him themselves, and throw the doctor overboard.

FEBRUARY 2nd.—Great confusion below during Divine Service, dogs barking and howling, pigs squealing, and men cursing and swearing in a most shameful manner. Saw a ship and signalled her; "Victoria," from Bristol to Brennan, seventy days out.

3rd.—Mr. Collett's 31st birthday. Messrs. Butler, Churton, Collett, Minett, Wadeson, Douglas, Cole and Drury spent the evening together.

4th.—Vessel in sight.

6th.—Caught a ten foot shark.

7th.—Vessel again in sight.

9th.—Several grampus playing round the ship.

Albatross seen in the evening.

14th.—A quantity of seaweed around us.

17th.—Passed the Cape of Good Hope at six p.m.

18th.—Caught an albatross, ten feet, tip to tip, on a fish-hook.

21st.—Caught another albatross, nine foot ten.

24th.—Caught three sharks and one albatross.

26th.—Terrible night, the vessel rolling in a most fearful manner; no one had any rest.

28th.—Caught eight albatross.

March 3rd.—Fog.

4th. — Two ships seen in the evening; some penguins around the vessel.

5th.—Seas breaking over the ship; gale blowing.

13th.—Wind off the larboard quarter; saw a sperm whale.

16th.—A tremendous sea struck and deluged the vessel fore and aft.

21st.—Main topsail sheet broke in two; sea struck us at the same time, and came through the windows.

APRIL 1st.—Passed Van Dieman's Land about fifty miles off; weather foggy.

APRIL 4th.—Ship's cook ill with delirium tremens.

5th.—Mrs. Woodman churched, and child christened.

7th.—Mrs. Nankeville has a daughter.

APRIL 9th.—Sixty miles from Cape Farewell at twelve o'clock; ship's cook died; Captain Robinson's cow died.

10th.—Becalmed within sight of N.Z.

11th.—Beating about for Port Hardy.

12th. — Entered the heads of the harbour of D'Urville Island about ten a.m. A native canoe came to meet us. Another canoe came off with a man and child; the man was tattooed all over his face; he also brought a paper relative to one of the vessels having arrived, and left for Port Nicholson.

A party went round the bay in search of information, but could get none. The first place they went to they saw a boat sail, boat sprit, oar, frying pan, iron pots, tin pots; and the natives seemed very suspicious of us. We suppose there are many natives in the bush, who do not make their appearance.

13th.—The vessel drifted very near the shore in a dangerous position.

14th.—The man and his wife from the first place came on board: fired a gun at his request, to let the natives know they might bring pigs and potatoes; a few came. The gentlemen all went on shore with the native to his place for water. We saw a large canoe full of natives going towards our people; very much afraid they were going to do us some mischief, but they went up and shook hands, and seemed very pleased; they sang and prayed before they retired.

15th. — Purchasing pigs and potatoes; the decks were strewn with potatoes. Two large canoes full went away, the owners were very much displeased.

16th.—Just going to breakfast when Mr. Douglas came to fetch my father, a dispute having arisen among the natives about the water; my father went to make peace; we succeeded, the ship's crew getting as much water as they possibly could. The great chief Mako and his wife came off with the gentlemen who had been on shore, and remained with us until nine p.m. Two natives are going to Port Nicholson with us.

17th.—Two Englishmen came to us from Port Nicholson, belonging to Mr. MacAllum, who brought us some information.

18th.—Mr. MacAllum came about twelve o'clock in a boat, one of the men left on board to pilot us out of Port Hardy.

19th.—Tacking.

20th.—Arrived at Port Nicholson; wind strong out of the harbour; endeavoured to beat in; only a little way into the heads, but had to let go the anchor; fired two guns for a pilot, who came, accompanied by a person named Northwood, a colonist. Mr. Collett went on shore with the gentleman above named, and stayed the night. About half past two Colonel Wakefield came on board; he only stayed a short time.

21st.—We beat in, and anchored in the harbour about one p.m. Went on shore with others, and went to Dr. Evans to inform him of my father's arrival. Mr. E. came on board



PITONE PA, WELLINGTON.

From a sketch by Brees, Native Chapel on the left. The chief of this district was E Puni. Te Puni or Aponi, the former being now accepted as correct.

to see him. We had our dinner on shore, quite in gipsy style. The houses are not worth calling houses; such miserable places that we were quite astonished, Mr. Evans' being the only decent house among them all. Came on board about six p.m.

23rd.—Mr. Wakefield came on board with the emigration agent, Mr. Riddiford. The emigrants all went on shore to build their houses. Mr. Butler also went to see the native (missionary?) F. Davis. The people were taken to a spot near to the native village, but the native chief would not let them. He said it was his ground, and had not been purchased by the Company off him, and they should not have it. A meeting with Mr. Williams to be held to-morrow respecting it.

24th.—Mr. Butler went on shore to see about the disputed land; came on board at two p.m., and set off for *Brittania* with Mr. and Mrs. Collett and Mr. White, to remain over Sunday and preach.

26th.—Mr. Churton went on shore to preach, accompanied by Mr. Minett and Mr. R. Harrison. The sailors went on shore; came back at night very drunk; also some men from the "*Adelaide*," and off the shore, were on board, and caused a disturbance which was put an end to without much trouble.

30th.—Went on shore to the missionary Davis about some potatoes; secured a ton for Captain Robinson.

MAY 7th.—Bought a house off Captain Gomm. Colonel Wakefield ordered Captain Robinson to take the luggage to *Brittania*.

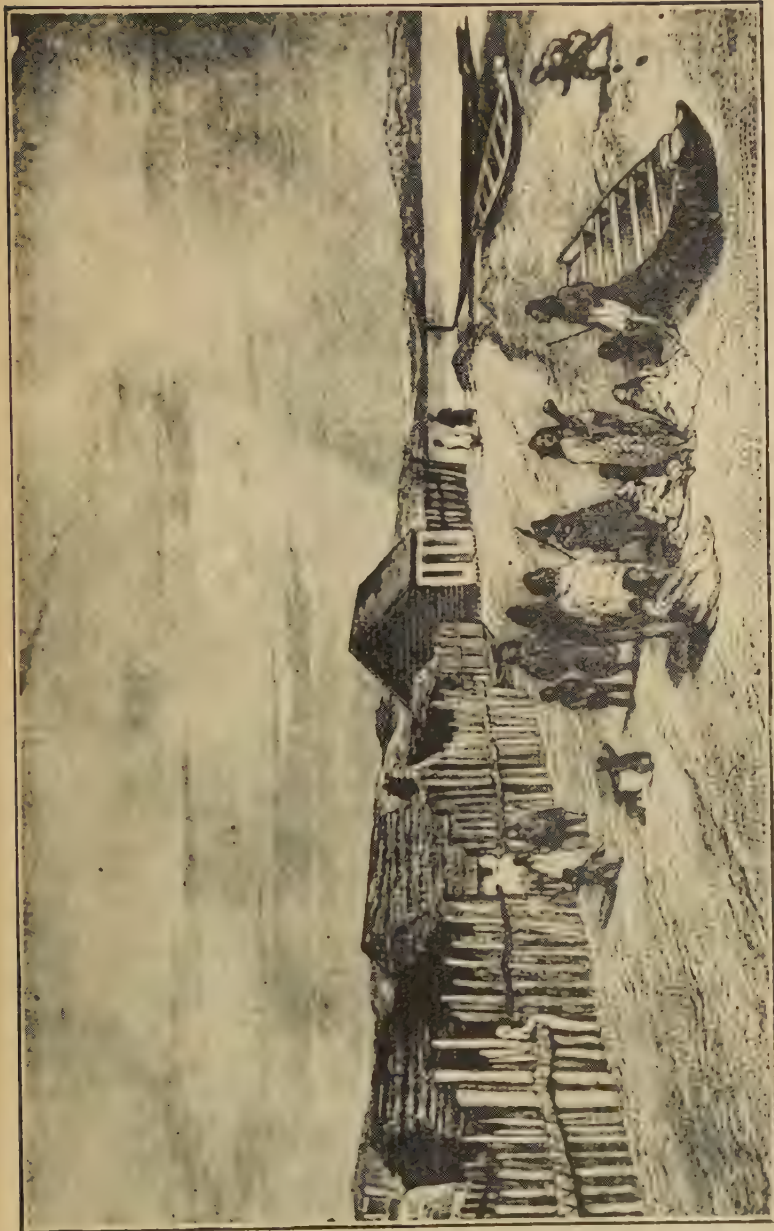
MAY 8th.—Set off for *Brittania* with the goods in the long-boat towed by the cutter, and whale boat; arrived at *Brittania* about four p.m. and unloaded.

10th.—Went to the Scotch church; Mr. Butler baptized the son of Uriah and Harriet Hunt—named Charles Nicholson Hunt, born 20th January, 1840.

MAY 12th.—Mr. Butler and Colonel Wakefield set out a churchyard.

14th.—Fencing.

17th.—Divine Service held in Mr. Hunter's store room at twelve a.m. After service, Major Baker called Mr. Butler to go to the west end of the beach, to settle a quarrel between a European and the natives about a son of Aponi (Epuni?) being thrust out of doors against his will, and by means of



PIPITEA POINT, WELLINGTON.

Pipitea and Kumutoto (Bowen St.) Pās were under Wi Tako's father, then an old man: Te Aro Pa does not appear to have had a chief of rank: the next pa was under Kaihaia (alias Tarangakuri), being at Kai Warra Warra, and the other chief, Pukawa, on the Hutt River.

(From a sketch by Brier.)

force. An inquest was held on the body of H. R. Eaton who was speared by a native, before Major Baker, etc. After the inquest, Mr. Butler buried him.

23rd.—Borrowed a canoe off the natives to fetch some brush to finish the fence.

24th.—Mr. Butler preached to a large congregation; Dr. Evans and Major Durie from Thorndon were there.

25th.—A hurricane all night. A fire broke out in Cornish Row, which destroyed fifteen dwellings, and nearly all the people's goods.

26th.—A dreadful earthquake took place at five thirty a.m.; all our houses rocked in a most fearful manner. We all ran out quite terrified, but then returned to bed. After three quarters of an hour we heard an explosion and a small shake. Upon enquiry we found there had been two earthquakes prior to this, and since the arrival of the Europeans, but nothing so bad as this.

MAY 27th.—Another shock of earthquake.

28th.—Came back from a walk; in Atoru's canoe; about thirty natives had a meal of rice.

29th.—Two vessels arrived, one named the "Bee," from Sydney, reported the loss of the "Aurora" off Kaiparoa. The "Sally Ann," from Bay of Islands, which reports the loss of two more vessels off the coast.

30th.—A disturbance arose between some of the Scotch settlers and the natives about a knife; they came to Mr. Butler to settle the affair. One of the Scotchmen had hit one of the natives with a piece of wood on the side of the head, and made it bleed. They went into his house and took a blanket for payment.

31st.—A "Charity" sermon preached for the benefit of the sufferers by the fire. Seven pounds were collected.

APRIL 1st. — Ngatakahuni came in the morning. Mr. Butler and Mr. Breary went to Capt. Smith's to marry a couple, Mr. By, acting as clerk. Mr. Butler went to the pa, and had a long talk with the natives.

2nd.—Mr. B. and C. I. B. went to the east end of the beach to marry another couple, but Mr. MacFarlane had already married them.



N'HOURLANGA.

Ngahauranga, from a drawing by Brees. This was the Pa of Wharepouri; his memorial, a canoe centre portion, can be seen upon uprights. In later years a split end of a canoe was placed on end, above the road at the W.M.E. Co. entrance; even this has now gone. Wharepouri was buried at Pitone, 1843. *Neatitohungunui* is located near Whakataki.

4th.—Went to Thorndon with Mr. Butler, C.I.B., F., and Mr. Moreing in Atoru's canoe. The Queen's Proclamation was read by Mr. Shortland, secretary to Governor Hobson, taking possession of New Zealand.

9th.—Building a house.

11th.—While at dinner a person of the name of Todd came and wanted Mr. Butler to go to his house and pacify some natives who were pulling his fence down.

14th.—Mr. and Mrs. Riddiford drank tea with us.

18th.—Attending to several invalids (gave two natives biscuits); Dr. Dorset prescribed.

19th.—Matangi dined with us.

21st.—Epuni, a chief, dined with us, by special invitation, and behaved remarkably well.

22nd.—About twenty natives had a meal of rice, bought a pig from a strange native for a blanket and twelve fish-hooks. Capt. Robinson took English letters and sent them to Sydney per ship "Hope."

23rd.—To Dr. Heely's to agree with the natives about a house which they had built. Atoru dined with us. Gave some hymn books to some strangers.

25th.—A native from Kapiti sold a pig to a person named (Barry?) a constable, who agreed to give him £1 and one blanket. He gave the native the sovereign, killed the pig, and then would not give the blanket; the native declared he would not keep the money without the blanket, and there was a great disturbance. Mr. Riddiford came to Mr. Butler, and they went to (Barry?), who was very saucy; the native left the sovereign with Mr. Butler. Mr. Pierie had offered £2 for the pig, but the native wanted the blanket. Mr. Butler gave the native a 12qr. blanket, value £1 10s 0d.

26th.—Went to Pipitea in the canoe with Aponi. Mr. Butler visited Mr. Shortland, and had a long conversation. Mr. Riddiford went and returned with us. Went on board the "Bolton." Capt. Robinson kindly received us; gave the natives rum and biscuits.

27th.—Atoru went with the canoe to Thorndon to tow a raft of timber for Mr. Moreing.



TWO MAORI CHIEFS—Te Puni, or "Greedy," and "Wharepourī, or "Dark House."

28th.—Mr. Butler baptised Helen Chaffers, daughter of Daniel and Harriet Riddiford. Capt. Chaffers stood godfather, and myself as proxy for a lady in England. Miss Riddiford could not come, it was so rough.

29th. — Mr. Duppa's boat drifted away. Mr. Butler agreed with three natives to go with Mr. Duppa; they returned and had supper with us. Waitura and Makuri dined with us. Atoru returned from Ngahauranga with his wife, who is very ill; we gave her some tea. Buried James Wilson, aged thirty-seven, seaman belonging to the "Bolton," who was drowned in attempting to cross the River Hutt.

JULY 1st.—A large meeting held in the Exchange to petition Captain Hobson to make this place the seat of government. Col. Wakefield was publicly solicited to convey the petition in person to the Bay of Islands. Mr. Butler, Epuni, and two of his sons, put up two notice boards, one on each of the native farms, forbidding anyone trespassing thereon.

3rd.—Natives up the river to cut rushes, flax and nikau for our house.

4th.—A native lad stole two tomahawks from Mr. Telford, who put him in irons, and came up to Mr. Butler requiring his assistance in this affair. Matanga and his wife here to breakfast; Epuni dined with us. Married James Williams of Cloudy Bay, and Jane Florence. Mr. Smith, Saml. Florence and myself present.

5th.—Divine Service as usual.

JULY 7th.—"Bolton" sailed for England.

8th.—Epuni to breakfast.

9th.—Matangi breakfasted with us.

10th.—Epuni to breakfast; up river for boards for house; hurricane.

JULY 13th.—Engaged in the morning correcting the native language for the press.

14th.—Mr. Butler looking over N.Z. language. Our yard has been full of natives all day. Makiri, Epuni's son, spent the evening.

15th.—Mr. Butler reading N.Z. corrections to the natives, to know if they are according to their pronunciation. Awari, Epuni's son, to breakfast.

16th.—Dreadful storm.

19th.—Divine Service as usual; Mr. Hunter rang a bell for the service.

21st.—Sold Mr. Riddiford three pairs of blankets and hatchet to pay for his house at Thorndon.

27th.—Mr. Butler went to Thorndon to attend a meeting about the division of the town land, to see that the natives were not imposed upon. Attended the funeral of a native at Pipitea.

28th.—Mr. Butler went to Thorndon about the division of land; he protested against the native pas being taken; there were some choices, chosen in the pa, but the governor protested against the native land being taken away from them.

AUGUST 6th.—A large fire up the river.

AUGUST 7th.—Waitera putting the mats on the sides of the house.

8th.—Wharepouri came to Mr. Collett's, and behaved himself very indecently, and remained all day.

9th.—Wharepouri here in company with Mr. Smith, the constable, and had a long conversation.

10th.—Wharepouri gone, as he says, to fetch some strange natives and make a fight.

13th.—Gave Waitera one adze.

16th.—Christened William John, son of George and Sarah Spackman.

17th.—Col. Wakefield came back.

20th.—Mr. and Mrs. Collett, Mrs. Stokes, and Mr. Lewis drank tea with us.

22nd. — Paid the natives for building house two pairs blankets, £6; two pairs, £2; three gowns, £1 16s 0d; four shirts, £1; three axes, 15/-; four planeirons, 4/-; money, £4; total, £17 5s 0d.

AUGUST 25th.—Mr. Cogan's boat upset about two miles off. Mr. Collett and Mr. Child put off their boat to their assistance, and rescued them just in time. Mr. Fowler's boat upset on the beach opposite our house; eight or nine drowned, viz.: William Elsdon, William Lancaster, Chas. Rogers, Josiah

Tucker, John Griffin, Martin Augustus, John Pierie, William Hight. Mr. Butler went down to Thorndon in Mr. Roskell's boat. He went on board the "Platina," and remained all night.

26th.—The body of Rogers picked up at Waiwetu.

28th.—The bodies were buried in very solemn manner, almost the whole of the settlement attending. Mr. Butler performed the service; Mr. MacFarlane concluded with prayers.

30th.—"Platina" left for Thames. Messrs. Collett and Childs on board. Two earthquake shocks during the night.

SEPTEMBER 17th.—Mr. Hopper drowned in the river. He was sitting in the bows of the boat, which, striking a snag, tossed him out of it, and it is supposed stunned him. A native named Waitupi came and disputed the land at Koro Koro; said he would set fire to the house and burn it down.

19th.—A tremendous storm blew the schooner "Jewess" high and dry opposite Allen's.

20th.—Mr. Hopper buried.

21st.—Paid Mr. Hughes the balance of the account for the churchyard. The brougham came down to take away the Colonel's goods to Britannia.

23rd.—Two Europeans and three Maoris were attacked by Ngatikahingungu; they took one man, two women, and two children prisoners, and set them down at Waiwetu.

25th.—Mr. Allen's boat, returning from Britannia, picked up a body drowned at the upsetting of Mr. Fowler's boat; they buried him.

28th.—Severe earthquake.

29th.—Great alarm at the firing of guns. Upon Messrs. Hunt, Henry and Judd enquiring, it was found to be the Scotch firing at a target.

OCTOBER 2nd.—A vessel lying outside the harbour.

8th.—News came that Mr. Butler had returned from the Thames in the schooner "Elizabeth."

11th.—Mr. Roskell and the two Mr. Wallaces went to Thorndon.

13th.—A house burnt down; only a trunk of clothing saved.

14th.—Mr. Eaton died.

16th.—Buried Richard Adolphus Eaton (County of Salop). Mr. Barton, Mr. Hunter, Mr. Stokes, and Mr. Butler went to Mr. Alzdorf's to meet the children, and read the will.

19th.—The Maoris, assisted by Mr. Butler and Mr. Hunter, re-floated the "Jewess."

29th.—A little girl named Isaac was drowned in the river opposite her father's dwelling.

30th.—Epuni came about Mr. Barrow keeping cows on the Native Reserve.

31st.—Epuni came again about the cows. Waihipa's wife asked Mrs. Collett about them. The natives are determined no European shall have any wood or land without payment.

NOVEMBER 1st.—Buried Elizabeth Mary, daughter of Francis and Mary Isaac, late of Walworth Road, London; aged three years, nine months.

NOVEMBER 10th.—Epuni and Amoi had breakfast with us. Mr. Butler and myself went up to Mr. Read's place to settle a difference, which arose by the natives cultivating an old garden chosen by Mr. Molesworth in a country section, and let to Mr. Read. The natives were not willing to resign it and go upon their own land, which is only a short distance beyond. Mr. Butler made them fully understand that the ground belonged to the English; they said they would give it up after their crop was off, to which Mr. Read was agreeable.

13th.—Gave Epuni four quarts maize, and Tuarau two quarts, to set their land.

14th.—The "Martha Ridgway," from England, with emigrants, also three other vessels. The news from home is very encouraging; two more vessels with emigrants are immediately expected. She is under quarantine with one case of smallpox on her.

NOVEMBER 17th.—A vessel came in this morning in beautiful style.

21st.—The "Eleanor" left for Sydney.

28th.—Mr. Hunter's family left, and have gone to live on the other side.

DECEMBER 3rd.—Epuni and many of the natives have gone to their land at “Waiderup.” Epuni said he would be away two moons.

5th.—The “Cuba” came in this morning with the deputation. Mr. Watts came and brought a native, charged with stealing a silver spoon; the native was chastised.

6th.—Up the river in the afternoon; chatted with the natives at the pa.

12th.—The “London” came in with two hundred and eighty emigrants from the Plymouth Company, fired a salute of twenty-one guns; a small vessel also came in.

13th.—The “Patriot” arrived with a large mail. She left before the “Martha Ridgway,” but was detained at Launceston.

15th.—Mr. Butler attended the big public meeting; a great deal of discussion took place, and matters were finally and amicably arranged.

16th.—Shock of earthquake.

24th.—Buried William Richards, seaman, aged forty-two.

25th.—Married Thos. William Tankersley to Sarah Draper—Mr. Telford and Mr. Burcham present, also Mr. Burgess and Mrs. Turner.

27th.—Went up the river to preach to the sawyers; many people attended, and behaved with great seriousness. A large barque, the “Blenheim,” from Scotland, laden with emigrants, arrived. The natives kept four days “ra tapu.”

JANUARY 1st, 1841.—In strolling through the bush, saw a large amount of land cultivated by the natives; also a cleared and sheltered valley about three miles over the hills. Took some food to Amui, Epuni’s brother, who had returned from “Waiderop” very ill.

2nd.—Epuni and tribe returned, and brought many pigs; we met them when they landed.

3rd. — Began a Sunday School, Mr. Burgess assisting; about a dozen attended.

6th.—Apaki came to breakfast.

12th.—Major Baker and his lady, and Miss Hargreaves and Miss Harrison came to invite me to attend the ball to commemorate the foundation of the colony, on 22nd inst.

14th.—Disturbance between the natives and the constable relative to a pig; the natives were very fierce, and would have pulled the watch-house down. Epuni went for Mr. Butler, who told the constable that unless the native was liberated there would be bloodshed, that he would be answerable for the native appearing.

JANUARY 15th, 1841.—Went to Wellington. Epuni and the natives took Awhanga before Mr. Murphy, who awarded the pig to the natives, who had brought it from "Waiderop."

16th.—A child drowned in the Hutt, aged two and a half, belonging to a Scotchman named Alexander Yule; buried next day.

19th.—Mr. Todd died.

21st.—Mr. Dicks, the sexton, came up in the evening, saying the Maoris had taken a rope he had borrowed from Mr. Telford. On our conferring with Epuni, he said a lad belonging to Mr. Johnson the undertaker, had taken the rope home, saying it was his.

22nd.—Walked over to Wellington to attend the ball in commemoration of the foundation of this colony; had a splendid attendance, and were much amused. The ball broke up at five thirty on Saturday morning.

23rd.—The boat race and hurdle race took place; Petoni boat won the prize. Mr. Watt won the hurdle race. Mr. Molesworth rode Mr. Hort's horse, and fell twice.

24th.—Buried Martha Ridgway, daughter of George and Susan Saywell; born September 23rd, 1840; aged four months.

27th.—Mr. Garner, the constable, came, and with Mr. Butler went to the Maoris' gardens. The white people's pigs are destroying the natives' plantations; they are always coming and complaining about them. Tuarau came to say he had caught a pig belonging to Mr. Macfarlane. He claimed damages; Mr. Macfarlane said he would pay by and by, at which the native seemed much grieved.

28th.—There is a great meeting at Wellington of the natives and an Englishman; the man claims Port Nicholson as his property, and called the natives together to corroborate the statement; we have not heard the result.

29th.—The natives rather troublesome owing to the white people's pigs getting in to their gardens.

30th.—Apaiki and another native brought a load of palings for the garden, for which they had their dinners and one shilling each. Amoi dined with them.

(End of the Diary of Hannah Butler.)

Weather details omitted.

With the cessation of this last journal, kept by Butler's daughter, our personal contact with this pioneer missionary of New Zealand ceases.

This land of our adoption has been endowed from the embryo of the days of Marsden to the day when it becomes a Dominion and fellow-partner in the Councils of Empire, with a type of settler of which any nation would be proud.

Our immense cities, gardens, every valuable adjunct of our civic progress, have been built upon the initial labours of our precursors. Do they receive the homage that is their due? To those who would erase honoured names from the scroll of our pioneers, the names attached to streets, towns, hills, valleys, etc., perpetuating in memory our veneration of prior association; to those who assert "*tempora mutantur, et nos mutamur in illis*" as a pretext, and adopt the selfish theory of "*Posterity! What has posterity done for us?*" there is only one answer: "*As you set the seal of precedent upon your action, so may posterity deal with you, and efface your link of effort from the chain of progression in the making of our history.*"

In many an unknown grave in New Zealand, in many a neglected churchyard, lies dust, deep down; sanctified in a life of honest toil, integrity and perseverance. "*E'en in our ashes live their wonted fires.*" Among these, the life-work of John Butler claims its comradeship.

In conclusion, may we query the correctness of the accusation against Butler, and Mr. Marsden's disinterestedness in the matter?

Butler resided in New Zealand, Mr. Marsden at Parramatta, N.S.W. Marsden himself writes, "*Though I do not think you are addicted to that sin.*" The testimony of his fellow-workers and colleagues is confirming as to sobriety. The Wesleyan missionaries, with whom he was in close touch, approve his conduct, acknowledge his assistance, and state the



PIPITEA POINT, WELLINGTON. From a painting by Capt. W. Mein Smith, in 1851.

injustice meted out to him. His character was clear before he came to New Zealand. His testimonials from 1825 to 1837 are all excellent; and lastly we have the statement of E. J. Wakefield: "The name of Butler was quite revered at Pitoone."

Towards the end of 1840, Butler had completed his manuscript of the Maori language, which he had commenced when first in New Zealand.

He wrote to Colonel Wakefield, principal agent of the New Zealand Company.

June 24th, 1820.

Sir,

Whereas the major part of the materials contained in the present number, and those which will succeed in this treatise, have heretofore undergone the examination and scrutiny of that profound scholar, Professor Lee, of the University of Cambridge, it may be concluded that the elements and principles of the New Zealand language are satisfactorily laid down on a good foundation.

An authority like this cannot fail (I imagine) to recommend a small work of this nature to the notice and perusal of colonists and others, who may be desirous to obtain a competent knowledge of the language, in order to convey their ideas and sentiments to the natives.

The work was called "Butler's Help and Guide to the New Zealand Language."

Dedicated by permission, to Col. William Wakefield, principal agent for the New Zealand Land Company.

By their humble

And obedient servant,

J. G. BUTLER.

Britannia, Port Nicholson, New Zealand, 1840.

Printed by Samuel Revans.

This treatise must still be in existence. Part of the rough draft is in the possession of the descendants, part was lent to a resident of Wellington, who, instead of returning it, re-lent it to the late Mr. Alex. Turnbull, and the whereabouts cannot be traced.

The notice of his death is terse, and is contained in the New Zealand Journal, published in London on Saturday, January 8th, 1842.

"It is our melancholy duty to record the death of the
 "Rev. John Gare Butler, Native Guardian and Interpreter
 "to the New Zealand Land Company, at twenty-five min-
 "utes past two o'clock on the afternoon of Friday, the

“ 18th June, 1841. The reverend gentleman suffered intensely during a period of ten weeks, and leaves a numerous circle of friends to lament his loss; he was in his 60th year.”

The mortal remains of John Butler lie in their sable shroud, the leviathans of the ocean pass above; may his immortal soul rest in peace and tranquillity until that Day when he, who carried the torch of enlightenment to the far-flung shores of a new Britain, who faced danger, disease and death in inculcating the tenets of his “calling” among a brave, fierce and warlike people, shall receive the meed of praise from his Master, Whom he endeavoured faithfully to serve.

He was buried on the Pitoone Beach on Gear Island, and the grave, with many others, was swept away to the sea by the River Hutt.

His widow, who shared his dangers and privations, is buried in the old churchyard, Lower Hutt; his daughter in St. John's, Trentham; and his only son, Samuel, on the bank of the Hokianga Harbour, where he was drowned in 1836, and buried by the Rev. N. Turner, a pioneer missionary.

We take the liberty of inserting, out of sequence, the following testimonial, which has just come to light:—

5-7-37. Mr. D. O. Gurney. “ I have no hesitation in declaring that, during the time you were my curate at Aston Bottrell—a period I believe, of nearly eight years—the services were performed quite regularly, and to my complete satisfaction. Moreover, that I found you ready at all times to assist me in every way in your power. This you are at liberty to make use of where and when you like.”

It seems opportune to include herein, as an appendix, several letters (written by the husband of Hannah Butler prior to his marriage) which deal with the sailing of the first of the New Zealand Company's emigrant ships, and the initial stages of Wellington's foundation.

Appendix.

LETTERS BY THE HUSBAND OF HANNAH BUTLER.

9th February, 1840.

Ship "Oriental," Port Nicholson, Cook's Strait, New Zealand.

We arrived here on the afternoon of 31st January, after an excellent passage of one hundred and thirty-eight days; and I've since seen sufficient of the climate, soil, and capabilities of the country to convince me none in the world can excel it. Here is to be found everything that constitutes the romantic and sublime, and it seems arranged so tastefully, that it has made an impression upon us all; and I might say, insensible indeed must be the soul that can look at it with indifference.

I will run over a narration of our passage out.

14th SEPTEMBER, 1839.—Invited by the directors to dine on the "Mercury," steamship, on the Thames. First, after leaving London Bridge, ran down to Gravesend, visited the "Aurora," "Adelaide," and our own ship, the "Oriental;" read and signed articles on board. The Sutherland Highlanders dressed in uniform looked well and were much applauded, stepped on board the "Oriental" that night from the "Mercury," amid much cheering and congratulations.

15th SEPTEMBER.—Weighed anchor, and dropped down the river. During the following week in company with the "Aurora" and "Adelaide," part of our squadron, and finally weighed from the "Downs" on the 21st, passed the I.W. (Isle of Wight) on the 24th, and though at a great distance, could discern by our glasses many well-known spots.

The wind down channel was unfavourable and sea heavy, yet our good ship beat through, and on Saturday, 28th, we saw the last objects in England, Eddystone and Start lights; from thence we had a fine run to the Cape Verde Islands, and dropped anchor off the small capital Portopraia, Isle of St. Iago, on the evening of 16th October.

OCTOBER 17th.—Went on shore with the captain, called on the British Consul; kind reception; invited to dine the next day; saw much of the town and country.

18th.—On shore to the Consul's; saw his lady, a Portuguese. The whole population appears to be a mixture of Portuguese and African negroes. Very attentive to us; walked through the beautiful orange, lemon, lime, tamarind, bananas, and guavas. Thermometer, 88. Laid in a large supply of excellent fruit.

19th.—Weighed anchor, and soon after met with the variable winds which detained us near the line some weeks; was hereabout in sight of another ship for some days, at last made out by signal the "Brankensman," bound to South Australia with emigrants, among whom I had some acquaintance; lowered our boat and went on board her with our captain. On returning late at night, Sandy and two or three more of the Highlanders came up and entreated me not to go in an open boat again.

8th NOVEMBER.—Passed the line in longitude 20. Compensated Father Neptune by giving our seamen 5/-. Thermometer in my cabin, 85; in some parts of the ship much hotter. My usual pastime was reading from six until breakfast (nine o'clock), then walk on the deck, and talk with all around, visit my own people, and attend to any request from them, return to my cabin and read until dinner, three o'clock. Rise from table about five. In good weather upon deck, otherwise to cabin; tea at seven, grog at nine; lights out at ten. On fine nights I generally stand hours afterwards on deck, beholding the cheerful space of the spangled heavens, conversing with those whose tastes lay the same way. Cards, chess, and backgammon was the amusement of many, but I never joined either.

We ran down the South American coast in about long. 32, or very near it, and at noon 26th November, high land appeared on the lee bow, and soon after more ahead, which proved to be the Islands of Tristan D'Acunha. Lat. 37 south, long. 12 west. We weathered them before night, coasting the easternmost for miles, which rises abruptly from the ocean for, it is said, nine thousand feet high; it appeared to be of volcanic origin like the Cape Verde, but its outline was rugged and desolate. Myriads of birds swarmed around, and many

fell by our passengers' guns, and one albatross upwards of ten feet across its wings.

We soon after made lat. 40 S., and long. 8, and kept south of the Cape of Good Hope about four hundred miles to avoid its currents, and stood along the parallel the remaining part of our passage, eighty-two degrees, or more than half the circumference of the globe. Saw nothing more until we arrived at New Zealand, except on 6th January, latitude 42 S., longitude 129 east, a whale ship was announced, a long way head under, whose stern we passed about noon as she lay-to cutting up a whale. She proved to be an American, out five months; had one hundred and forty-two tons oil, and expected to complete in four months more, and call at New Zealand on her way home to New Jersey. We expected to have obtained a sight of Van Dieman's Land, but were driven off by gales too far south, and soon after passing its meridian, stood N.E. until the evening of the 20th January.

Much excitement and looking out for Cape Egmont and its eternal snow-clad mountain, said to be fourteen thousand feet high. On looking from my cabin window on the morning of 21st January at daybreak, a portentous haze hung on the eastern horizon, and soon after as the sun broke through its beams were distinctly seen playing on Mt. Egmont's snowy top, while a broad wreath of fleecy mist enveloped its base.

Our rendezvous, Port Hardy, D'Urville Island, being only one hundred miles due south, we now stood direct for it, and about noon came in sight of land on all sides, which proved to be Blind Bay, in which lies D'Urville Isle, but some heavy gales coming in, we were obliged to run out to sea again for the night, and on the 22nd January sailed in and found Port Hardy.

It is beautifully formed by one of those coves common in New Zealand, the ground on each side rising with rugged slope, and adorned with shrubs of delightful fragrance to the water's edge. It was in one of these reaches, surrounded on all sides by hanging woods, that we dropped anchor in the afternoon. At the entrance we passed a small canoe in which there were three natives fishing, and on beckoning to them, they came on board and bartered their fish and some potatoes they had with them for old clothes, refusing silver coin. These poor people are of a copper colour, their whole dress consisting of check shirt, tied round the middle by a branch of tree.

Although they were of the lowest caste in their country, or slaves, they displayed a mental acuteness, and gave us to understand that if we fired one of our cannon, white men with instructions would come. On leaving us they engaged to bring more fish in the morning, which they did, and then set a hill on fire as a sign to their tribe.

23rd JANUARY. — Went on shore with Messrs. Petre (son of Lord Petre), Molesworth (brother of Sir Wm.), Sinclair, and Duppa, and took the gardener, Walker (one of my Sutherlanders) to the woods to inspect the beautiful shrubs; this, with the noise of the birds and their beautiful plumage, was almost enchanting. On going on board to dinner, found a number of natives had arrived, the chief and his wife among others, bringing pigs, fish, poultry, vegetables in abundance. Most of these were tolerably well dressed in the fashion of their country, splendid mats the size of a good blanket; but "Europa" fashion is all the go now, and the chief's lady, with other ladies of quality, appeared in our fashion with tolerable good grace, as their figures are fine; and from what I then saw, and have duly observed since, I am inclined to believe the benevolent views of the Missionary Society will be realised. Many of those on board had good books given them by the missionaries, some even a Testament in the N.Z. language, and were extremely solicitous for pencils and paper to write, which we gave them. They are a fine race of people, and our ladies declared some of them would have been very handsome if not made frightful by tattooing.

24th.—Two white Englishmen living among the natives, probably whale-deserters, or runaway convicts, came with letters for us to proceed to this place.

JANUARY 25th. — Weighed anchor at daylight; much difficulty in working the ship out of the narrows as the wind blew in; got clear out the next morning, wind S.E. direct against us; beat the whole way through the straits, saw much of both the North and South Islands; volcanic origin and wooded close to the shore in most places.

31st.—Entered Port Nicholson; a strong N.W. wind down the harbour; it was only by hard beating we came to our anchorage about sunset. The "Cuba," "Aurora," and a small Sydney merchant ship on speculation, saluted, which we returned on coming to.

FEBRUARY 1st. — Alone found the channel, rowed up the river to a native pa or town; a grog shop kept by a sus-

precious white man attracted our people's attention (this man boarded us at the mouth of the harbour the evening before, gave his name as Rose; spoke the broad west Highland dialect. Mr. Sinclair asked me to get what information from him I could, and we three then retired to my cabin). This civility was now returned; he came to the shore, procured us grass to send on board for the cows, and treated us with extraordinary attention; around him about half a dozen white men (British) much inclined to look anywhere than to show us their faces. There seemed to be about a dozen native houses in this town, and the gardens surrounding them were tolerably well kept, containing Indian corn, pumpkins, kumeras, and potatoes.

The evening of 31st January. This is a most splendid harbour, and the capabilities of the country around insures it under providence, of success.

1st FEBRUARY.—By a formal introduction, I soon became acquainted with Col. Wakefield, an excellent person, and chief agent to the N.Z. Company, and who sat next to me on coming on board, as we came up the harbour; he invited me on quitting the ship in the evening to accompany him to explore the river and sound the bar the next morning. Many of my young friends on board wished to go; fortunately it rained in the morning, when I took eight of my own men, and started with them alone. On landing I allowed the men to go through the country; the gardener kept with me; the day cleared up, and the country looked beautiful.

The natives seemed much pleased at our coming to settle among them. On going through a wood I saw a native with a double-barreled gun shooting pigeons and beckoned to him. We were without even a pistol. He spoke some English, and on my admiring the size and plumage of the pigeons, he begged me to accept them in that earnest manner, that I could not refuse him. He then took us to the maize field and potato ground, which was well enclosed and kept; he next pressed us to go to his house, where we found he was a native missionary teacher. He gave us an account of the wars between these tribes; said he used to shoot "Manene" (strangers), which was very bad. "No shoot man more, but shoot pigeons now." He has visited me since.

I have been up the river with the Colonel, and found a valley of many hundred of thousands of acres of the finest land in the world which he has purchased of the natives for

our habitation, but at present one entire coppice, which we have already begun to clear; the few natives on the coast—there seem to be none in the interior—help us. The head of the tribe on the river is become my particular friend, and brought his three sons on board this morning for me to take my choice of to live with me; the eldest, about sixteen, a fine and very intelligent fellow, came to my cabin after I was up, and speaking some English engaged, “You give me clothes, I build your house, you give me book.”

FEBRUARY 4th.—Went on shore with a large party for the purpose of erecting temporary cottages, until the surveyors can give us our allotments. Emigrants allowed 20/- per week; mechanics grumbling at being reduced to labourers.

Selected a beautiful situation on the river bank, about three miles from its mouth; rise of tide at this spot, two feet one and a half inches, but in no ways brackish at high water, five o'clock, second day of the moon. Heard of some dispute among both cabin and steerage passengers about

(Remainder of this narrative is missing.)

August 24th, 1841.

My Dear Sir,

I addressed a few lines before to you upon our arrival here, by a small vessel then leaving this port, merely announcing our safe and excellent passage; since which I have had many opportunities for observation, and believe no other country possesses more natural resources than New Zealand, while the romantic and sublime scenery with which it abounds is particularly striking. Both Islands are mountainous, some parts to the height of perpetual snow, and the lesser hill and dale covered with beautiful evergreens. Myrtles and other of our choice English plants and shrubs here flourish in wild luxuriance, and attain gigantic size, while many of the culinary vegetables, turnips, radishes, onions, carrots, etc., of excellent quality spring up when we clear the land of scrub, and are apparently indigenous to the soil.

From the backward state of the survey, and the constant distant prospect of obtaining our allotments of land, on my arrival I engaged the Surveyor-General to employ myself and pupil on his staff, and cut survey lines through the thickest of the country. Our friends there have been compensated by the excitement of discoveries in a new country; at one time a vegetable—at another, a mineral would present itself to us; even at mid-day we found ourselves immersed in the dark forest, where the thick foliage above obscured even the face of the compass, when probably on a sudden the cutting line would open on some hillside and exhibit a most magnificent scene around. Birds of the most splendid plumage came constantly within our reach unconscious that man was an enemy. The smallness of many was their protection, but the ducks, pigeons and some others supplied us with half our food.

I must now give you a short sketch of our copper-coloured neighbours. The native men are of a firm and stately form, but the women who are the slaves of their lords, are in general ugly; both tattoo, the women slightly, but as we ridicule their tattooing, the young people say, "No more tattoo."

The sixteen tribes, or rather families, who inhabit this extensive district, came overland several years ago from about one hundred and fifty miles north-west, and in their five months' route, fought through upwards of thirty other tribes, and out of the three hundred and seven warriors who exiled themselves from their native land (from the dread of being devoured by a powerful neighbouring tribe), only one hundred and sixteen reached this place. They have since been converted to Christianity, but retain many of their former superstitions, yet improve daily from their intercourse with us; it is allowed they are an intelligent race, and capable of being brought shortly to a high state of civilization.

On first landing here, I fixed my residence with the Sutherland people on the banks of the river above all other emigrants, and between two small tribes of natives, who supply us with pigs and vegetables in abundance and take old clothes in return; and except a momentary dispute with two or three of our young men who gave a dozen of the natives a sound thrashing, the harmony has never been disturbed. The morning after the encounter, I was invited to a "Karahow" (korero), or meeting with the chief of the tribe, to discuss the subject, and after much explanation and an observation from an elderly native, that the slight shock of earthquake that we had the same night was caused by "Atua" for their making fight (to which I nodded assent) a mutual exchange of presents took place, a dozen baskets of potatoes was sent to my hut, and a pig tapued or set aside to be fattened on purpose for me, which the honest man has since brought, and in return I gave him a bag of rice, some sugar, and about twelve yards of calico; it was also mutually agreed we were to banish the ringleaders of each party.

Be assured, we are under no apprehension from the natives, and although a bold and manly race, and ready to exchange blow for blow with us, they are too conscious of our superiority, and have too much sense to injure us, as their conversion, and connection with Europeans have been the salvation of the few inhabitants left. Previous to this era, the tribes were constantly at war, and devouring each other. At this time I believe these fertile islands, blest with the best climate in the world, do not contain more than twenty thousand Mouri, or native inhabitants.

They are assuming our manners and customs with alacrity, and everything is now Europa fashion with them. The young men are learning to read and write, and several of them work daily with our people, who are delighted with their honest and manly deportment. Our colony is at present in a disagreeable state of suspense, from a dread of our large landholders have of the bill in progress in Sydney, depriving the colonists of their land by not recognising their title, given out last week, from a supposition they will fall back upon the company for redress. For my part I think possession everything, and took it immediately.

Republican feeling has been very predominant here, and dissent from the parent government and judicial authority lately established here; and to such a height is it grown that the ex-counsellors propose

to "up-sail" and away to settle in Chili, South America. I think too highly of New Zealand and our parental home to go thither.

Pray remember me to your kind father and all enquiring friends. Tell Mr. Fenn, with my respects, his cast-steel axes have turned out well. I wish I had another supply of them.

Adieu, my Dear Sir, and

Believe me,

Yours truly,

R. BARTON.

To Mr. Malcott (Jun.), Newgate Street.

PORT NICHOLSON,

New Zealand,

22nd November, 1841.

My Dear Sir,

I addressed a few lines to you soon after arrival, and I believe about twice since mentioning our progress in this, our first colony. Other settlements are now starting around us, and little doubt remains of New Zealand being quickly peopled by the Anglo-Saxon race. Notwithstanding the vast labour in clearing the dark forest valleys for our future cornfields, and the hanging hills for our orchards and vineyards, climbing the steeps with our newly-imported flocks, and penetrating the interior over swamps and rapid rivers, the climate is so delightful, and our hopes from the fertility of the soil so great, we are apt to forget, happily, the many privations incurred, for, believe me, the first settlers in the bush have had a few.

There has been much disappointment and consequent grumbling from not obtaining the country sections of land, arising from the dilatory state of the survey, and at this time there are no more than three hundred, out of the first eleven hundred surveyed. Many persons lounge about the town, waiting the survey; others turn to mercantile pursuits, go into some retired vale, clear and cultivate the beautiful spots. On arrival here, I selected a small peninsula formed by the river of the valley, at the head of the bay here, made a garden, from whence I have obtained all our culinary vegetables in great profusion.

On the adjacent hills I have two shepherds in charge of a prosperous flock of merino sheep, imported from Van Dieman's Land eighteen months ago, and a few miles up the valley I have obtained a hundred acre section of the most fertile land, part of which I have let in a clearing lease for a few years. My walking, for it's impossible to ride from one concern to the other, is excessively fatiguing at times, and what would have been deemed impossible two years ago.

The town of Wellington is situated on the S.W. angle of the harbour. On going through it yesterday, I observed more than twenty square-rigged ships lying at anchor, some homeward bound with whale oil and bone, others recently arrived with emigrants and stores, an American from Boston with household furniture, etc. Land on the beach for store-houses is, in consequence of the increasing trade, become extravagantly high; annual rent 25/- per foot frontage.

The accounts from the exploring of the Nelson settlement (middle island), being so good, and confirming an opinion I had formed on seeing that part some time ago, induced me to purchase a 200 acre section yesterday for £300. A new colony is a strange place, and much wild speculation is going on amongst us, but as this district of Nelson is in the neighbourhood of an extensive and almost unknown coalfield, as well as much pasturage, I have thought of crossing Cooks Straits to it and settling (distance one hundred and fifty miles).

(Remainder missing.)

THE END .



Index.

EUROPEANS.

- Adams, Thos., 18, 184
Allen, Mr. F. K., 424
Alzdorf, Baron, 425
Amis, Mr., 401
Amory, Robt., 407
Anderson, Capt., 370
Apsey, Capt., 65
Augustus, Martin, 424
- Bagster, Mr., 216
Bailey, Wm., 11
Bain, Rev. James, 27
Baker, Major, 416, 426
Banks, Rev. Saml., 407
Barrow, Mr., 425
Bartholomew, 15, 17
Barton, Mr. R., 425
Barry, Constable, 420
Batehelor, Mr., 18
Bean, Wm., 63, 82, 89,
110, 120, 129, 148, 165,
186, 217, 223, 347, 377
Beveridge, Capt., 236,
247, 273, 277, 327
Beveridge, Mrs., 248
274, 279
Bickersteth, 48, 153, 184
217, 234
Bigge, Commissr., 85,
158, 336
Boyle, James, 28, 55, 63,
89, 137, 174, 179, 185,
186, 262, 347
Blaxland, John, 188, 190
Breary, Mr., 418
Brind, Capt., 115, 171,
176, 186, 249, 280, 403
Brisbane, Sir Thos., 160,
187, 191, 204, 262, 367,
396
Bristow, Capt., 385
Brooks, Wm., 12
Brown (farmer), 404
Brown (prisoner), 17
Brown, Archdeacon, 406
- Brown, Capt., 186
Brown, Chief Officer,
383
Broughton, Nicholas, 18,
48, 178, 184
Bumby, Rev. J. H., 409
Burcham, Mr. J. N., 426
Busby, Mr., 403
Butler, Ann, 302, 325,
342
Butler, Hannah, 289, 302
Butler, John, 28 et seq.
Butler, John (Maori),
252
Butler, Mrs., 28, 56, 68,
74, 78, 118, 138, 141,
153, 180, 216, 235, 239,
257, 297, 320, 391
Butler, Saml., 4, 28, 37,
113, 119, 122, 137, 162,
175, 210, 219, 223, 254,
263, 284, 299, 321, 342
Butler, Saml. John, 404
Butterworth, 316
- Campbell, Mr. Robert,
19, 34, 164, 196, 204,
233, 270, 374
Carlisle, 27, 43, 49, 179,
236, 339
Cartwright, Rev. W.,
188, 204
Carvosso, Mr., 370, 401
Caustin, Rev. M., 408
Chaffers, Capt., 422
Child, Mr. J. W., 423
Churton, Rev. J. L., 409,
411
Clark, Mr. (Gen. Gates)
169, 171
Clark, Mr. & Mrs., 365
Clements, 8
Coates, Capt., 9
Coglan, Mr. G. H., 423
Cole, Mr., 412
- Cole, Rev. Robert, 409
Collett, Mr., 412, 423
Cooper, Mr. & Mrs., 48
Cooper, Dr. (N.S.W.),
396
Cooper, Rev. (N.S.W.),
204, 378
Cowell, Mrs., 230
Cowell, W., 187, 191,
195, 204, 219, 223, 230,
236, 251, 262, 292, 314,
318, 339, 349
Cribben, Dr., 248
Cross, Mr., 4
Crowther, Rev. S., 8, 18,
48
Cruise, Major, 78
Curry, Capt., 269
- Daniel, Deacon & Sons,
408
Daniel, Edwin, 408
Daniells, Mr., 48
Davis, Chas., 372
Davis, F., 416
Davis, Mr., 372, 384
Davis, Mrs., 388
Dawson, Capt., 386
Deacon, Mr., 20
De Thierry, 213, 403
Dibbs, Capt., 263
Dicks, Mr. (sexton, 427
Dillon, Capt., 287
Dix, Capt., 271, 281
Dobman, Mr., 20
Dorset, Dr., 420
Douglas, Mr., 412
Downie, Commr., 122,
201
Drage, Thos., 407
Draper, Sarah, 426
Drury, 412
Duff, Capt., 403
Dunleary, James, 86

EUROPEANS—Continued.

- Duppa, Mr. George, 422
Duncan, Rev. James, 409
Durham, Lord, 345
Durie, Major, 418
Eager, Mr., 18, 107
Earle, 161
Eaton, H. R., 418
Eaton, R. A., 425
Elder, Rev. James, 27
Elsdon, Wm., 423
Erskine Mr., 401
Evans, Dr., 414
Fairburn, Mrs., 170, 176, 186, 287
Fairburn, Eliz., 176
Fairburn, Wm., 110, 149, 165, 189, 217, 223, 308, 347
Fairfoul, Dr., 87, 95, 159, 181
Ferguson, James, 174
Field (Judge), 327
Florance, Jane, 422
Florance, Saml., 422
Foster, Thos., 186, 349
Fowler, Mr., 423
Frank (boy), 386, 393, 395
Furnival, 8
Gardner, Capt., 187, 203, 248, 274
Garner (Constable), 427
Galvin, Patrick, 33
Gloucester, Bishop of, 18, 184
Gomm, Capt., 416
Gordon, Chas., 192
Gordon, Geo., 27, 32, 43, 49, 88, 179, 339, 347
Goulbourne, Major F., 367
Grady, John, 86
Graham, Capt., 50, 65, 109, 168, 174
Graham, Mr., 82
Griffin, John, 424
Grime, Capt. John, 20, 119, 163
Guiney, D. O., 404
Gunning, Mr., 405
Hall, Mr., 387, 392
Hall, Mrs., 230
Hall, E. S., 343
Hall, Francis, 3, 28, 38, 73, 89, 108, 110, 122, 131, 153, 168, 175, 179, 209, 221, 231, 247, 249, 339, 349
Hall, Walter, 348
Hall, Wm., 27, 38, 65, 82, 89, 92, 107, 114, 118, 133, 159, 165, 179, 186, 198, 216, 223, 235, 245, 255, 262, 274, 279, 294, 309, 339, 343, 383, 404
Hall, Wm. (jun.), 348
Halloran, Dr., 8
Hamilton, Dr., 216
Hansen, Capt., 27, 89
Hansen, Hannah, 89, 239, 347
Hansen, Mrs., 27, 89, 347
Hansen, Thos., 27, 43, 69, 88, 89, 170, 179, 225, 230, 242, 262, 280, 294, 347
Hargreaves, Miss, 426
Harrison, Dr., 189
Harrison, George, 89, 110, 347
Harrison, Miss, 426
Harrison, Mr. R., 416
Hassell, Mr., 11, 93, 188, 205, 384
Hayward, Mr., 119, 163, 370
Heely, Dr., 420
Henry, Mr., 424
Henry (Capt.), 107, 222, 287
Herd, Capt., 230, 239
Hight, Wm., 424
Hill, Rev. R., 200, 204, 326
Hindhaugh, 8
Hitchman, John, 18
Hobbs, Mr., 285, 302, 349
Hobson (Governor) 420, 422
Holt, Joseph, 33
Hooper, Mr., 20, 186
Hopper, Mr., 424
Horan, James, 86
Hort, Mr., 427
How, Mr., 191
Hughes, Mr., 424
Hunt, Chas. Nicholson, 416
Hunt, Uriah, 416
Hunter, Mr., 423, 425
Hunter, Capt., 170, 223, 245
Hunter, John (mate of "Active"), 161
Hutchinson, Mr., 401
Hyndes, Mr., 379, 383
Iornside, Rev. S., 409
Irvine, Capt., 188, 205
Isaac, Francis, 425
Isely, Mr., 379
Jackson, Daniel, 366, 371
Jones (butcher), 373
Jones & Riley, 246
Johnson, Mr. (undertaker), 427
Johnson (runaway), 174, 348
Judd, Mr. Wm., 424
Kemp, Mrs., 56, 110, 112, 185, 249, 264
Kemp, Elizabeth, 264
Kemp, Henry, 114
Kemp, Jas., 4, 28, 38, 74, 89, 129, 137, 167, 170, 179, 231, 236, 249, 255, 263, 292, 319, 330, 343, 347, 383, 403
Kendall, Miss Elizh., 236
Kendall, Mrs., 89, 115, 133, 314
Kendall, John, 89, 349
Kendall, Joseph, 89, 349
Kendall, Susannah, 89, 127, 187, 207, 349
Kendall, Rev. Thos., 27, 38, 68, 89, 119, 137, 153, 158, 168, 175, 183, 198, 214, 222, 230, 236, 245, 284, 292, 318, 339, 403
Kent, Capt., 76, 186, 250, 402
Kenyon, Mr., 368
Ker, Capt., 93, 94, 115
King (Governor), 27
King, John, 27, 38, 43, 70, 89, 107, 115, 164, 168, 179, 186, 198, 219, 222, 230, 241, 245, 262, 274, 284, 298, 343, 347, 383, 403

EUROPEANS—Continued.

- King, Mrs., 27, 57, 74, 168, 222, 228, 230, 247, 298, 303
 King, P. H., 348, 401
 King, Samuel, 222
 Knopwood, Rev., 17
- Lamb, Capt., 4, 9, 13, 165
 Lancaster, Wm., 423
 Lang, Dr. J. D., 270, 340 345, 385, 392
 Lawson, Mr., 371
 Lawry, Rev. W., 236, 247, 327, 345, 367, 379, 392
 Lawrie, Capt., 217
 Le Compte, Rev. Father 409
 Lee, John, 119, 126, 133, 145, 185, 348
 Lee, Professor, 430
 Leigh, Mrs., 247, 279, 320
 Leigh, Rev. S., 27, 187, 204, 226, 230, 241, 245, 255, 262, 267, 274, 278, 292, 303, 343, 378, 383, 401
 Lewis, Mr., 423
 Linney, Mr., 392
 Lord, Mr. (of Sydney), 384
 Lord, Mr., 17
 Lutterell, 16
 Lynch, Thos., 86
- MacAllum, Mr., 414
 Mackenzie, Sarah, 349
 Macquarie (Governor), 20, 28, 86, 158, 187, 204, 316, 337
 Marr, Mrs., 389, 392
 Marsden, Rev. Saml., 18, 27, 45, 68, 74, 80, 95, 103, 128, 144, 154, 168, 179, 189, 203, 224, 256, 287, 292, 301, 325, 342, 364, 370, 383
 Matthew, George, 12
 McDonnell, Capt., 404
 McDougale, 367
 McFarlane, Rev. John, 408, 427
 McRae, Ensign, 87, 161
 Mellor, T. W., 405
 Merrick, Capt., 223
- Middleton, Mr., 188, 190
 Minnett, Mr., 412
 Mitchell, Mr., 16
 Moore, Capt. ("Wood-lark"), 255
 Moore or More, Capt. Samuel, 287, 298, 322, 329, 343
 Molesworth, 425
 Moltey, Capt., 372
 Morcing, Mr., 420
 Mortlock, Mr., 152, 258
 Mortimer, Mr., 234
 Munro, Mr., 170
 Munro, Capt., 77, 119, 170
 Murphy, Mr., 427
 Murray, Mr. (pilot), 192
- Nankeville, Robt., 413
 Nash, 412
 Newbold, Capt., 403
 Nicholas, J. L., 27, 258, 339, 348
 Nicholson, Capt., 75, 76, 85
 Northwood, T., 414
 Oldridge, 86, 106
 O'Reilly, Rev. J. P., 409
 Ormond, Mr., 75
 Owen, Thos., 7
- Palmer, Mr. John, 206
 Phillips, Joshua, 407
 Pierie, John, 420, 423
 Piper, Capt., 187
 Pointon, 14
 Potton, Capt., 186, 190, 203, 207, 214
 Pratt, Rev. J., 20, 110, 119, 152, 184, 234, 335
 Puckey, Wm., 109
 Puckey, W. G., 27, 38, 95, 97, 103, 121, 126, 148, 165, 176, 221, 252, 292, 347
- Read, Mr., 425
 Reeves, Mr., 117
 Rennex, Capt., 249
 Revans, Samuel, 430
 Riddiford, Daniel, 416, 420, 422
 Richards, Wm., 426
 Ridley, Mr. (of Herts), 408
- Riggs, Capt., 88, 169
 Rivers, Mr., 202
 Roberts, 6
 Roberts (Commissary), 13
 Robinson, Capt., 413, 416
 Rogers, Chas., 423
 Rogers, Joseph, 349
 Rose, Henry, 405
 Roskell, Mr., 424
 Russell, Richard, 27, 55, 67, 89, 179, 347
- Sargeant, Mr., 48
 Sawry, Capt., 187
 Saywell, George, 427
 Scholefield, Prof., 407
 Scott, Mr., 48
 Selwyn, Bishop, 408
 Sewell, Mr., 404
 Shaffery, Patrick, 348
 Shelley, Mr., 189, 377
 Shepherd, Mrs., 264, 279, 289
 Shepherd, Jas., 33, 82, 95, 103, 110, 113, 119, 132, 142, 168, 221, 231, 241, 249, 258, 263, 279, 292, 301, 315, 321, 342, 383
 Shepherd, James (jun.), 302, 289
- Shergold, John, 349
 Sherwin, Mr., 390
 Shortland, Mr., 420
 Sidmouth, Lord, 337
 Simpson, Rev., 406
 Skinner, Capt., 74, 76, 86, 92, 106, 120
 Smith, Mr., 422
 Smith, Constable, 423
 Smith, Capt. W. M., 418
 Spackman, George, 423
 Sparks, Mr., 216
 Spence, Capt., 68, 70, 93
 Spencer, Jas., 272, 274, 281, 284, 324, 329, 341, 349
- Stack, Mr., 349
 Stokes, Mr., 425
 Stokes, Mrs., 423
 Stockwell, Richard, 348
 Stephenson, Rev. W. R., 404
 Stevens, R., 11
 Strachan, Rev. Alex., 209, 293, 340

EUROPEANS—Continued.

- | | | |
|--|---|--|
| Tankersley, Thos. Wm., 426 | Walker, Mr. (Parramatta), 190 | Williams, Rev. Henry, 87, 208, 287, 297, 314, 324, 349 |
| Taylor, Mr., 209 | Walker, Mr., 367 | Williams, Rev. John, 187, 191, 203, 222, 226, 270 |
| Telford, Mr., 422, 426 | Wakefield, E. J., 409 | Williams, James, 422 |
| Thomson, Capt., 367, 375, 385, 391 | Wakefield, Col. W., 411, 416 | Wilson, Mr., 119, 163 |
| Thompson, Capt. Joseph, 20, 27, 48, 75, 109, 163, 188, 204 | Wallace, Messrs., 424 | Wilson, James, 422 |
| Todd, Mr., 420, 427 | Wardle, Mr., 393 | Woodd, Rev. Basil, 18, 152 |
| Thorpe, Mrs., 12 | Watkin, Rev. J., 409 | Woodward, Rev. Jonas, 409 |
| Tucker, Josiah, 424 | Watson, 15 | Woodman, Thos., 412, 413 |
| Tuckwell, Mr., 377 | Watson, Mrs., 12 | Worth, Capt., 386 |
| Turner, Mrs., 287, 349 | Watt, Mr., 426 | Wyer, Capt., 115, 117, 171, 201 |
| Turner, Rev. S., 285, 287, 298, 349, 401 | Wemyss, Mr., 190 | Wylde, John, Judge-Advocate, 342 |
| Turnbull, Mrs., 4 | Wentworth, D., 270, 383 | |
| Turner, Mrs. A., 426 | White, Mr., 416 | Yule, Alex., 427 |
| | White, Ensign, 6, 13 | |
| Wade, Luke, 274, 302, 349 | White, Rev., 273, 279, 316, 325, 344, 349, 401, 402 | |
| Wadeson, Mr. S., 412 | Wilcock, David, 7 | |
| Walker, Capt., 321, 328, 329 | Williams, Mrs., 287, 293, 309, 324, 349 | |
-

CHIEFS AND NATIVES.

- Amoi, 425
 Apaki, 426, 428
 Arona, 102
 Arora, 102
 Atiu, 219
 Atoro 418, 420,
 Atowa (or Tohi), 173,
 264, 359
 Atuahaere, 358
 Awari, 422
 Awhanga, 427

 Enokea, 99
 Epuni, 416, 420, 426

 George (brickmaker),
 50, 61, 69, 77, 89

 Hauraki, 125, 354
 Hengi, 350, 359
 Hihiotote, 297, 350
 Hinaki, 97, 105, 173, 216
 251, 359
 Hinau, 350
 Hiwaka 174,
 Homihamu, 101
 Hongi (of North Cape)
 359
 Hongi (Chas.), 130
 Hongi Hika, 19, 31, 40,
 52, 64, 77, 82, 137, 149,
 154, 165, 170, 173, 185,
 216, 238, 254, 258, 265,
 274, 303, 354, 395
 Huriokuna, 173, 355
 Huru Huru, 278
 Hururoa, 350

 Ihopai, 354
 Ihotai, 354
 Iwitahi, 350

 Jacky, 194
 Jacky Tera, 173

 Kahakaha, 359
 Kaheke, 358
 Kaiagara, 350
 Kaihu, 350
 Kaipo, 359
 Kaitara, 350
 Kaitau, 276
 Kaiwhiwa, 356
 Kawerapopo, 359
 Kawaru, 252
 Kawau, 100, 174
 Kekeao, 359

 Kinikini, 358
 Kira, 43, 311, 321, 350
 Kira Waiheni, 173
 Kiripirau, 173
 Kiwhi Kiwhi, 359
 Korokoro, 19, 56, 232,
 355
 Kotaha, 383
 Kukupa, 350

 Makiri, 422
 Mako (Picton) 414
 Maku, 173
 Makuri, 422
 Maru, 370
 Matangi, 420
 Mateika, 350
 Matenga, 350
 Matohi, 174
 Moctara, 359
 Moka, 238, 249, 350
 Motuhi, 41, 199, 350
 Mowhuna, 173
 Muriwai, 127, 352
 Muriwhenua, 352
 Muru, 350
 Murupaenga, 174, 352

 Ngatakahuni, 418
 Ngaure, 352
 Nene, 351, 352

 Onanahi (Tahitian),
 272, 281

 Paerata, 359
 Pahihora, 102
 Paitaro, 358
 Panakara, 359
 Parahika, 52, 289
 Patuone, 352
 Perihiko, 359
 Pomare, 153, 352
 Pomare (King), 107
 Poroa, 352
 Potchora, 174
 Poti, 359
 Pungapunga, 358

 Ra, 352
 Raku, 173
 Rangaeoua, 291
 Rangitukia, 358
 Rawiri, 276
 Rewa, 53, 76, 112, 114,
 136, 149, 154, 165, 170,
 183, 185, 238, 263, 297,
 352

 Ripi, 359
 Ruatara, 28, 31, 158
 Rukuata, 359
 Rukuruku, 354
 Rupri, 99
 Rurunga, 173

 Taihihi, 102
 Taiori, 186
 Taira, 276
 Taiwhanga, 139, 141,
 166, 230, 365
 Tama, 359
 Tangiteruru, 354
 Taoho, 354
 Tareha, 19, 52, 64, 72,
 130, 135, 214, 252, 302,
 310, 321, 354
 Tarenana, 173
 Taureta, 359
 Tautari, 354
 Tawaewae, 354
 Tawiro, 354
 Te Ahi, 355
 Te Ara (George), 278,
 356
 Te Awhitu, 355
 Te Hei, 355
 Te Heke, 354
 Te Huhu, 355
 Te Kaiha, 355
 Te Kaikumu, 356
 Te Kanawa, 355
 Te Kati, 359
 Te Kaweka, 355
 Te Kohikohi, 54, 96, 151
 355
 Te Kohua, 355
 Te Koki, 79, 243, 291,
 355
 Te Kopiri, 355
 Te Kupenga, 359
 Te Moko, 356
 Te Mongiti, 356
 Te Morenga, 19, 33, 52,
 95, 121, 356
 Tenana, 39, 76, 234, 356
 Te Pare, 278, 356
 Te Puhi, 278, 356
 Te Rakau, 356
 Te Rangi, 232, 262, 356
 Te Rauparaha, 156
 Teraranga, 102
 Te Rohu, 359
 Te Taonga, 356
 Tetata, 359
 Te Taunui, 356

CHIEFS AND NATIVES—Continued.

Te Tawhamahoe, 356	Tommy Toki, 386	Wairua, 40, 194, 355
Teterre, 4, 31, 147, 153, 172, 173, 399	Tooi, 4, 13, 31, 43, 56, 82, 153, 160, 172, 232, 234, 262, 284, 338, 399	Wairua, 43, 355
Te Toro, 356	Tora, 173	Waitura, 422
Te Waenga, 354	Toretumua, 354	Waitupi, 424
Te Wacro, 358	Totohee (of Mokoia), 98, 174, 251, 254	Waterou, 40, 248
Te Waha, 358	Tuarau, 425, 427	Whahieno Waro, 173
Te Wata, 358	Turikotuki, 305	Wharekawa, 359
Te Wera, 358	Tutai, 276	Wharemokiki, 173, 354
Te Wherowhero, 359		Wharenui, 358
Thiutou, 276		Whareoneone, 358
Tinana, 102		Wharepapa, 358
Tirana, 154	Wacwac, 96	Wharepoaka, 173, 354
Titore, 358	Waharoa, 359	Wharepouri, 423
Tiu, 262, 370, 396	Waiakare, 359	Wharerahi, 359
Tohi, 136, 214, 289	Waihipa, 425	Wharcumu, 43, 297, 358
Tohitapu, 142, 145, 354	Waikakare Joe, 65	Whauwhi, 354
Tohiriri, 173	Waikato, 89, 137, 167, 170, 216, 231, 236, 258	Whetoi, 355
Tokotoko, 266		Whiwhia, 355
		Witirua, 355

LOCALITIES.

- Aldreth, 407
 Balkham Hill, 367
 Bay of Islands, 19
 Botany Bay, 384
 Bream Bay, 78
 Bream Head, 79, 96, 274
 Brett. Cape, 95, 117, 202, 214
 Bristow's Island, 385
 Britannia, 416
 Butler's Island, 100

 Cook's River, 384

 Derwent River, 16
 D'Urville Island, 413

 East Cape, 257

 Farewell, Cape, 413

 George's River, 384
 Gloucester Town, 43, 94, 162

 Haddenham, 406
 Hauraki, 42
 Hawkesbury Farm, 365
 Herd's Point, 403
 Hinematehou, 126
 Hobart Town, 16
 Hokianga, 75, 79, 103, 115, 127, 135, 220, 271
 Hutt River, 422

 Isthmus Bay, 16

 Kahikateaorua, 112, 128, 241, 298
 Kaipara, 95, 100, 223
 Kapiti, 420
 Kapua, 102, 103
 Kawa Kawa, 41, 72, 79, 114, 127
 Keri Keri, 39, 105, 179, 254, 280
 Korokoro, 424
 Kororareka, 153, 214, 243, 248, 262

 Launceston, 426
 Liverpool, N.S.W., 188

 Manawaroa, 56, 63, 67
 Mangiwai, 96
 Manakau, 100
 Matapouri, 95
 Mewstone, The, 16
 Mimiwhangautu, 95
 Mokoia, 96, 103, 154, 216, 254
 Mongonui, 253, 287, 299, 301, 320
 Te-Ti, 300
 (Mongonui was called Te-Ti)
 Moturoa, 79, 128, 293, 298
 Muriwai, 101

 Nantucket, 116
 Neenton, 408
 New Town, 16

 Okautoi, 113
 Okura, 110, 115
 Omapere, Lake, 82, 264
 Oruru, 267

 Paihia, 291, 297, 322
 Pairoa, 49, 56, 85, 94, 170, 223, 262
 Pakatitou, 50
 Parramatta, 18, 188, 327
 Pipitea, 423
 Pitoone, 409
 Point Pocock, 267
 Point Rodney, 96
 Port Hardy, 413
 Port Jackson, 19, 106, 263
 Port Nicholson, 409, 413
 Pukawakawa, 264
 Puketotara, 264, 315

 Rangihua, 40, 95, 106, 127, 133, 137, 168, 222, 232, 242, 284, 294

 Rangitari, 242
 Rotorua, 298

 South Creek (N.S.W.), 189, 365
 Stapleford, 408
 Sydney, 18, 154, 187, 324 326

 Tahiti, 107, 119, 144, 122
 Taiaimai, 41, 264
 Takou, 253
 Tapuatahi, 252, 299,
 Te Anau, 95
 Tekorangu, 57
 Te Puna, 75, 79, 94, 109, 117, 187, 242, 248, 280
 Thames, 85, 96, 116, 154, 174, 185, 216, 238, 248
 Thorndon, 418
 Three Kings, 93
 Tonga, 247, 327
 Tristran De Cunha, 9
 Tutukaka, 95

 Valparaiso, 239, 391
 Van Dieman's Land, 15, 115, 413
 Ventram, 274

 Waikare, 142, 221
 Waikato, 84, 216
 Waimate, 52, 81, 82, 122, 184, 264, 305
 Wairoa, 96
 Wairarapa, 426
 Waitangi, 54, 74, 79, 291
 Waitemata, 99, 105
 Waiwetu, 424
 Whananaki, 95
 Whangamumu, 95
 Whangarei, 96, 172, 274, 317
 Whangaroa, 62, 91, 226, 253, 267, 277, 283, 298, 315
 Whangaruru, 95, 121
 Wigan, 405

SHIPPING.

- "Active," 20, 27, 45,
 75, 107, 109, 158, 185,
 189, 204, 402
 "Adelaide," 416
 "H.M.S. Alligator,"
 404
 "The Ann," 217
 "The Anne," 84
 "Asp," 250
 "Aurora," 418

 "Baring," 28, 165, 399
 "The Bee," 418
 "Bengal Merchant,"
 409
 "Blenheim," 426
 "Bolton," 409, 422
 "Boyd," 92, 278
 "Brampton," 287, 292,
 299, 314, 322, 330, 375
 "The Brothers," 372

 "Catherine," 50, 65, 84,
 109, 168, 174
 "Coromandel," 20, 96,
 110, 113, 116, 154, 201,
 216
 "Cossack," 271, 281,
 292
 "Cuba," 426
 "Cumberland," 87, 115,
 171, 176, 186, 262

 "Dorothy" (brig), 403
 "Dragon" (brig), 302,
 321, 329, 375
 "H.M.S. Dromedary,"
 34, 74, 84, 106, 120,
 158, 180, 278

 "Echo," 68, 72, 93
 "Eleanor" (schooner),
 425
 "Elizabeth" (schoon-
 er), 198

 "Elizabeth & Mary,"
 386
 "Endeavour" (brig),
 226, 263
 "Enterprise," 391

 "General Gates," 28,
 87, 110, 164, 169
 "Governor Macquarie"
 (brig), 262
 "Haweis" (brig), 35,
 75
 "Independence," 84
 "Industry" (schooner),
 404
 "Indian," 84, 170, 174,
 223

 "Hero," 6
 "Heroe," 394
 "Harriet" (whaler) 370
 "Hope" (brig), 119,
 163, 210
 "Hope" (ship), 420

 "James" (whaler), 115
 "Jewess" (schooner),
 424
 "John Bale" (ship),
 191

 "La Coquille," 365
 "London," 426
 "Lord Sidmouth," 208
 "Lowther," 6

 "Macquarie" (brig),
 107
 "Martha Ridgway,"
 425
 "Martha," 65, 70
 "Mary" (whaler), 249
 "Mary Ann" (whaler)
 (or "Mary Hannah")
 187, 248, 272

 "Mercury" (brig), 246
 "Midas" (ship), 372

 "New Zealander," 77,
 170
 "Ninus," 394
 "North American," 116
 118

 "Patriot," 426
 "Platina," 424
 "Poeklington," 383
 "Providence" (whaler)
 230, 239

 "Rambler," 115, 201
 "Prince Regent," 76,
 78, 93
 "Rochester," 412

 "Sally Ann," 418
 "Samuel" (schooner)
 386
 "Saracen" (ship), 93,
 115
 "Sarah," 119, 137, 170,
 272
 "Satellite" (brig of
 war), 269
 "The Sisters," 298
 "St. Michael" (ship),
 235, 237, 247, 273, 327
 "Surrey," 35, 233

 "Vansittart," 170, 223,
 243, 245
 "Victoria," 412

 "Westmorland," 137,
 144, 186, 214, 374
 "Woodlark" (brig),
 255

CORRESPONDENCE.

Butler to Pratt	..	19
Marsden to Pratt	..	30
Kendall to Marsden	..	31
Marsden to Butler	..	31
Marsden to Pratt	..	33
Marsden to Pratt	..	34
Marsden to Pratt	..	35
Butler to Pratt	..	46
Butler to Pratt	..	48
Butler to Kendall	..	59
Butler to Kendall	..	73
Nicholson to Bigge	..	85
Skinner to Macquarie	..	86
Marsden to Pratt	..	86
Butler to Skinner	..	88
Pratt to Butler	..	89
Pratt to Butler	..	90
Marsden to Butler	..	91
Butler to Pratt	..	92
Butler to Marsden	..	109
Downie to Butler	..	121
Marsden to Pratt	..	157
Marsden to Pratt	..	158
Butler to Pratt	..	162
Thompson to Butler	..	164
Butler to Pratt	..	177
Butler to Gordon	..	192
Butler to Marsden	..	193
Marsden to Butler	..	195
Butler to Marsden	..	196
Marsden to Butler	..	197
Butler to Brisbane	..	201
Butler to Pratt	..	203
Butler to Potton	..	207
Marsden to Settlers	..	208
Butler to Committee	..	209
Annual Report, C.M.S.	..	210
Marsden to Kendall	..	210
Kendall to N.Z. Committee	..	211
Hall to Butler	..	213

Butler to Pratt	..	216
Leigh to Butler	..	226
Marsden to Butler	..	232
Marsden to Pratt	..	260
Bigge's Report to Bathurst	..	260
Marsden to Butler	..	269
Leigh to Butler	..	273
Saml. Butler to Pratt	..	275
White to Butler	..	282
Leigh to Butler	..	283
Stack to Butler	..	288
Shepherd to Butler	..	289
White to Butler	..	289
White to Butler	..	291
Butler to Marsden	..	294
Marsden to Pratt	..	296
White to Butler	..	302
Marsden to Butler	..	306
Marsden to Butterworth	..	316
Marsden to Pratt	..	333
Marsden to Pratt	..	334
Marsden to Butler	..	335
Marsden's Regulations	..	336
Affidavit of James Spencer	..	341
Affidavit of S. and Ann Butler	..	342
Deposition of Saml. Butler	..	342
Affidavit of E. C. Hall	..	343
Statement of N.Z. Committee	..	343
Memorandum of Wm. White	..	344
Lawry to Butler	..	345
J. D. Lang to Lord Durham	..	345
Marsden to Butler	..	373
Affidavit of John Butler	..	376
Affidavit of Hannah Butler	..	378
Butler to Coates	..	395
Butler to Basil Woodd	..	397
Lawry to Basil Woodd	..	398
Coates to Butler	..	401
Saml. Butler to J. Butler	..	402



— Printed by —

PALAMONTAIN AND PETHERICK,
at their registered Printing Office,
240 Queen Street, Masterton, N.Z.



144741

Butler, John Gare

Earliest New Zealand.

92

B9771

144741

92

B9771

